

Victoria University College Library No Class Location

Handwritten contents

Proceedings of the Mansion House Committee For the Relief of Distress in Ireland

During the Months of January and February, 1880.

Mansion House, Dublin, March, 1880. Printed by the City Printing and Lithographing Company, Limited. 18 to 21, William Street, Dublin.

Ireland; showing localities in which distress exists, shaded according to the intensity of distress

## Dublin Mansion House Committee.

The Right Hon. E. DWYER GRAY, M.P., Lord Major of Dublin, *Chairman*.

- RICHARD ALLEN, Esq.
- CHARLES J. BRIDGETT, Esq.
- MAURICE BROOKS, Esq., M.P.
- GEORGE BROWNE, Esq., M.P.
- Alderman CAMPBELL
- Alderman COCHRANE
- JAMES C. COLVILLE, Esq., J.P.
- JOHN ADYE CURRAN, Esq.
- Colonel DAVOREN
- MATHEWK P. D'ARCY, Esq., D.L.
- The Very Rev. The DEAN OF ST. PATRICE'S
- GEORGE DELANT, Esq.
- V. B. DILLON, Jun., Esq.
- Very Rev. N. DONNELLY, R.C.A.
- THOMAS DOWLING, Esq.
- DAVID DRIMMIE, Esq.
- DAVID DRUMMOND, Esq., J.P.
- The Right Hon. The LORD EMLY
- The Hon. FREDERICK RICHARD FALKINER.
- Very Rev. Canon FARRELL, P.P.
- CHARLES J. FAY, Esq., M.P.
- EDWARD FOX, Esq., J.P.
- J. A. FOX, ESQ.
- WM. FINDLATER, Esq.
- JAS. FROSTE, J.P., High Sheriff, Co. Clare
- Captain GABBETT, M.P.
- The Right Hon. E. GIBSON, Esq., M.P.; Attorney-General for Ireland
- H. J. GILL, Esq., T.C.
- Sir A. GUINNESS, M.P., D.L.
- E. C. GUINNESS, Esq., D.L.
- Colonel KING-HARMAN, M.P., D.L.
- Alderman HARRIS
- Rev. MORGAN JELLETT, M.A., LL.D.
- W. LANK JOYNT, Esq., D.L.
- IGNATIUS J. KENNEDY, Esq., T.C.
- DR. JOSEPH E. KENNY
- THOMAS KIERNAN, Esq.
- E. H. KINAHAN, Esq., J.P.
- Rev. WM. B. KIRKPATRICKM, D.D.
- W. DIGGES LA TOUCHE, Esq., D.L.
- JAMES F. LOMBARD, Esq., J.P.
- Dr. LONG, T.C.
- Rev. T. LONG, A.M., Rector, St. Michan's.
- E. O. M'DEVITT, Esq.
- RICHARD MARTIN, Esq., D.L.
- G. W. MAUNSELL, Esq., D.L.

- C. H. MELDON, Esq., M.P.
- The Right Hon. The Earl of MEATH
- Alderman M'DERMOTT.
- Very Rev. Canon MONAHAN, D.D.
- The Right Hon. Viscount MONCK
- ANDREW T. MOORE, Esq., T.C.
- The Most Rev. E. M'CABE, Catholic Archbishop of Dublin.
- WILLIAM M'KENZIE, Esq.
- WILLIAM M. MURPHY, Esq.
- Very Rev. Dean NEVILLE, Rector, C. U. I.
- JOHN O'CONNOR, Esq.
- The O'CONOR DON, M.P.
- The O'GORMAN MAHON, M.P.
- The Right Hon. LORD O'HAGAN
- Dr. W. H. O'LEARY, M.P.
- Very Rev. T. J. O'REILLY, R.C.A.
- Lord FRANCIS G. G. OSBORNE
- ALEXANDER PARKER, Esq., J.P.
- THOMAS PIM, Esq., Jun., J.P.
- HON. D. PLUNKET, M.P.
- AMBROSE PLUNKETT, Esq.
- Viscount POWERSCOURT
- J. TALBOT POWER, Esq., D.L.
- Rev. W. GUARD PRICE
- Alderman PURDON
- HENRY ROE, Esq., D.L.
- ABRAHAM SHACKLETON, Esq., T.C.
- W. SHAW, Esq., M.P.
- GEORGE SIGERSON, Esq., M.D., Ch. M.
- P. J. SMYTH, Esq., M.P.
- DR. A. O. SPEEDY
- Col. The Right Hon. T. E. TAYLOR, M.P.
- The PROVOST OF TRINITY COLLEGE, Dublin
- Alderman HUGH TARPEY, J.P.
- The Most Rev. R. C. TRENCH, Protestant Archbishop of Dublin
- JOHN WALLIS, Esq., J.P.
- W.W ILLIAMSON, Esq. (Todd, Burns & Co.)

THE PROTESTANT AND CATHOLIC ARCHBISHOPS AND BISHOPS OF IRELAND;  
THE MODERATOR OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

## ***Treasurers.***

- E. DWYER GRAY, M.P., Lord Mayor
- HIS GRACE THE MOST REV. DR. TRENCH
- JAMES W. MACKEY, Knt., D.L., High Sheriff
- ALDERMAN HUGH TARPEY
- JOHN BARRINGTON, Kn., D.L., Ex-Lord Mayor
- JONATHAN PIM
- WILLIAM LANE JOYNT, D.L.

## ***Hon. Secretaries.***

- R. W. BAGOT, Canon, LL.D.
- JAMES DANIEL, P.P.
- P. M'CABE FAY
- T. MAXWELL HUTTON

- CHARLES KENNEDY
- GEORGE, B. OWENS, Knt.  
V. B. DILLON, Jun.

## Statement.

THE existence of distress in Ireland was apparent for several months prior to the commencement of this year. The almost total failure of certain crops, following upon a succession of bad harvests, and the utter collapse of credit, made it evident that the year would be one of exceptional distress. Numerous suggestions were made with reference to the formation of Relief Committees, to end eavour to cope with this general calamity, notably one contained in a telegram from Adelaide, offering assistance, if such were required.

A meeting was convened at the end of last year, by the then Lord Mayor of Dublin, but adjourned to the 2nd of January, when, under the presidency of the Lord Mayor, the Mansion House Committee was inaugurated. Immediately after that meeting, an appeal was issued for funds. Early in that month telegraphic communications were addressed to the American Continent, to Australia, and subsequently to India, and other places abroad, and were followed by a more formal appeal which was widely circulated in these countries. The result has been that the subscriptions amounted, on the last day of February, to the magnificent sum of £81,405 19s. The following are the foreign contributions received to that date:—

## Australia and New Zealand.

## United States of America.

## Canada.

## India.

To the people of Great Britain an appeal was made through the Mayors of the principal cities and towns in England, and Provosts in Scotland, and many places generously responded. The following is a list of subscriptions received from them:—

The subscriptions from England have been, up to this, mainly given to another fund.

An appeal was also made to the French people, resulting in a first subscription of £396 0s. 9d., as a first instalment, being one-third of the funds transmitted to this country through the agency of the French Committee for Relief of Irish Distress, of which His Eminence the Cardinal Archbishop of Paris is President, and the Count de Flavigny, Secretary.

While thanking all the Subscribers for their generous aid, the Committee must express its special acknowledgment for the noble contributions of the people of the Australasian Continent.

## Distribution of Funds.

The distribution of these funds has been entirely through the agency of Local, which are generally Parochial, Committees. These include, in almost every instance, Catholic and Protestant clergymen, medical practitioners, and such prominent laymen of the various denominations as could be found to co-operate. So far the Committee has had every reason to be satisfied with the work of these organisations; and abundant testimony has been borne, notably by the entire body of the Catholic Hierarchy of Ireland, by His Grace the Protestant Archbishop of Dublin, the Most Rev. Dr. Trench, and also by many eminent persons, private and official, to the enormous amount of suffering averted and good accomplished.

On the last day of February, there were 631 Local Committees, working in connection with this Committee, to which grants amounting to £45,049 have been made, leaving, after deducting expenses, the balance now in hands, £38,936.

From the 17th to the 28th February, the number of these Committees increased by 106,—a striking testimony to the growth of the destitution and the augmented demand upon the resources of this Committee.

The grants hitherto made by this Committee have been at the rate of £8,000 per week on an average. There is no prospect of a decrease in demands upon our resources; for it is found that while labourers can be now to some extent omitted from the relief lists, their places are very much more than supplied by small farmers, to whom, while working on their own land, food must be given.

## Seed and Clothing Sub-Committees.

The Committee has appointed Sub-Committees for the reception and distribution of seeds, and money specially given for seeds, for the reception and distribution of articles of clothing, old or new, and blankets.

## Prospects.

The sum now in the hands of the Committee would not last for five weeks at the present rate of distribution. Generous subscriptions, however, still flow in: and the Committee trusts that it will be able to continue its operations to the end of the crisis.

The months of March, April, and May will be trying months; but the Committee hopes that, with the funds still at its disposal, and with the contributions that are still coming in, it may be able to meet, to a moderate extent, the claims upon it.

But the Committee fears that it is only at the close of this period that the worst will have come.

If the experience of former famines in Ireland be a guide, the greatest distress will be found in the months of June, July, and August.

It is to be apprehended that whilst the crops are ripening the people will perish.

It might be said that public works, which have been projected, would partially relieve the distress; and that recent legislation, by enabling the Guardians of the Poor to give a larger measure of relief, without forcing upon the people the humiliation of entering the Workhouse, would do the rest. In the one case, the result of the meetings of the Baronial Sessions, at which these works should have been presented for, shows that not much can be expected from that source; while, in the other case, it is to be apprehended that the distress is so general that, in very many districts, the great increase of the Poor-rate, which would necessarily follow upon a larger burden being thrown on the Unions, would only drag to the level of paupers those struggling ratepayers now barely able to keep out of the list of the miserable. It is thus apparent that external aid only can save the people from perishing as their forefathers did in the memorable Famine of 1847.

The total number of persons who are now, according to the returns of the Local Committees, dependent for support to a large extent upon our funds amounts to over 350,000. Even assuming that there should be no increase upon this number, the amount of money that would be required during the months above referred to—namely, June and July and August—will be very large.

During the months of January and February, in addition to the grants made by this Committee, it is estimated that at least £150,000 have been expended through various other charitable channels, of which £120,000 are believed to have been contributed from the United States of America, thus making the total sum distributed reach £200,000 in two months.

This Committee is of opinion that at least the same amount of aid will be required to be given during the months of March, April, May, June, and July, and that for these months a sum of about £500,000 will be absolutely necessary to keep the people from starvation.

*March 1st, 1880.*

## Addendum.

### Proceedings from 1st to 9th March, 1880.

Since the 1st March, additional subscriptions, amounting to £24,851, were received, making the whole Fund at this date, £109,257.

Grants to the amount of £11,945 were made since the 1st inst.

The total number of Committees now is 690, being a further increase of 59 in nine days.

Upon these 690 Committees there are—

- 681 Parish Priests.
- 650 Catholic Curates.
- 568 Protestant Clergymen.
- 722 Justices of the Peace.
- 531 Medical Officers.
- 824 Poor Law Guardians.
- 6,154 Other Lay Members.

The largest number of grants made, on any one day, was on the 9th March, when 107 grants, amounting to £4,190, were made.

## List of Foreign Contributions from 1st March, inclusive:—

### Canada.

### India.

### Australia and New Zealand.

## Grants Made up to and Including March 9th, 1880.

Province County No. of Local Committees Total Grants ULSTER Antrim 1 £100 Armagh 5 165 Cavan 35 2,370 Donegal 40 3,395 Down 1 30 Fermanagh 17 660 Monaghan 17 745 Tyrone 15 550 £8,015 0 0 CONNAUGHT Galway 99 9,575 Leitrim 23 2,435 Mayo 65 9,160 Roscommon 29 8,865 Sligo ... 31 ... 3,540 20,575 0 0 MUNSTER Clare 43 3,655 Cork 76 5,135 Kerry 45 3,860 Limerick 36 1,505 Tipperary 30 1,865 Waterford 19 995 17,015 0 0 LEINSTER ... Kildare 3 59 Kilkenny 9 250 King's Co. 5 85 Longford 13 650 Louth 3 80 Meath 4 150 Queen's Co. 9 315 Westmeath 11 570 Wexford ... 2 20 Wicklow ... 3 165 2,344 0 0 TOTALS, 690 £55,949 0 0 Special Grants to Charitable Institutions in Dublin 65 0 0 Special Grants for Meal for Western Islands, and for purchase of Shoes 896 7 6 TOTAL £57,495 7 6  
*10th March, 1880.*

## Table

Showing the Counties in which distress exists, the names of the Committees formed in each County, the number of persons in distress reported from each district on first application, the number returned on the 1st March, with extracts from the local appeals describing the state of the peasantry in the several districts.

## Correspondence.

In order that some idea of the condition of the country may be obtained, the following letters are here published. They represent most of the distressed Counties; but they form only a minute proportion of the immense mass of correspondence sent forward by the Committees of districts where suffering exists:—

*"Layde Rectory, Cushendall, Co. Antrim,*

*4th February, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"I am directed by the Committee formed in this district (extending from Garron Point to Fox Point), in the glens of Antrim, to place before you a short statement of the distress existing in this neighbourhood, and to ask for some assistance from your fund.

"Though the distress is not so widespread as in other parts of Ireland, yet so far as it goes it is quite as acute. The almost total failure of the potato crop, together with the turf already cut, and they want of employment for labourers, has impoverished the people to an extent unknown since '47, and for some time past the clergy and gentry have been besieged by people for aid, which they have relieved to the best of their ability, but it has now become too heavy for them to cope with.

"We have appointed a Committee which includes all the magistrates resident in the district, clergy, doctors, together with a fair representation of the merchants and farmers. We have ascertained that there are upwards of fifty families, representing more than 200 persons, in immediate want of relief.

"One case reported to me yesterday, the head of a family of nine persons with not one penny, nor any food in the house. Another, a man looking for employment and going to walk thirteen miles, who had not tasted food at one o'clock in the day, leaving behind a wife and large family. Another, an old woman trying to sell brooms at one o'clock in the day, and failing to sell even one to get breakfast for herself and family.

"We shall make efforts to get seed potatoes, as in very many cases there are none left.

"I am, gentlemen, your obedient servant,

"WM. THOMPSON,  
Clk., *Eon. Sec.*"

*"Crossmaglen and Creggan Relief Committee, "Co. Armagh,*

*4th March, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"Through sheer necessity, we are obliged again to appeal to the Mansion House Relief Committee for a second donation towards relieving the distress that is becoming more widespread every day in this parish.

"Generous as has been your first donation of £25, and taking into account our local subscriptions, our funds are almost exhausted, and we have been compelled to exclude many applications.

"In our first application we gave the number of those in distress at something about 750 families, or 3,750 persons, and that number is, unfortunately, increasing. On the first two days of distribution we relieved 550 families, or 2,750 people, but, as we remarked before, we were obliged to let many go unrelieved through want of funds.

"We have given relief, in the shape of Indian meal, as, owing to our want of funds, we could not afford to give anything more substantial; and to no family, no matter how numerous, have we given more than two stone of meal in the week. So, notwithstanding all our care and caution, the number of applications is daily increasing, and before many days, if some subscriptions do not reach us, I fear the consequences will be terrible.

"We will not be giving harrowing details or quoting affecting scenes to be witnessed here every day, but we simply state hard, incontrovertible facts, believing they will tell better the misery and distress prevailing here than graphic descriptions.

"Unfortunately, we have not as yet got any donations from any other fund, and we, therefore, must only appeal again to the generosity of the Mansion House Committee; and should they, in their goodness, listen to our cry for help, I need not say that the poor people of this parish will never forget them in their prayers.

"We beg to remain, gentlemen, faithfully yours,

"JOHN M'DONNELL, *Chairman.*

"JAMES LOUGHRAN, C.C., *Secretary.*"

*"Mullagh, Kells, Co. Cavan,*

*March 2nd, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"I again beg to draw your attention to application of this Committee sent you on 21st February, and to appeal to you in the strongest possible terms for your generous assistance. This parish contains a larger number of cottiers than any other in this county, together with 150 small farmers in the most distressed and destitute condition, without any visible means of supporting themselves and their families.

"Up to this there has been no employment of any account given here, and these poor people are all crying to us for relief, but for want of funds we have been unable to do anything for them this week. We beg of you, in the name of the starving poor, to send us £50 if possible.

"Obediently yours,

"THOMAS P. M'KENNA, *Secretary, Mullagh P. R. Committee.*

"P.S.—We applied to the other Funds, but got nothing. Relieved by this Committee—1,650 persons."

"Kilnaleck, Co. Cavan,

February 16th, 1880.

"SIR,

"The Kilnaleck Relief Committee desire me to write an urgent appeal to your Committee for immediate aid. 230 heads of families got temporary relief this day, ranging from one to three stone of meal. 250 persons were obliged to go home to their helpless children without food.

"I can assure the Mansion House Committee that great destitution exists in the parish, and the cry of the poor is to give them work, for this temporary relief is not able to support them.

"Up to 500 destitute poor were in Kilnaleck this day, one-third of this number were small farmers.

"Your obedient servant,

"CHARLES BOYLAN, *Hon. Secretary.*"

"Moybologue, Bailiello', Co. Cavan,

12th February, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"A meeting was this day held in the Edengora National Schoolhouse, attended by the Roman Catholic and Irish Church clergymen, and other representative gentlemen of various religious denominations.

"The following resolution, among others, was proposed, seconded, and unanimously passed:—'That immediate application be made to the Mansion House Relief Fund for aid to ward off the dire destitution unfortunately existing among many in this district.'

"The materials upon which such a statement may be based are lamentably extensive. Within the limits of the parishes to which our district is confined are very many cases of whole families in such distress as borders on starvation. The inhabitants are almost all of the struggling small farmer class, depending on potatoes and turf for food and fuel. The potatoes were last year, in rare instances, worth the digging, and the turf had to be abandoned owing to the heavy rains and consequent flooding. The scanty plots of corn sown were, in the first place, ill-productive, and next, only half saved with great difficulty.

"Owing to the excessively low market price of other farm produce, no money was realized to meet the emergency. All these causes conspiring, have reduced the small farmers here to a pitiable condition.

"What is apparent to cursory observers is not a tithe of the real distress existing, inasmuch as those very small farmers, in most cases, would suffer almost anything short of starvation before they would brook the shame of a public acknowledgment of their distress. No case of actual death by starvation has as yet, thank God, occurred, to the knowledge of the Committee; but unless immediate relief be procured from some source within a fortnight, we know not what fearful results a delay of even so short a time might bring forth. Many of the small farmers are destitute of food, of fuel, and of clothing. They are at the present moment eating, or have already eaten, their seed potatoes and seed corn, to preserve life. Many of them are perishing for want of ordinary clothes, and, what is far more serious, have no bedclothes to protect them at night from the wintry cold. It was the opinion of our meeting that at least two hundred lives are at the present moment in this perilous condition—reduced to the verge of starvation; their seed potatoes and seed corn consumed, having no fuel, their ordinary clothes, in most cases, reduced to shreds, and devoid almost of any covering at night. With this spectre of distress so excessive brooding over so many in our district, we earnestly and respectfully request such a grant from your Committee as the statement of facts here given seems to your Committee to warrant. Pledging, on our part, that whatever sums may be entrusted to us for the relief of the distress, shall be faithfully distributed by us among those who are most necessitous, in the manner stipulated by the donors,

I am, &c.,

"J. E. H. MURPHY, B.A., Clk., *Hon. Sec.*"

"Dungloe, viâ Stranorlar, Co. Donegal,

Jan. 14th, 1880.

GENTLEMEN,

"As we understand that the Mansion House Fund is to be distributed amongst the poorest districts in Ireland, we deem it absolutely necessary to make immediate application to your Committee for whatever portion of the fund they may be able to allocate for this district. The parishes represented by our Committee are Templecrone and Letter macward, Co. Donegal, large and extensive parishes, including 2,531 families, consisting of 13,372 persons, who occupy 72,230 acres, the Government valuation of which is only £4,279 10s. 0d., or 1s. 2d. per acre on an average. The distress in the above-mentioned parishes is something fearful to contemplate. Our first instalment from the Duchess of Marlborough's Fund, amounting to £50, won't enable us to relieve for the present more than 240 out of 960 applications, giving each family ½ cwt. of Indian meal. In fine, if relief be not forthcoming from other sources than the Duchess of Marlborough Fund, we cannot possibly cope with the fearful destitution which prevails in this part of the country. We are, in fact, without the slightest degree of exaggeration, on the very verge of famine. Before making this application we investigated most particularly the state of the parishes referred to, and we are therefore in a position to vouch for the accuracy of the above statement. Under these circumstances we trust that your Committee will at once come to our aid.

"I am, gentlemen, yours truly,

"CHARLES M'GLTNN, P.P."

*"Letterkenny, Co. Donegal,*

16th February, 1880.

"SIR,

"We beg to inform your Committee that so great and so urgent have been the claims made on us for aid by the Local Committees working with us all over the county that in meeting them we have all but exhausted the funds at our disposal, and we humbly beg your Committee will supplement the liberal donation already made to us by a still more liberal grant. The magnitude of the work of charity thrown upon us will be best shown by the following statistics, which for your own information we have tried to collect all over the county Donegal. We are glad to be able to assure you that at present we have in co-operation with us Local Committees in every distressed portion of the county, with two exceptions, Ramelton and Innishowen; and in a few days we hope to have Local Committees in these places also. Putting Innishowen down for the present as one large district to which we have already made a grant of £200, we have, in addition, twenty-eight Local or Parochial Committees. We have adopted parochial divisions, being the most practical, for many reasons, named, Ballyshannon, Bundoran, Pettigo, Ballintra, Donegal, Inver, Eillagher, Killybegs, Kilcar, Glencolumbkille, Ardara, Glenties, Kiltervogue, Stranorlar, Convoy, Letterkenny, Churchill, Kilmacrennan, Rathmullen, Milford, and Carrowkeel, Carryart, Dunfanaghy, Cloghaneely, and Tory Island, Gweedore, Lower Templecrone, and Arran Island and Upper Templecrone, Lettermacward, Fintown. These Local Committees are giving relief to about 12,000 families, or 60,000 individuals, and granting each individual 6d. per week (surely a miserable pittance), our weekly expenditure would be about £1,500 sterling. At our last meeting we distributed about £1,100 as a weekly allowance, and the appeals are daily increasing in number, and in the urgency and extent of poverty they contain. With these facts before you, when you remember that we beg to assure you that the greatest harmony exists between the Central and Local Committees, each doing its work to the best of its power towards warding off the hand of famine from so many thousand souls now in absolute want. Further, that the Duchess of Marlborough Committee has not up to this extended its charity to many parts of the county, and these the most distressed, namely, all the Dunfanaghy Union, including Gweedore, the Letterkenny Union, &c., and these districts are entirely dependent on us for relief, and that out of the £28,000 already distributed by your Committee only £1,200 have been sent to Donegal, though, we have no doubt, the poorest of the few counties of Ireland affected by the present distress. We feel confident your Committee will send us a generous grant from the Mansion House Fund, that thereby we may be enabled to continue to the end the noble work we have begun.

"Signed,

"#MICHAEL LOGUE, *Chairman, Bishop of Raphoe.*



"W. A. GALLAGHER, *Hon. Sec.*"

"*Kilcoo, Co. Down,*

12th February, 1880.

"MY LORD,

"It is painful and humiliating to have to acknowledge that even in this, the premier county of Ulster, there exists distress deep-felt and widespread. Nothing but sheer necessity can force the people to acknowledge want and ask relief. They will struggle on amidst difficulties, and continue to conceal their misery until their blanched cheeks betray them and tell the observer that the gnawing pain is wearing away their vitals. Such has been the case in '46 and '47, when the gaunt spectre, Famine, stalked over the land, and decimated a famished people, and such, unhappily, is the case here now in this County of Down. At all events, such is the case in this parish of Upper Kilcoo, with a population of over 3,000 spread over thirteen townlands, situate in a mountainous district, where, owing to the inclemency of the season, the poor people did not obtain a particle of peat from the bogs—their source of fuel—and their crops were almost completely lost. Their means, which were at best but slender, have been gradually diminishing for the past few years, and are now exhausted, as is also their credit. Hence, we find that the fuel of the majority is the furze and heath which they gather from the hill-sides; and the food of many—alas! too many—an insufficient quantity of Indian meal porridge, without a single drop of milk to make it palatable. It is truly a pitiable plight in which hundreds of the poor people here now find themselves—partially without food, wholly without fuel, or means to procure it; without seed for the land, without clothing, and without credit. Knowing this, knowing that starvation is already at our doors, and claims its victims, it would be little less than criminal to allow a sense of delicacy to prevent us from proclaiming the fact, believing, as we do, that its proclamation will elicit from a generous and sympathetic public such timely aid as may possibly avert the occurrence of the harrowing scenes of the famine years.

"(Signed, on behalf of the Committee),

"The HON. S. WARD, Blackcauseway, Downpatrick.

"W. P. O'CONNOR, Esq., 58, Apsley Place, Belfast.

"J. P. KINGSCOTE, J.P., Bryansford.

"Rev. CHAS. PARKHURST BAXTER, M.A., Incumbent.

"Rev. H. CONNOR, P.P.

"Rev. B. M'KENNA, C.C.

"MR. P. FITZPATRICK, P.L.G.

"MR. FRANCIS O'NEILL, P.L.G.

"MR. JOHN M'ALISTER, P.L.G."

"*Derrylin Relief Committee, Co. Fermanagh,*

28th February, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"Although it was well known that distress prevailed to a great extent in this district for some months past, in consequence of the destruction of crops, meadows, and pasture land by Lake Erne floods, together with the failure of crops generally, yet it is only now, when the members of the Committee, in their several localities, have investigated the claims for relief brought before them, that they find out the dire misery which exists. The small farmers have the greatest dislike to take anything in the shape of alms; and it is only when they find the gnawing of hunger, or their children cry for food that they come to seek relief.

"This Committee hopes your Committee will send them further help as speedily as possible. The funds at their disposal are almost exhausted, and next week will be one of suffering for many here if aid be not to hand,

"I am, gentlemen,

"Your obedient servant,

"PATRICK CLARKE, *Hon. Secretary.*

"*Parochial House, Belleek, Co. Fermanagh,*

12th, February, 1880.

"DEAR SIR,

"May I, through you, again be permitted to appeal to the Mansion House Committee for another act of charity and mercy towards the many hundreds now suffering dreadfully in my parish? In truth, the distress is now assuming here an alarming appearance. On yesterday, our day of meeting at Mulleek to afford relief, the crowd was so great, looking for anything at all we could give, that it occupied the Relief Committee up to two hours after night to get through our list of applicants, and they had to give up the task nearly in hopeless despair of knowing what to do to get the shivering creatures away. It was sad to see hundreds crowded together around the door of where the Committee met, waiting from twelve o'clock noon to eight at night, under drenching rain, for whatever little we could give. From 1s. to 2s. 6d. was our rule, and in the end had to curtail even these small sums, sooner than hear the cries of the disappointed. Really the people are on the point of dying. If something be not done very soon to give employment, alms will not at all meet the crisis much longer. On last Monday in Pettigo several poor women and strong men came to the priest's house, and some of them fainted with hunger and exhaustion. The appearance of the poor is appalling. I will also ask, with whatever the feeling consideration of the Committee will be pleased to grant our poor people here—tickets, if you have such, and sheets to make returns on—if such be required by the Committee. We have none here, and I don't know where we are to procure such. Most gratefully thanking your Committee on behalf of our Local Committee, myself, and all my poor parishioners,

"I am, dear Sir,  
"Yours very faithfully,

"J. M'KENNA, P.P., Pettigo, Belleek.  
"W. WRIGHT, ESQ. *Secretary.*"

"Scotstown, Co. Monaghan,

20th January, 1880.

"MY LORD,

"May I submit to the charitable feelings of your Lordship, and to the Committee of the Mansion House Relief Fund, the sad state of our starving people.

"I am not going to furnish you with a state of things which have their existence in my imagination. Like the poor people themselves, I would rather conceal their poverty than paint it in its horrible reality.

"The landlords here are giving no work except to the process-server; the poor have no credit, and the father and mother are in hopeless want of work, and their children in want of bread. I know of thirty-three homes—if, indeed, a tenement without a window could be called a home—in which there is neither food nor fire. I may say there are 15 of these in extreme want. Instance the following:—Yesterday evening I was called on to visit a patient. When I reached the hovel it was not dark, yet the family, seven in all, were in bed; and why? because they had eaten the scanty fare they collected during the clay, they had no fire to warm them, and their remedy was to lie in a cold room, on cold beds, with, cold, empty stomach; and I fear my patient is a cold corpse now amongst them; and if I was constituted judge and jury over the cause of her death, my verdict would be 'want of food.' Such, and like pressing cases, I submit to the consideration of your Lordship.

"I have the honour to remain your faithful servant,

"THOS. CUMMINS, C.C.  
"To the Right Hon. E. Dwyer Gray, M.P."

"Plumbridge, Newtownstewart, Parish of Upper Bodoney, "Barony of Upper Strabane, "Co. Tyrone,

13th February, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"You may, no doubt, think it strange to have before you an appeal for relief from so prosperous a county as

Tyrone. Even here not long since everyone would have thought so likewise. This parish, though situated in the heart of the mountains, without any resident gentry, large farmers, or any special industry, if not rich, had few poor. Now all is changed, especially in the eastern part of it. This consists of a mountain glen, seven or eight miles long, midway on a line between Derry and Belfast, and is used chiefly for grazing Scotch sheep and young cattle. At no time good for potatoes or even oats; the last three or four wet seasons have been the ruin of it. Nearly 400 families dwell in this glen, and fully one-half of them are now in extreme want. Their only firing is heather; they have no potatoes; their half-filled oats are sold or consumed; they are sunk in debt from fifty to eighty per cent, of all they are worth, including their tenant-right; and the result is that they have lost their credit. Their landlords remitted them twenty per cent, in this year's payments, and, therefore, cannot be expected to do much more for them. Local contributions are not to be expected from a people on the verge of ruin. Some weeks ago, at a special meeting of the P.L. Guardians at Gortin, this state of affairs was not only acknowledged, but confirmed, by a full Board.

"The worthy Chairman, Major W. C. Hamilton, communicated with the Committee of the Duchess of Marlborough's Fund, and, from the public papers, I believe a grant was made to the Union. But how much is to be given to this locality I cannot say.

"A Local Committee has been formed, of as mixed a character as possible, consisting of the Rector of the parish, the Parish Priest and Curate, the principal representative of the Presbyterians (there being no minister just now), of the Vice-chairman of the Board of Guardians, of the Dispensary Guardians, the Poor-rate Collector, and the P.L. Guardians of the district. In all, four Protestants, four Roman Catholics, and one Presbyterian.

"Since the formation of the Committee, and even since I began this letter, I find that in other parts of the parish also, there are at least seventy or eighty families equally sunk in debt, and without credit. In the name of the Local Committee, and on behalf of these poor starving people (nearly all small farmers), may I ask you to grant us so much money as will purchase for each family at least a bag of Indian meal.

"P. MAGEE, P.P., *Hon. Secretary.*"

*"Milltown, Tuam, Co. Galway,*

*January, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"The people of Milltown and its surrounding districts being led to believe that a system of arterial drainage, which was so much talked of taking place in this locality, would tide them over their present distress, kept secret their sufferings, and made no clamour about their destitute condition as long as there was a flickering hope.

"The inhabitants having now lost all faith in the would-be Drainage and Railway, and having almost eaten the last seed potatoes, are in utter despair about the future; how they shall exist for the next six months, and where they shall get seed potatoes and oats for setting their crops.

"I am personally aware that many families are living upon yellow meal since the last week of November.

"Many are in such straits that they have depended for the last three months on the charity of neighbours only less wretched than themselves.

"There is a class of persons amongst the Irish peasantry who disdain to mention their distress, even though famine is on the threshold; not until it comes to the hearth will they admit their sufferings.

"Of this class Milltown is not destitute, and such is another of the reasons why an appeal was not made sooner.

"Local resources there are none to cope with the distress. Credit is at an end, as the only local shopkeeper who had ever given any has, within this week, issued notices, and has told the public that he will give no more but to such as shall pay a portion of the outstanding debts.

"Poor Law relief is out of the question, for a two-fold reason: 1st,—If any further strain be put upon the Union those who would be able to struggle through the year will be pauperized. 2ndly,—Most of those in actual want would sooner die on the roadside than don a pauper's uniform.

"Within the last eight days numbers of persons have come to their respected Pastor, and detailed to him their sufferings, and earnestly implored him to apply for some of the funds that are being distributed.

"Their good Pastor, although thoroughly acquainted with their wants, still, to put it beyond all doubt, sent trustworthy men into the villages to collect accurate information of the distress prevailing in them.

"On Sunday last the leading men of the parish met at the chapel, after second mass, for the purpose of relieving the sufferings of such as are in actual distress.

"Those engaged (some of whom were members of the Committee) in collecting accurate information as to the distress in each village, handed in their reports to the Parochial Relief Committee on Sunday evening. Two hundred families are in distress, of whom seventy are dependant for their support upon the charity of their neighbours, and, consequently, in actual want of, and unless immediately assisted must necessarily die of starvation.

"The Hon. Secretary was specially requested by the members of the Committee to apply to the Mansion House Fund for relief on behalf of the Milltown Parochial Committee.

"I subscribe myself,  
"Your obedient servant,

"JAMES HEANY, C.C., *Hon. Sec.*"

*"Arran Island, Galway Bay,*

*29th January, 1880.*

"To the Secretary Mansion House Committee.

"SIR,

"Behind the fragments of the last fortress beseiged by Cromwell in Ireland stands the village of Killanny with its hundred huts. It is the fishing centre of Arran, and every hut there is a fisherman's home.

"Though its inhabitants, poor fellows, point out the stone in those battlements against which Cromwell's nose was rubbed in a brief defeat, and boast of his final repulse from their walls, still worse than all, Cromwell's curse, we fear, remains.

"Nothing else could bring on the people such want and cold and nakedness as we witnessed. No later than today we walked through the village and saw children entirely—this is true—entirely, absolutely naked, gathering themselves around their poor old granny in the corner where the fire used to be.

"Arran grows neither turf nor timber. Fuel is supplied from Connemara, many miles distant, over one of the wildest seas around the Irish Coast,; and if Connemara and the whole West coast is itself in a partial fuel famine, what must inaccessible Arran be?

"We will give one instance. There are a few boats being made down on the shore, and it is really piercing to see those naked little creatures in the raw morning air, now standing on one foot and now on the other, watching the first chip that falls from the boat wright's axe.

"Would that those rich and charitable parents, whose own happy children play perhaps about them in joy whilst those lines are being noted, could see with their own eyes, in this painful condition, those shivering little ones, and the eloquence of their want would not plead in vain.

"Returning to the house where we left the old woman and the naked children depending, Berkeley-like, on their imagination for heat at the quenched hearth, we find a strong man, idle and careworn, leaning against the black side-wall. After commenting mournfully on his own and his children's condition, he says, "There are thirty men like myself in Killanny; we are too poor to get anyone to bail us for the fishery money. The people who want money most in those bad times won't get any from the Government Offices, but if we had one pound, each of us, to buy a Spilliard we'd try to put a fagot of clothes on the children, a spark on the hearth, and a bit in our mouths, with the help of God.'

"Thinking as we came away on the best mode of seeking succour for this deserving man, we said we will venture to write first to the three great Relief Funds, and we are sure they will not grudge to spend £10 each on a charity of this kind. These £30 would place the thirty wasting Killanny men in reproductive works.

"I will give them a chance of gathering, as they say, the riches that are waiting for them at the bottom of the deep.

"Signed on behalf of the Arran Relief Committee,

"JOHN A. CONCANON, P.P.

"D. W. FAHEY, C.C."

*"Glenamaddy, Co. Galway,*

*28th January, 1880*

"GENTLEMEN,

"I beg to inform you that distress to an alarming extent prevails in this district.

"The land for the most part is marshy bog—is wretchedly poor. The potatoes, the staple food of the people, could not be planted in early spring, and, in consequence, were slow in coming—never, in fact, came to maturity. Similarly the oats sown late did not ripen. A good part of this crop might be seen in the fields uncut in December, and some was never submitted to the sickle, as it was not worth the labour of cutting.

"In addition to the barren nature of the soil the rents are very high, the land for the most part being purchased in the Incumbered Estates Court.

"Labouring under these disadvantages, it is no wonder the people are steeped in debt, many of them owing, without any fault of theirs, even two, and some of them three, years' rent, and no prospect of being able to pay.

"A Committee has been formed here for their relief, but I will not attempt to describe the harrowing scenes I have had to witness since its foundation.

"Being commissioned to apply for the query sheet required to be filled before your Committee makes a grant from the funds at its disposal, I hereby request you will send it with as little delay as possible; and if you will dispense with that formula on this occasion, and be generous in granting aid to relieve as poor and afflicted a people as is to be found in any part of this ill-fated land, you will perform a real act of charity, and confer on them a favour deserving their everlasting gratitude.

"I am, gentlemen, your faithful servant,

"THOMAS WALSH, P.P.

"To the Hon. Secretaries,

"Mansion House Fund, Dublin."

*"Ballaghameehan, Garrison, Co. Leitrim,*

*22nd January, 1880.*

"MY LORD,

This parish is partly in the Union of Ballyshannon and partly in the Union of Manorhamilton, and comprises the following divisions:—Ballaghameehan, Glenariff, and Rossinver. In these divisions, notwithstanding local exertions, there is a vast amount of destitution, bordering on starvation, consequent on the total failure of the potato crop, which is the only means of support the poor people have here.

"I do candidly believe there are not less than 100 families in the parish in deep distress. Some have a little as yet left; some have nothing.

"On visiting the sick a few days since I entered the cabin of a poor old man, who, I believe, is bordering on eighty years old. I was grieved to see him in the miserable plight he was in—hanging over a few sods of turf, without shoe or stocking to ward off the cold from a damp floor. His hollowed cheeks, penetrating looks, and emaciated visage evidently tell a sad tale. I reached another house on the same day; the inmates of this comprised four individuals—the father, an old man, unable to leave his bed unless carried; the son, the only support of the old father, and two sickly sisters, one of whom is now far advanced in dropsy, and, I believe, is dying. Having asked the son why it was that one of the girls did not look for employment, even if she were only to get her support, and his answer was, 'No one wants her.'

"I am sorry to say there are many such cases of distress as those given in this parish.

"I am, my Lord, your Lordship's obedient servant,

"JOHN MCMANUS, P.P."

*"Bonniconlan, Ballina, Co. Mayo,*

*January 19th, 1880.*

"DEAR MR. GRAY,

"It is with feelings of pain and regret I beg to call your attention, and the attention of the members of the Mansion House Committee, to the deplorable condition of about 200 families in the parish. They are in great distress—the most of them in absolute want. They have nothing now to live on, I might say, but Indian meal, and not enough of that same; some of them without a drop of milk, without fuel, and all without credit, having their clothes pawned and their children half naked. We were hoping day after day that the Government would

come to our aid, but, unfortunately, it was hoping against hope. I trust, therefore, that you and the members of the Committee will kindly consider the sad state to which those poor creatures are reduced, and send me, for their relief, as much as you can, and as soon as you can.

"I have the honor to be, Sir, yours faithfully,

"PETER HARTE, P.P., Kilgarvin."

*"Ballaghaderrin, Co. Mayo,*

*January 20th, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"A Committee, of which our venerated Bishop, the Most Rev. Dr. MacCormack, is Chairman, has been organized for the relief of the distress which not only threatens, but actually prevails this moment, to a large extent, in this parish. The Committee had been actually working for more than a week, and every day it is besieged by crowds of strong men, and calling for something to keep away starvation. The severest inquiry is made into the destitution of each applicant, and no one has his application admitted whose destitution is not most industriously ascertained.

"After the closest investigation, there are at this moment 200 families, or about 1,000 people, receiving some relief from the very limited funds at the disposal of the Committee, and in the near future we have proof there will be 200 families, or another 1,000 people of this parish facing starvation, unless some relieving hands keep it away from them.

"May we ask you, gentlemen, in the name of the highest virtue, that your kind hand will be stretched out to us, and from one of the many hands that are wanted this moment to keep away death from the doors of our people.

"We remain, gentlemen, your faithful servants,

"OWEN STENSON, Adm., *Vice-Chairman.*

"JOHN FLANNERY, *Treasurer.*"

"PATRICK PEYTON and JOHN CAWLEY, *Secretaries.*"

*"Park, Turlough, Castlebar, Co. Mayo,*

*21th January, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"As there is not a gentleman, or landlord, or any person in the parish to bring before the public the distress that prevails in this parish, nor even a poor law guardian to speak on their behalf in the board-room, I am forced to appeal to your charitable Committee on behalf of my parishioners, a great many of whom are in great distress, for there is not a poorer parish in the entire West, owing to the poor and barren nature of the soil, although the parish is very large (being 12 miles in circumference, and containing thousands of acres), there is not more than 200 acres of it that is good and arable land, capable of producing meadow, the remainder consists of bog and mountain. There are about 500 families, all except three or four are small landholders, their holdings varying from three to eight acres. The greater part of the population live along the side of a cold and wet mountain; and in consequence of the wet and barren nature of the soil for the last three years, I may say the crops entirely failed, and only for the shopkeepers in Castlebar, who gave the parishioners credit last year, I am sure the greater part of them would have to leave the country. In the year 1845 there were about 1,000 families in the parish, and in 1847 the population was reduced to 500. In last May, the Archbishop, Dr. McHale, drove through a part of the parish from Castlebar, and after returning, he said that he never passed through a more wretched or poorer country, and consequently sent me £20 for the relief of the distressed. Unless the Government and the charitable public come quickly to the aid of the poor people, I fear many of them will feel the pangs of hunger, and that before long. Trusting that your charitable Committee will be so kind as to send me relief for my poor people,

"I remain, gentlemen, your obedient servant,

"EDWARD GRIFFIN, P.P."

*"Kilmovee, Mayo,*

*8th March, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"I feel, indeed, grateful to the Mansion House Committee for its noble efforts in our favour. Many of my parishioners would have perished in the past without your assistance, and, still more, will succumb in the future unless you persevere in the good work. My parish is exceptionally circumstanced. It is some twelve miles by three in area, having a population of some 7,000 to 8,000 souls. The land is ungenerous in the extreme, poor and badly cultivated, hundreds and hundreds of acres are covered with rocks or heath, while hundreds more are mere bog. I have no hesitation then in saying, did the occupiers pay no rent, the producer of their little patches would not in the best of times afford support for their families. If they have hitherto eked out a miserable existence, it is due to the money which flowed to our shores from wages earned in England and America. Imagine, then, the state to which my poor people are reduced, when I tell you that, besides losing almost the entire crop, such private aid from England and America has entirely failed us.

"I have not dwelt on the failure in the cattle trade; for, in truth, we had little to lose in that. The landlords, too, are absentees, and, like most absentees, forget the obligations of property in remembering its rights. There is no land in Mayo requires improvement more than ours. Yet, not one shilling has been expended during the winter, or is likely to be expended in the future, on public works in my entire parish. The union is sunk in debt, and hence the guardians refuse to assist the people outside the workhouse. As a result, the people, in their grim struggle with the Famine King, are deserted by those who, I suppose, should be their natural guardians—the landlord and the State. Do not wonder, then, if I assure you that, of a population of 1,400 or 1,500 families, some 1,100 or 1,200 families are reduced to the most heart-rending state in hundreds and hundreds of cases, without food or fuel, and with the scantiest clothing Did you enter with me one of these miserable houses, see its damp floor and fireless hearth; did you behold the poor little children huddled together, silent in their sufferings, and hear the parents' piteous tale, you would not wonder, gentlemen, that rushed away from their midst to plead again at your door in the holy cause of charity

"Let me add, gentlemen, that while, in the past year, you have alleviated much misery and saved many individuals from death, the future calls you to higher and holier work, for it calls you, I believe, under God, to save the West of Ireland. Enable the people to put down a good crop; give them food now so that they may give their undivided attention to their little farms; and I feel that when men come hereafter to speak of the dread season of '79 and '80 they will speak of the Mansion House Committee as the saviour of Ireland.

"I remain, gentlemen, respectfully yours,

"JOHN CANON M'DERMOT, V.F."

*"Attymass, Bullina, Co. Mayo,*

*26th January, 1880.*

"MY LORD,

"Among the many applications for relief that reach you, I venture to say there is hardly any district where relief is more needed than in this parish. I could say to you, even passing by train from Foxford to Ballina, look yonder east, and behold my parish, situate I at the very base and beginning of the Ox Mountain. I would require no other word to convince you that distress, deep and sad, exists there. Even in better times there was pinching want in the greater part of this parish at the end of Summer; and how could it be otherwise? The land is extremely bad and awfully dear, the holdings very small, generally under five or six acres, very rarely beyond eight or nine. The parish is densely populated, a circumference with a radius of two miles enclose it, save one village of sixteen families, situated in the very centre of bogs and mountains. If you'll consider the land covered by four lakes, with bogs and small barren mountain hills within this circumference, then there remains little land to sustain 420 families, with fourteen or fifteen who live on conacre You'll then admit that the parishioners (Protestant and Catholic) here are in want and destitution, in testimony of which I might relate many and many a painful incident. I am a prisoner in my own house, for though I tell them again and again I have nothing to afford them, they still remain about my house hoping yet to have something with them to their empty houses, and hungry families. I am pained to meet them, as I can't relieve their wants. It's the same way in every village

where I have to visit. I must wait and listen to heart-rending stories, and witness sad scenes. I therefore implore yourself and charitable Committee will vote me a remittance to meet the urgent destitution of my poor parishioners, 420 families, which means about 2,000, in distress for food and clothing.

"I remain, with respect, your obedient servant,

"JOHN O'GRADY, P.P., Attymass, Ballina, Co. Mayo."

*"Laherdane, County, Mayo,*

*January 27th, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"When, on the 19th inst., we sent you a copy of our resolutions, though even then much misery and sufferings had come under the notice of our Committee, we had no idea of the reality and the extent of the distress. We had since to learn, and, let me add, on the very best authority, the evidence of our own eyes, that many whom we thought to be in comfortable circumstances actually hold pawn tickets for the bed clothes, so necessary in those frosty nights to shield themselves and their little ones from the bitter cold. We have the bitter scenes of '47 re-enacted, and the year of grace, 1880, calling back as a spectre from the tomb, where we had hoped it was buried forever, the ghostly memories of the famine years. Will you believe it, gentlemen, we have seen the poor labourer wrestling with the frost to recover the potato that might have been left behind at the first digging last harvest? Gentlemen, from the fulness of our hearts we thank you for the £25 you allotted to us, and we pray God to bless you for your charity. With a population of 800 families in this (Addergoole) parish, most of them little removed from the condition of cottiers, without funds, as we are, and shut out by the negligence of Lord Lucan (who till this date had formed no Committee), from a share of the Marlborough Fund, how far can £25 relieve the distress of 4000 souls, three-fourths of whom, I declare, on the word of a priest of 49 years' standing to be in the direst want?

"I am, gentlemen, yours respectfully,

"ROBERT MACHALE, P.P."

*"Ballinlough, Castlerea, Co. Roscommon,*

*19th January, 1880.*

"MY LORD,

"I have been requested, as secretary of a meeting held this day in the Courthouse, Ballinlough, convened to take into consideration the present destitution in this parish (Kiltullagh), to apply to your Lordship for assistance from the Mansion House Relief Fund. On a mere preliminary list made out by the Rev. P. M'Loughlin, P.P., and A. W. Sampey, Esq., J.P., we inserted 179 families—representing about 1,000 individuals—to a few of whom we have been able to give temporary relief from a small sum (£17) allocated by the Castlerea Union Committee in connection with the Duchess of Marlborough's Fund. The population of the parish amounts to nearly 8,000, and we are within the mark in stating, that within the next few weeks fully 1,500 of these will be absolutely dependent upon the relief which the public may give them. Numbers of the unfortunate people in the parish have been compelled to pawn their clothes and bedding, so that, in addition to the starvation that stares them in the face, they are suffering keenly from want of clothing. We hope your Lordship's Committee will take our ease into their immediate consideration.

"I beg to remain your Lordship's obedient servant,

"JAMES TREANOR, Rector of Kiltullagh."

*"The Kilglass Relief Committee Booms, Enniscrone, Co. Sligo,*

*19th January, 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR,



"As secretaries of the Kilglass Relief Committee, we have been requested to make application through you to the Mansion House Committee, to aid us in our preset endeavour to meet the awful distress now in our midst. We confess we have been to slow, if not too late, in this, our appeal, for already numbers have been starving after having eaten not only their seed potatoes, but devoured the diseased and half-rotten roots, which were quite unfit for human use, and which, in the present instance, we fear have brought on pestilence and disease, as the natural result of such unnatural food. In one town land alone there are at present ten families suffering from fever, which in the opinion of the medical officer of the district, is induced by cold, want of clothing and scarcity of proper nourishment. We, in common with every well wisher of Ireland would prefer anything to gratuitous relief, and therefore we have earnestly appealed to the landlords of this parish to assist their tenants by means of remunerative employment in improving their own estates. We have had some favourable promises to the above effect from all; yet, with one or two honourable exceptions, these promises have never been realised; they have picked up what rents they could, and then, oblivious of their own promises, have lent a deaf ear to the pitiful entreaties of their starving tenantry.

"Many of these poor tenants who, relying on the faith of these specious promises have paid their rents, are now the most needy applicants for the charity of strangers. We have at present some 330 families, numbering close upon 1,700 individual relief lists, and judging from their emaciated and evidently hunger-stricken appearance and the reports of trustworthy persons who have made house-to-house visits of their respective localities, all have been suffering the most inconceivable and dire distress. Therefore, may we most earnestly beg you will use your powerful influence in our favour, and assist us in our laborious, we might almost say, hopeless task of combatting and surmounting the difficulties of our very trying position.

"We have the honour, my Lord Mayor, to remain

"Yours very respectfully,

"J. IRVIN, P.P., Kilglass, *Secretaries.*"

"R.J. FORD Incumbent, *Secretaries.*"

"*Collooney Belief Committee, Co. Sligo,*

19<sup>th</sup> January, 1880.

"MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,

"I am directed by the Collooney, Ballysodare and Ballinacanon District Committee to apply to you for a grant to their funds. The area of the operations of this Committee is the large parish of Ballysodare, the parish of Kilvanist, and three of the largest and poorest townlands in the parish of Kilmargan—in all, about 50,000 acres. The number of our distressed is so large that at the last and only distribution of provisions we were able to make, 275 families—representing now 1,300 persons—were relieved, each family receiving orders for provisions to the value on an average of about 4s., which exhausted our funds. The rush met at the distribution was so large that it took several policemen and others to keep the passages clear. The distress is intense, and the numbers needing help at present near 2,000 souls.

"I trust you will be able to make us a large grant, and enable us to feed the starving who are crying for help.

"Your obedient servant,

"GEORGE HELEN, *Hon. Sec.*"

"*Kilsianny, Ennistymon, Co. Clare,*

22<sup>nd</sup> January, 1880.

"To the Mansion House Relief Committee.

"GENTLEMEN,

"Permit me to most earnestly call your attention to the sad condition of many poor homes in this parish. A state of destitution exists so fearful that in many instances cold would be the heart that would not be wrung with sharp pain at beholding it. Up to the present hour I can say we have got nothing to stop the ever-rising and spreading tide of misery; for though this parish belongs to the Ennistymon Union, which Union has already received £125 from the Duchess of Marlborough's Fund, and though we sent to the managers of this money the names of seventy-six families, some utterly in want, the rest on the verge of absolute need, we have received to

aid these hungering mouths the large sum of £2 17s. 6d.

"Besides these families, whose names are sent to the Managing Committee of the Marlborough Fund, we might add, short though the time since be, twenty more families whose condition a short fortnight ago we did not consider completely hopeless.

"You will therefore, gentlemen, readily see what a sad picture we have before us—more than ninety families all in need of a kind and helping hand, some with hunger pangs at their hearts; nay, more, poor fathers and mothers, in addition to these hunger-pangs, must behold, what to them is even more heart-rending, the child of tender years nay, the little infant crying for food, even the poorest, and the little hungering mouth crying in vain.

"This awfully appalling state of things, which was brought home to me on yesterday more plainly and painfully than before, as I went through the parish, makes me personally appeal to you without any delay; and I have confidence that though I had not time to form a Committee Sheet, as you suggest, you will, if possible, send us something to relieve our poor parish homes and starving labourers immediately. Let the immediate and widespread necessities of these poor people be my apology for writing to you, and I promise when I hear from you, gentlemen, that I will form a Committee such as you suggest.

"With sorrow and a bleeding heart, gentlemen, I have to confess to you that the blackness of death seems hanging over us; the awfully gaunt figure seems waiting at many a door. The strong man whose hand was brave and willing to work is growing weak at present.

"The mother, with a look of hunger in her face and eye, and a sort of unspeakable despair, more painful to see than the loudest cry, as she gazes on the little pinched and withering faces which hunger has made, wears a look of premature decay and age. May Heaven bless the kind hearts that shall feel for us in our dark hour and the hands stretched out to save.

"I have the honor, gentlemen, to remain your obedient servant,

"M. KILLEEN."

*"Corofin, County Clare,*

*January 23rd, 1880.*

"GENTLEMEN,

"With the exception of a paragraph in the *Freeman* of last Tuesday, calling attention to the sworn evidence of the medical officer (stating that 'lately two deaths had been hastened by want of food and warmth') not a word has been heard about the distress which largely prevails in this district. I feel obliged, therefore, to ask you at the earliest opportunity to kindly place before the Mansion House Relief Committee the following statement in regard to this parish. It has a population of about 3,300, and I am under the mark when I state that 120 of these stand in want of immediate relief; in other words, they are in as bad a condition as were the two whose deaths were hastened by want of food and warmth. One family of eleven is obliged to subsist on one shilling per day, earned by the father, and such chance relief as may come from other sources. I met another lately, the mother of a large family, who told me her husband had no work for some time. She had travelled four miles (it was after two o'clock when I met her) in search of a breakfast. The children cannot come to school with empty stomachs. The heads of families have had no work until very lately, and even now the hire given is miserably small, not more than 1s. per day. It is proposed to form a Local Committee here next week. Meantime, may I request that your Committee will, considering the necessity, at once send such a sum as may relieve pressing want. For the present I shall be happy to take charge of such sum, and to render an account of same to your Committee.

"I am, gentlemen, your obedient servant,

"JOHN MCINERNEY, C.C."

*"Buttevant, County Cork,*

*20th January, 1880.*

"DEAR SIR,

"In consequence of the great distress which I am daily compelled to witness among the poor and

unemployed of my parish, I feel it a duty I owe to them to appeal to you for some trifling assistance. In conformity with the suggestions from your Committee, published in the *Freeman's Journal* of Tuesday, a Local Committee has been formed, the first meeting was held to-day, and, as secretary, I was directed to at once write for the "Query Sheet," which your Committee requires to be filled up by applicants for relief, will you kindly forward it immediately, as the distress is pressing and unprecedented.

"I have just been informed that a man and his wife, both about 80 years of age, who were in the habit of receiving money from their children in America, but who have not received any for the past few months, are in such terrible circumstances that they remain in bed most of the day to avoid producing an appetite, as my informant says, and that such is their horror of going to the Union that they would prefer going to die where they are breadless, penniless, and almost homeless. Similar cases I know to exist and these certainly demand immediate relief. Anxiously awaiting your reply,

"I remain, dear Sir, yours respectfully,

"MICHAEL P, NORRIS, C.C."

*"Castletown Berehaven, Co. Cork,*

21, st January, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"I most respectfully beg to apply to your Committee for some substantial relief for the poor, distressed and destitute people of my parish. No doubt several such applications are being daily made to you, but I doubt much whether there are any poor people appealing for relief whose case is deserving of more consideration than that of my poor parishioners: they number 6,000, and are chiefly composed of small farmers, holding little farms capable of supporting from two to four or five cows. These poor people have the same sad and sorrowful story to tell which you have already heard from others; they have no employment, no money, no credit, and very many of them have long since consumed the last remnant of the scanty crop of bad potatoes which they grew last year. I know of several farmers who, at this moment, are starving with the hunger. I know of others who were subsisting for a time at least, until they were relieved by charitable friends, on the few chance potatoes they could get out of the tillage which they dug out last year, several farmers having large families, and having nothing whatever to eat, whilst professing their shame at being obliged to do so, applied to me for relief, and were extremely obliged when I was able to give them the price of a few stone of meal out of the charity which my noble bishop. Dr. M'Carthy, placed at my disposal. I know of others who spend the greater part of the day digging up the beach in search of shell-fish, in order to help to support their families, and feel thankful if they can only procure what may suffice for a meal. To add to our misfortune, we have a great number of poor people here sick of measles, and some also sick of fever. I have every reason to know that several of these poor sick creatures are suffering the greatest privations. May I beg and implore of your charitable Committee to send us some substantial relief, and pledge myself that both the local Committee and myself will do all that depends on us to find out the most deserving objects and will dispense to them accordingly.

"I remain, gentlemen, your very obedient servant,

"THOMAS CANON CARMODY, P.P., V F."

*"Youghal, Co. Cork,*

22nd January, 1880.

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"I beg to bring under your Lordship's consideration the distress prevailing in this town and parish and the parish of Clonfrost, forming the union of parishes under my jurisdiction. The potato crop of last year was very short in quantity and defective in quality. The stock saved is nearly exhausted in many cases, and, in some instances, not even a single meal of potatoes remain. The poor farmers and labourers of this district are obliged to use Indian meal as their food, and they have neither money to buy it nor credit to get it from the dealers who sell that article of food.

"In addition to the immediate want of food the farmers here require to be supplied with seed, both potato and corn, in order to be in a position to plant their ground. If this want is not supplied the land must go untilled,

and the consequence will be another famine next year, as I well remember the same thing occurred in 1847.

"Your Lordship's most faithfully,

"T. (CANON) MURPHY, P.P."

*"Drimoleague, Co. Cork,*

*26th January, 1880.*

"DEAR SIR,

"The Secretary of the Committee formed in the Dispensary District of Drimoleague, Skibbereen Union, has been directed to make application to the Mansion House Committee for immediate aid for the relief of the destitute poor of this district. I have no doubt but that application has been received in good time. Permit me, in support of that application, to make a few remarks upon the state of those parishes, and the urgency of the appeal.

"The parishes of Drinagh, Drimoleague, and the greater part of Carahagh, constitute the dispensary district of Drimoleague, Skibbereen Union. It extends beyond the mountains of Owren, in the north, to within a few miles of Bantry, and this embraces near all the country to the north of Skibbereen, a tract of twenty square miles, and containing a population of near 9,000 souls.

"In all this district there is not a single resident landlord, and at the present time not one landlord giving a day's work to a labourer (except Dr. Levis, of Glenveiw, Skibbereen, who has taken a loan for drainage). I may say that there was a total failure of the potato crop last year, and, indeed, the year previous was very little better. The corn crops are very inferior also, and what was the main dependence of the farmers of the district—namely, the produce of the cows, became so low in price that it completed the ruin of the poor farmer. Hence the district is in a most deplorable state, and how we are to tide over these five or six months to come, the Lord alone knows.

"To tell my experiences amongst the poor would be, indeed, repeating over again what we see every day in the public papers. In short, the poor want work to earn food for their families, and failing the work, there is dire distress upon many families, and sure to increase unless we can procure work for the unemployed. I am free to confess that but for the limited employment given to the Bantry Railway Extension, the scenes of '47 or '48 would, ere long, be enacted again in this country.

"At the meeting of the Committee, on Wednesday last, there were taken down for relief 190 families, representing 1,000 souls, in want of immediate relief, and since then application has been made to me by as many poor small farmers who have not the means of procuring the seeds for their land for the season to come; and, consequently, will be as badly off next year, if any struggle out so long. I have been at the houses of this class, and I must say that it would move the heart of a Turk to see the state of them; no clothes for their beds, for the children; none for themselves—none, all gone to make something to meet the decrees and keep the bailiff from the door, and, to increase the misery, bad, very bad fires, as the turf is but half dry. I could give many cases of very severe want, where entire families are living on very insufficient food. Suffice it to say that we cannot be very much worse off unless the terrible famine-sickness comes, which, I dread, cannot be very far off in our present circumstances. Be so kind as to say the remarks before the Committee, in hopes that they may be induced to act promptly and generously in our favour.

"I am, dear sir, yours very faithfully,

"J. MURRAY. P.P."

*"Clondrohid, Co Cork,*

*28th January, 1880.*

"SIR,

"This is a wild and mountainous parish of 27,000 acres. There are no resident landlords. Father Ring, R.C.C., has just been sitting with me. No one knows the distress of the people better than he does. Any relief you send us will be administered by Father Ring (Father Walsh is upwards of ninety years old), myself and Mr. Pearson.

"Father Ring told me to-day that he has visited poor obliged to remain in bed from hunger.

"Faithfully yours,

"J. TORRENS KYLE, B.D., Rector of Clondrohid."

"Castlemaine, County Kerry,

January 24th, 1880.

"MY LORD,

"May I beg your Lordship's favourable consideration for my poor people when you have any funds at your disposal for the relief of the distressed.

"In one parish, Keelgarrylander, whose valuation is only £2,000, and the rental mostly double, with a population of over 2,500, entirely agricultural, the distress is very great.

"Their dwellings are mostly wretched, they have scarcely any fuel but the heather they bring from the mountain, on whose barren slopes the most of them strive to find a livelihood by reclaiming and tilling the craggy, unproductive hillside.

"There is no employment given except by one landlord, Mr. Langford Rae, but what can one do among so many poor?"

"From my own personal knowledge I can certify to your Lordship that the bedclothes of numbers of them, and whatever other clothes the pawnbroker would take in pledge, are in pawn for their support.

"The children are kept from school through want of even the scanty and ragged covering that would at other times pass muster in this backward place.

"I am sure your Lordship has appeals more than the funds at your disposal can adequately meet, but I appeal again to your Lordship's charitable heart for some help for my poverty-stricken, wretched people.

"I am, your Lordship's obedient servant,

"CORNELIUS SHEEHAN, P.P., Kiltalla and Keelgarrylander."

"Abbeyfeale Relief Committee, Abbeyfeale, Co. Limerick,

February 13, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"The baronial works cannot commence for a good while yet, and in the meantime I apprehend very great destitution in my parish. If the Mansion House does not come to our relief with a liberal hand, the landlords of the district, as far as I know, are not inclined to borrow the money offered to them on such easy terms, though tenants are prepared to guarantee the payment of the interest on it. And we have applied to the Duchess of Marlborough's Committee, and have been told that they will give us nothing now, nor hereafter. This parish adjoins Kerry, and within a short distance of the Atlantic, and exposed to its severe and withering influence, nearly as much as Kerry itself, and requiring as much external aid in the present terrible crisis. The £20 your Committee has sent us is not at all adequate to meet our orders in meal for the numbers we have given them to. But our Committee were convinced that when the Mansion House was made aware of our real sad state that they would indemnify us by sending twice or four times the amount already sent. With sincere thanks for your grant of £20, and hoping a favourable reply to this,

"I am, yours gratefully,

"M. COGHLAN, P.P., Chairman.

"W. WRIGHT, Secretary."

"Clogheen, Co. Tipperary,

13th January, 1880.

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"May I submit to your Lordship and the Committee of the Mansion Relief Fund, who have so nobly

undertaken the great work of charity, that a considerable number of poverty-stricken people living on the mountain-side called Kilcaroon, about 3 ½ miles from Clogheen, are this day in absolute want, a want indeed becoming hourly aggravated. I have just visited these poor people in their houses, some of their hovels without a window, and doors a little over 3 feet high. I do not in the least desire to trump up a case in their behalf, but simply state facts. They have no firing, no potatoes, in some instances the ridges have been left untouched, as the crop was not worth the trouble of rooting for it. Men, women and children met me on the way, quite in rags, asking if I brought them anything; some few creatures have struggled along, living on the produce of a few hens, which they managed to keep in the limited tenement with themselves and invariably the donkey. The whole village seems to suffer, with perhaps two exceptions, and though ready and willing to work for a day's hire, yet no employment can they find. Your Lordship and the Committee may be disposed to take their deplorable condition into kindly consideration when the distribution of the fund takes place. In Clogheen town the distress has been much alleviated by the kindness of good-hearted Viscount Lismore, who has on several occasions driven to the door of the Presbytery and with his own generous hands given me parcels of warm clothing, consisting of blankets, flannels, jerseys, &c., and in addition has ordered nutritious soup from the kitchen of Shanbally Castle to be daily meted out to the poor in that locality.

"I remain your Lordship's obedient servant,

"THOMAS M'GRATH, P.P."

Telegram received from Major Percy, Resident Magistrate, Nenagh:—

"23rd February, 1880.

"Went this day with the local clergyman to visit the homes of the unemployed poor of Nenagh, and he declared he was quite unprepared, even with all his experience of distress in India, to realise the extent of the poverty and misery that met his gaze. Such was the impression made on him that he at once ordered a large quantity of bread, at his own expense, from one of the large baking establishments of that town, and is at this moment sending his views of the extent of the distress to the authorities."

"Dungarvan, Co. Waterford,

19th February, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"When acknowledging your generous grant of £100, made to our Poor Relief Committee on the 2nd inst., we thought well to remind you that your charity would enable us to save our poor from starvation for not more than six days. You passed us a cheque on Saturday, 7th inst., for an additional sum of £50. Had we received no aid from other quarters, it would have been, imperative upon us to call upon you a week ago for a renewal of your grant. Fortunately, our friends have replied to our appeals very liberally, and, accordingly, we have abstained from trespassing on your fund till now. I am confident you will not be less considerate towards us because of our unwillingness to trouble you so long as we had any means whatever for saving our destitute thousands from starvation. I send you the return of our disbursements. Our Committee relieve daily by themselves about 250 families; by St. Vincent de Paul's Society, 25 families; by clergymen visiting houses, 90 families—365 families in all. Our disbursements (never exceeding 6s. per week in value to a family of five or less in number, and 10s. per week to a family of eight persons) have been, from 2nd Feb. (date of your grant) to 19th Feb. (this day), £313 13s. 9d.—that is, about £17 10s. 0d. per day.

"I ask you, therefore, to come to our assistance again tomorrow, for God's sake. These wretched people are entirely dependent on us. Perhaps the Board of Guardians will do something for some of them, but for the present we must keep them alive.

"I remain, gentlemen, very faithfully and thankfully yours,

"JAMES P. CLEARY, D.D., P.P., *Chairman.*"

"Kildare,

February 11, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"May I beg, through you, to bring before your Committee the destitute condition of a large portion of the poor people of this town, and to express a hope that your Committee will be good enough to grant us such assistance as it may deem fit to help us to tide over the present period of distress.

"Kildare is differently circumstanced from any of the other towns in the county, with very few resident gentry, a population of nearly 1,300 persons, of which nearly 100 are labourers, who work for the adjoining farmers, and about twenty-four who have passes to the camp, such as small pedlars, &c., who have been attracted hither by its proximity. Thanks to the kindness of his Grace The Duke of Leinster, a large portion of the labourers found employment during the past winter, and even now some are employed, at Rathangan, Athy, and Maddenstown, but a great many, particularly those advanced in years, only got employment now and then, and their earnings were totally inadequate to the support of their families. The Camp followers live by selling small wares, vegetables, watercresses, &c., to the soldiers, or exchanging them for broken bread and waste meat, &c. When the Camp is full they are enabled to support themselves and families, but when the number of men there are much reduced, as at present, they become very poor. Both classes (the unemployed labourers and Camp followers) have suffered severely during the last winter, and their sufferings have been intensified by the severity of the weather and the want of fuel. True it is, that very many have received out-door relief, at most half-a-crown each, but what can it do to pay rent, and, it may be, support four or five in family. They will not accept relief in the Workhouse. They cling to their cabins, fearful that if once they give them up, others will take their places, or that they may be levelled and that when they are enabled (if ever) to leave the Union House, they will find themselves tramps, and looked upon as degraded.

"The inhabitants who could do so have assisted them with clothes, food, &c., but their ability to render further aid is now well-nigh exhausted. They have made a collection of £40 to procure seed potatoes for those poor people who have manure and ground to put it out on;—in fine, they have done all they could, and they now appeal through me for your aid, and I trust I will not appeal in vain. The local clergy, P.L. Guardians, and medical men, will form a Relief Committee, and the necessary forms will be filled up as soon as received.

"I am, gentlemen, your obedient servant,

"SAM. CHAPLIN, L.K. & Q.C.P.I."

*"Urlingford, Kilkenny,*

February 19th, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"I am directed by the Urlingford Relief Committee to acknowledge the receipt of your favour, with the very generous donation. This sum will be the cause of saving many lives; indeed, until the distress has been enquired into, I had no idea we had such destitution in our town. May God bless the generous donors.

"I am, gentlemen, very respectfully,

"JOHN STAPLETON, *Hon. Sec.*"

*"King's Co.,*

January 31st, 1880.

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"I am directed by the Tullamore Relief Committee to ask your Lordship to aid us in gaining funds for the relief of our poor in this locality.

"We have been exerting ourselves to the utmost to collect money, which we endeavour as far as possible to expend in useful works, suited to unskilled hands, but the demand far exceeds the supplies coming in.

"I have the honour to be, your Lordship's humble servant,

"JOHN PEIRCE, J.P."

"*Edgeworthstown, Co. Longford,*

3rd March, 1880.

"GENTLEMBN,

"We desire to express to you our heartiest thanks for £20 grant to Edgeworths-town Local Committee.

"Our Committee has been in existence since Ash Wednesday. Our funds are again exhausted. We have relieved about 500 cases of distress. The poverty is increasing—both hunger and cold All classes are working harmoniously on this Committee.

"We again most respectfully appeal to your most generous Committee for another grant.

"Signed, on behalf of Committee,

"W. H. LYNN, Rector, *Chairman,*

"PETER FARRELLY, Parish Priest, *Vice-Chairman,*

"PATRICK RHATIGAN, Esq., *Treasurer,*

"MESSRS. JAMES FLOWER and M. KEANE, *Secs.*"

"*Inniskeen, Co. Louth,*

17th February, 1880.

"SIR,

"We, the undersigned residents of this locality, having met to consider the appalling distress existing in this parish, beg you will bring our case before your Committee on its next meeting.

"There are upwards of 1,300 urgent cases of destitution in this parish.

"In order to comply with the rules of your Committee, we have formed ourselves into a Local Relief Committee, to be called 'The Inniskeen Relief Committee.'

"Signed,

"PLUNKETT KENNY, *Chairman.*"

"*Drumconrath, Ardee, Co Meath,*

6th March, 1880.

"GENTLEMEN,

"In consequence of the amount of destitution existing in this parish, the Rev. D. Monahan, P.P. for Drumconrath and Meath Hill formed a Relief Committee in connection with your Fund, and requested me to take the position of chairman. This I consented to do, as I considered, from my position, as by far the largest proprietor, having property exclusively in this parish, that I ought to do my utmost to further his charitable work. I wish to say that since last November I have given a large amount of labour, not only to those on my own property, but to those of others, including, I believe, some from the County Louth; but I could not be expected to find work for all, neither could I employ people residing two, three and four miles from where I could find work for them. The parish, also, is very much divided into small properties; the whole of the landlords, except myself, being non-resident, and in very many cases they have given abatements of rent, and I believe in many cases, also, their tenants have been unable to pay their last half-year's rent.

"The Rev. D. Monahan and myself have written to and asked subscriptions from nearly all the landlords and large tenant-farmers, as a supplement to your Fund, and have received up to the present over £80; but when we asked for this money, we distinctly stated that it was to be used as a supplement to your Fund, and not in lieu of it. We wished it to be expended on clothes, labour, seed potatoes, and the like; but we expected to get from your Committee the food.

"The Townlands of Cloughreagh, Kells Union; Drumgill, Ardee Union; Meath Hill, Kells Union; and Ardagh, Kells Union, are wretchedly poor, the inhabitants nearly all very small farmers, and the soil either a heavy, wet, cold clay, covered with rushes, where laid down to grass, or having the rock close to the surface, as in Ardagh, Ballyhill, and Carrickleck, and in many cases having both, as in Cloughrea and Meath Hill. The



land being utterly unfitted for fattening cattle, the inhabitants used to graze and rear a few calves; but in consequence of the failure of the turnip crop in Scotland last year they had to sell them for nearly half their usual price. Again, from the constant wet last summer and autumn the cattle did not thrive, their corn staggled, their potatoes rotted in the ground, and the price of hay was also under that of late years. During the previous prosperous years, when cattle brought good prices in the Autumn, I have no doubt that the small farmers found that they could pay their rent and live with a certain degree of comfort without taking much trouble with their lands, but I am afraid that last season has completely broken them down. The district, which I believe to be the poorest in Meath, and as poor as that in any part of Ireland, commences on the verge of Louth with the townland of Breslanstown, keeping the verge of the Counties Louth, Monaghan and Cavan from east to north and north-west, and bounded on the south by the valleys of the Dee and Blackwater; or, to be more explicit, the northern portions of the Baronies of Lower Slane, Morgallion and Lower Kells, excepting, of course, Cabra Castle Demesne. I wish further to state, that my own property is exclusively in the Barony of Lower Slane, and that I have no interest in the Townlands of Cloughrea, Drumgill, Meath Hill, or Ardagh. The latter is owned by a namesake, but he is no relation of my own, nor have I ever seen him in my life, to my knowledge.

"I hope that you will excuse this long letter, but I feel that your Committee must be unacquainted with the circumstances of this district, or we would not have received the reply we had from you to our application for relief.

"I have the honour to be, gentlemen, your obedient servant,  
"H. C. SINGLETON. J.P., D.L., Co. Meath."

*"Crettyard, Queen's County,*

*January 22nd, 1880.*

"SIR,

"I beg to apply to you for some relief for some most destitute poor in this locality, and to state to you that I know at present families who have no means whatever of getting a morsel of food, or earning any wages to purchase it, especially since late severe weather set in, and are solely depending on the charity of their neighbours.

"If you kindly forward me query sheet, I shall fill up most deserving and really urgent cases, and, if required, shall get clergymen of parish, to certify as to the want of relief.

"I am, your obedient servant,

"PATRICK DELANY,  
"Member of Local Committee."

*"Chapel House, Collinstown, Killucan, Co. Westmeath,*

*"February 3rd, 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR AND GENTLEMEN,

"On last Sunday, the 1st February, a meeting of the principal inhabitants of Fore was held in the Chapel, at which meeting they adopted resolutions, three in number, the substance of which I will give you: The first was, as to the necessity of forming a Committee to collect funds to relieve the distressed poor; the second, asking Father Farrelly, P.P., and myself to appeal to the Mansion House Fund for some relief for the helpless poor here; and the third, that the Committee should consist of the Chairman, Christopher Halpin, P.L.G., the clergymen of all creeds, and the principal farmers of the place.

"I can assure you, from sad experience, that fearful distress prevails here amongst the labourers and very small farmers. The potato crop was so bad that many did not even dig them; the oats crop was very indifferent; the turnips failed altogether; and the unfortunate people have no fuel. I could give innumerable cases of fearful distress, but, as I know that your time is occupied with too many communications of a similar nature, I will confine myself to one. On Saturday last, a poor starving widow came to me. Her story, which, unfortunately, is too true, was—'Father, my husband is dead for the last ten years. I have seven children. Out of half acre of oats I had only one half-hundred of meal, which is gone. Since before Christmas I have not had one potato. In the name of God, what will I do? I would rather die than give up my little place from my poor orphans.'

"I could give you many such heart-rending cases. The land in this part of the country is very poor, the

holdings are small, and even those who have pretty large farms cannot afford to give employment. I implore of your Lordship and the members of the Committee to take this poor locality into consideration, and you will ever have the blessings of the poor whom you will have helped.

I have the honour to be, my Lord and gentlemen, your humble servant,

"C. CALDWELL, C.C."

*"Taghmon, Co. Wexford,*

March 4<sup>th</sup>, 1880.

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"We, the undersigned Relief Committee, having carefully examined the present state of small farmers and labourers in the twenty townlands comprising the electoral division of Taghmon, Co. Wexford, find that both classes are, we are pained to say, suffering very much—some reduced to acute want, having found some families in such a wretched state that they had not tasted a morsel of food for forty-eight hours! We had hoped, before making this investigation, that their state was not so bad, and that we would be spared the disagreeable necessity of applying to your Committee for relief.

"We have found 59 families, or 236 persons, more or less, suffering, and we are convinced that many of the farming class are in great want, but are too proud to disclose their poverty.

"The distress is nearly universal; the destitution in many families of small farmers complete, as well as the labouring class, and nothing but the most energetic exertions of the charitable will be able to save them from death by starvation.

The total quantity of harvest produce of all kinds would, in our opinion, not suffice for the home consumption; find being compelled by landlords to sell, to pay their rents, what they should have kept for food for their families, are now reduced to deplorable suffering—without employment, without food—save what the benevolent give them—without fuel, without bed-clothing: their condition is truly wretched.

"In this locality landlords will not assist their tenants by providing seeds, &c., for the approaching sowing season; and to sow any they may have left would be madness. The fact is, the quality of the harvest, which had been so badly saved, was so inferior that it would have been folly to have used it for sowing purposes. But good or bad, the farmers could not have purchased it as they have not the means of purchasing food for their own families during the many months to come, before the next crop will come to their aid.

"Respectfully asking your prompt succour for our suffering neighbours, which may be addressed to any of the undersigned members of the Committee,

"We are, my Lord,

"Your Lordship's obedient servants,

"M. MURPHY, P.P.,

"JOHN C. PIGOTT, M.D.,

"JOHN MATHEWS, Clk., Incumbent of Taghmon,

"STEPHEN PRENDERGAST, *Hon. Sec.*"

*"Arklow, Co. Wicklow,*

2<sup>nd</sup> February, 1880.

"MY LORD,

"We are directed by the Relief Committee to again bring the distress in Arklow under the notice of the Mansion House Committee, and to solicit a further contribution towards our funds. We have over 500 families on our books who have been receiving relief weekly for the past month. This number represents between from 2,000 and 2,500 persons.

"Our funds will only enable us to carry on our work of charity to the end of this week, and we fear that unless we get some further help, numbers of those whom we now relieve will be in a starving condition. Our mode of distributing relief is by orders on shopkeepers for food and fuel. As we know your Lordship's Committee only requires to know that real distress exists in a locality to send aid, we earnestly trust that the assistance so urgently needed for this town will be granted.

"We remain, your Lordship's obedient servants,

"HENRY ANNESLEY, *Hon Secretartes.*"

HUGH BYRNE, *Hon Secretartes.*"

## Communications.

At a meeting of the Committee, hold on Saturday, January 31, the Lord Mayor mentioned that he had received a telegram from New York, stating that "character, motives, and mode of distribution of money had been publicly questioned there, and that it would be desirable to send out a sanction of the Committee's proceedings by the Catholic archbishops, which could be published in America." In reply to the above, the following letter was issued to the bishops:—

"MANSION HOUSE FUND FOR THE RELIEF OF DISTRESS IN IRELAND. *"Dublin, 30th January.*

"MY LORD,

"I am informed that it has been publicly asserted in America that this Committee is influenced in the distribution of its funds by other motives than the desire to relieve distress, and that it is desirable we should have the express approval of the Catholic Hierarchy of our proceedings. In Ireland such statements would not be made, for everyone would know them to be without foundation, but when made elsewhere it becomes necessary that they should be formally corrected. Your Lordship is aware that every Catholic, as well as every Protestant, Bishop in Ireland is a member of this Committee. Our proceedings are public, and we have already had on our books nearly 500 Local Committees to which we have granted relief. Of these, I need hardly say, the Catholic Priests are in all instances members, and in nearly every instance the Protestant Clergymen are associated with them. Our rules require that, when practicable, the clergy of all denominations shall be represented, but we do not delay sending relief in any case that appears urgent. We have already distributed over £12,000 without any complaint in Ireland as to our *bona fides* or impartiality. I enclose your Lordship a printed list of the members of our Committee, our Rules and our Query Sheet. As the statements that are being made would be calculated to stop the flow of subscriptions to our fund, and discredit our exertions if these statements obtained credence, I have now, in the cause of honesty and of justice, and in that of the famine-stricken people of this country, in whoso service the Committee is working, to ask you to state, by return of post, whether, in your Lordship's opinion, this Committee is worthy or not of public confidence.

"I have the honour to be, your Lordship's obedient servant,

"E. DWYER GRAY, Lord Mayor, *Chairman.*"

## To this letter the following replies were received:—

### The Most Rev. Daniel M'Gettigan, Primate of All Ireland, wrote:—

*"Armagh,*

*2nd February, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"The Mansion House Committee for the Relief of the Distress in Ireland is engaged in the noblest work under the sun. The amount of good already done by it is marvellous. Everyone must have confidence in the integrity, honour, impartiality, and benevolent motive of its members. It is cruel to throw discredit on it. To bring that committee under suspicion is a crime akin to poisoning the wells that supply a besieged city with pure water. It is idle for me to add that I have a firm trust in the fairness of your excellent Committee.

"Believe me to remain, my dear Lord Mayor, your faithful servant,

"#DANIEL M'GETTIGAN."

## **His grace the Archbishop of Tuam wrote:—**

*"St. Jarlath's, Tuam,*

January, 31, 1880.

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"Very willingly I bear testimony to the efficiency with which the Mansion House Committee has hitherto laboured in mitigating the distress of our sorely afflicted people, and in averting for the present, in certain localities, the horrors of the famine of thirty years ago.

"I remain, my dear Lord Mayor, your faithful servant,

"JOHN, Archbishop of Tuam."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. Croke, Archbishop of Cashel, wrote:—**

*"The Palace, Thurles,*

February 2nd, 1880.

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"I am in receipt of your circular, and beg to say in reply that I have no reason to think that the moneys placed at the disposal of the Mansion House Committee have not been judiciously applied. It is true, indeed, that I have no special fancy for certain members of the Committee, whose sympathies with our people I would be strongly disposed to question. But your name and other names are ample guarantee to me that no substantial wrong can be done our people in the distribution of the Mansion House fund

"I have the honour to be, my dear Lord Mayor,

"Your faithful servant,

"#T. W. CROKE, ABP."

## **The following letter was also received from His Grace the Protestant Archbishop of Dublin:—**

*"The Palace, Stephen's Green, Dublin,*

Jan. 30th, 1880.

"Having had some practical share from the beginning in the work of the Committee of the Mansion House Relief Fund, and in the distribution of the money of which it has been made the almoner, I feel called to bear witness to the spirit of entire fairness which has presided over all its arrangements, and to the absence of all considerations save only the necessities of the applicants, which has governed its distribution of the funds entrusted to it.

"RICHARD C. DUBLIN."

*"St. Jarlath's College, Tuam,*

January 30th, 1880.

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"Your letter literally astounds me. How it is any man, or men, could concoct such a calumny as that

referred to in your letter passes my comprehension. Why, it is as notorious as any public fact can be, that the praiseworthy exertions and labours of your Committee are all undergone in the interests of the poor struggling tenants and starving poor of Ireland, without distinction of creed, and have already saved the lives of thousands of our afflicted poor. Your Committee, composed of gentlemen of every creed, who merge every other consideration in the interests of charity, dispense the charities confided to you with the greatest fairness, and, as far as I know, have secured public confidence in your judgment and impartiality.

"With sincerest esteem, believe me, very sincerely yours,

#JOHN M'EVILLY.

"Right Hon. The Lord Mayor of Dublin."

*"Loughrea,*

*January 30th, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"I am deeply pained to learn from your inquiry that imputations have been cast upon the integrity, or impartiality, or the motives actuating your Committee in their desire to afford relief to the distressed poor in this crisis. My means of information are extensive. The Committees to whom you are entrusting your funds in this district are composed of men of all political and religious shades. The utmost care is taken in distribution. The only test is destitution. I am astonished to hear of the imputations to which you refer. Already by your contributions to this quarter much misery has been alleviated, and as the season moves into spring, deaths without number will be the consequence unless some aid comes through a charitable public. It is quite true that our rulers should institute a system of public work. Our people want work, and not alms. In the absence of this aid from Government anyone who would by imputing unworthy motives to your Committee, check the hand of charity, will incur a dreadful responsibility before God and the country. No one here questions the honour, the motives, or the judicious action of your Committee. On the contrary, all approve and are deeply grateful.

"I am, my dear Lord Mayor, sincerely yours,

#PATRICK DUGGAN.

"The Right Hon. the Lord Mayor,

"Mansion House, Dublin."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. Conway, Bishop of Killala, wrote:—**

*"Ballina, Co. Mayo,*

*February 1st, 1880.*

"MY LORD,

"I am favoured by the receipt of your lordship's communication of the 30th ult., stating that 'it has been publicly asserted in America that the Mansion House Relief Committee is influenced in the distribution of its funds by other motives than the desire to relieve distress.' In replying, I beg to state that I believe that assertion to be a most unfounded calumny. In the famine years of 1846, 1847, and 1848, and since then, I had a good deal to do with relief committees. I corresponded with most of them, formed during that time for the relief of distress, and I candidly say that I never experienced a more benevolent disposition and a greater desire to ascertain the extent and urgent nature of the distress to be relieved than I found among the gentlemen who form the present Mansion House Committee. Any other cement than that of pure charity and sympathy for afflicted humanity could not unite into one harmonious body the conflicting religious and political elements of which your Committee is composed. It has to deal with local committees composed of the same conflicting elements, and it would be impossible that any other motive (if such existed) than the desire to relieve the poor could escape notice. The local committee here, of which I am chairman, is composed of clergymen of all denominations, of landlords, poor-law guardians, medical officers, merchants, and gentlemen of different

creeds and politics. They all bear most willing evidence to the prompt, courteous, and kind attention paid to their application by your Committee, and never have I heard any other motive assigned for this courteous conduct than that of pure benevolence. In fact, the Mansion House Committee is more popular than the Executive Committee of the Duchess of Marlborough Fund; for while the latter don't allow their fund to be applied for the relief of those who in ordinary circumstances could be relieved by the poor-rates, the Mansion House Committee makes no distinction, but leaves the application of their funds to the judgment of the local committees, a thing that has kept thousands out of the workhouse.

"I have the honour to be, my Lord, your most obedient servant,

"#HUGH CONWAY."

## **The following letter was received from the Bishop of Raphoe:—**

*"Letterkenny,*

January 31st, 1880.

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"I am surprised and pained to learn that the motives of the Mansion House Committee have been questioned in America. Such charges as that to which you allude should not be lightly made. To cast, without clear grounds, even a breath of suspicion on the Committee, and thereby impair its efficiency, is a crime against the famine-stricken people of Ireland. The crime is still greater when such suspicions tend to shake the confidence of the generous-hearted American people, to whom we already owe so much, and from whom we expect still more effectual aid in battling with the terrible distress under which our poor country suffers. Surely the authors of such charges would be more cautious did they remember that in making them they snatch the scanty dole of charity from the mouths of weak women and helpless children; yes, and from the mouths of famishing stalwart men, to whom the hunger-pang is a trifle compared with the unspeakable torture of beholding their wives and children pining away through want before their eyes.

"I am happy to express my belief that these charges are groundless, and to testify that I have never heard the motives of your Committee questioned by those who have had the best opportunities of observing its action. I have myself carefully examined its constitution; I have read its rules; I have day by day taken an interest in its proceedings, like to that with which Lazarus watched the crumbs as they dropped from the rich man's table; yet, neither in its constitution, nor rules, nor daily action, could I detect anything which was not honestly directed, according to the best judgment of its members, to the effectual relief of distress—anything which was not calculated to win the confidence of those most deeply interested in the welfare of the poor sufferers.

"It would be deplorable, indeed, should jealousies or misunderstandings creep in to paralyse the action of the various bodies who so nobly devote themselves to the relief of distress. The field is large; there is more than enough of work for all; there is crying need that the efforts of all should be directed to the one great end of saving the people's lives. Hence, humanity, patriotism, charity, and every other motive which can influence an upright mind demand that each of us should sacrifice his private likings for the common good.

"I am, my dear Lord Mayor, your faithful servant,

"#MICHAEL LOGUE, Bishop of Raphoe.

"To the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor of Dublin."

## **The following was received from the Bishop of Elphin:—**

*"Sligo,*

January 31st, 1880.

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"This evening's post has brought me your esteemed favour of yesterday, and I am glad you have given me

the opportunity of expressing my opinion of the Mansion House Committee, over which you preside. In Ireland it need not be observed that its members are men of respectable position, high character, and considerable influence. They hold strong and widely-diverging opinions in religion and politics; yet they have never, that I know or have heard, manifested the slightest religious or political bias in their discussions, or the Lord Mayor of Dublin's decisions as a Committee. Their bond of union, and the sole object for which they are associated, appears unmistakably to be the relief and prevention of distress amongst our poor people; and considering the fearful, bewildering crisis with which your Committee has to deal, and the countless claims it has to weigh and decide, on information often unavoidably incomplete, it has, in my humble opinion, dispensed the funds entrusted to it with as much prudence and efficiency as could be expected from any Central Committee, no matter how constituted. I have had many opportunities for forming the opinion I here express—and to express it, under the circumstances that call for it, is to me a duty of justice as well as of gratitude. It would be a public calamity if your Committee were allowed to be robbed of the confidence it has hitherto so justly enjoyed.

"I have the honour to remain, my dear Lord Mayor,

"Your faithful servant,

"#L. GILLOOLY, Bishop of Elphin."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. Walshe, Bishop of Kildare and Leigililn, wrote:—**

*"Braganza, Carlow,*

February 1, 1880.

"MY LORD,

"I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your lordship's respected communication of the 30th ult. I was painfully surprised at hearing the statement which was reported to you. It is certainly without foundation. I am confident that your excellent Committee possesses, as it eminently deserves, the confidence of the public, and is justly entitled to our warm gratitude for its generous and laborious exertions to relieve the great distress now so general and pressing so very sorely in many places upon our afflicted people.

"I have the honour to be my Lord,

"Your Lordship's faithful servant,

#JAMES WALSH."#

## **The Most Rev. Wm. Fitzgerald, Bishop of Ross, wrote:—**

*"St. Patrick's College, Maynooth,*

January 31 st, 1880.

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"I am in receipt of your Lordship's letter which duly reached me here, and in which you ask me to state whether, in my opinion, the Committee of the Mansion House Fund is worthy or not of public confidence. Whilst, for the sake of the suffering and hunger-stricken poor, I regret exceedingly that there should be any need of testifying to the *bona fides* of your Committee, I lose no time in stating that, as far as I know, the members of your Committee are justly considered to be working with impartiality and success for the alleviation of the prevailing distress. Whatever moneys you have sent to the Diocese of Ross, and, from all that I have heard and read, whatever moneys you have sent elsewhere, are being disbursed for one particular purpose, and that the intended and meritorious one of relieving the distressed poor. Anything said or done to diminish the confidence which the public, up to this, has felt in the energy and honesty of your Committee, tells heavily against the famine-stricken people whom all should strive to serve, and who, as long as the Government

refuses to hear their cry for help, have no other resource left than that which is found in the union and co-operation of their patriotic fellow-countrymen, and in the compassionate sympathy of the charitably-disposed all over the world.

"I have the honour to remain, my dear Lord Mayor,

"Your Lordship's obedient and faithful servant,

"#WM. FITZGERALD.

## **The Bishop of Kilmore wrote:—**

*"Cullies House, Cavan,*

*February 1st, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"I beg to say that I have the utmost confidence in the Mansion House Committee, and consider that its members deserve the gratitude of the country for the noble and generous efforts they are making to relieve its distress.

"I am, my dear Lord Mayor, faithfully yours,

"N. CONATY, Kilmore."

## **The following was received from the Most Rev. Dr. M'Carthy, Bishop of Kerry:—**

*"The Palace, Killarney,*

*February 1, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"I have no hesitation in expressing my opinion that your Committee is worthy of public confidence.

"I remain your Lordship's most faithful servant,

"#D. M'CARTHY."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. Butler, Bishop of Limerick, wrote:—**

*"The Palace, Limerick,*

*February 1st, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"In reply to your letter I hasten to say that I never entertained the slightest doubt, nor did I ever hear a doubt expressed, of the honour and impartiality of the 'Mansion House Committee' in carrying out the great work of charity to which they have so nobly devoted themselves. The country from end to end has the most absolute confidence in their honesty and ability.

"Believe me to be, yours most faithfully,

"#GEO. BUTLER."



## **The Bishop of Achonry wrote:—**

*"The Abbey, Ballaghaderin,*

*1st February, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"In my opinion, the Dublin Mansion House Relief Committee is worthy of confidence; and I am sorry to learn that any statement should be made, at home or abroad, that would be calculated to arrest the course of charity, or discredit the unsparing labour of your Committee.

"In the distribution of a relief fund to remote districts it is very difficult to hold the balance so evenly as not to seem to incline one way or the other. I would suggest as standard—the relative distress and population of districts—information on both heads being derived from trustworthy sources.

"I remain, my dear Lord Mayor, your faithful servant,

"#F. J. MACCORMACK, Bishop of Achonry."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. Leahy, Bishop of Dromore, wrote:—**

*"Violet Hill,*

*February 2nd, 1880.*

MY DEAR LORD,

"In answer to your Lordship's question I have great pleasure in stating that I consider the Mansion House Relief Committee entitled to the fullest confidence of the clergy and people.

I am, my dear Lord, your Lordship's obedient servant,

"#JOHN P. LEAHY."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. MacCarthy, Bishop of Cloyne, wrote:—**

*"Queenstown,*

*January 31st, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"In reply to the circular of the Mansion House Relief Committee, received only this evening, I lose not a moment in saying most emphatically that it is deserving not only of the confidence but of the gratitude of every one (no matter what his creed or politics) who has a heart to feel for the unparalleled sufferings which hundreds of thousands of our poor fellow-countrymen are enduring at this moment from the process of slow starvation in Ireland. Formed on the broadest basis of Christian charity, in which, thank God, members of every denomination can unite, the sole object it proposes to itself, I am firmly convinced, is the relief of distress wherever it is to be found: and its action up to this, as far as I have been able to observe it, has been in perfect keeping with this sublime object. I regret exceedingly that any doubts should have arisen, either at home or abroad, on this point—doubts, whose only effect can be to check the flow of Christian charity to those who are sorely in need of it; but as far as my single testimony can go, I again assert emphatically that such doubts are unfounded.

"I am, my dear Lord Mayor, yours faithfully,

"#JOHN MACCARTHY."

The following telegram was received from the Most Rev. Dr. Kelly, Bishop of Derry:—  
"Most Rev. F. Kelly, Derry; the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor, Dublin.  
"Lord Mayor may add bishop's name to list of prelates who have confidence in the Mansion House Committee."

## **The Bishop of Ferns wrote—**

*"Enniscorthy,*

*February 2nd, 1880.*

"MY LORD,

"I am most happy to slate my belief that the Dublin Mansion House Committee deserves the fullest public confidence in its distribution of the funds entrusted to its care, as well as the lasting gratitude of the suffering people of Ireland.

"I have the honour to be, my Lord, yours faithfully,

"#M. WARREN, Bishop of Ferns."

## **The Bishop of Waterford wrote:—**

*"Waterford,*

*2nd February, 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"I regret exceedingly to learn that it has been publicly stated in America that the Mansion House Committee for the relief of distress in Ireland is influenced in the distribution of the funds at its disposal by other motives than the desire to relieve distress. Such a statement is utterly groundless and most unwarrantable, and must be painful to the feelings of the gentlemen comprising the Committee, who give so much of their valuable time in receiving and examining the numerous applications for relief. There is no hesitation in stating that the Committee is deserving in the highest degree of public confidence, and I trust that the reckless assertions referred to shall not have the effect of damaging the good work in which the members of the Committee are benevolently engaged.

"I am, my dear Lord Mayor, yours very sincerely,

"JVOHN POWER, Bishop of Waterford."

## **The following was received from the Vicar-General of Killaloe:—**

*"Killaloe,*

*2nd February, 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"As the Bishop, Dr. Flannery, is in Paris, no communication can be received from him in reply to either your letters or your telegram within the time specified.

"I am, my Lord Mayor, your obedient servant,

"F. J. M'REDMOND, P.P., V.G."

## The Bishop of Ardagh wrote:—

*"Bishop's House, Newtownforbes, Co. Longford,*

*"31st January, 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"In reply to your Lordship's favour of yesterday, I beg to assure you and your worthy co-operators in the holy work of relief of distress in Ireland that I deem your Committee worthy of the fullest confidence. Your efforts on behalf of our destitute poor deserve the heartfelt gratitude of every friend of Ireland and of humanity.

"I have the honour to remain, my dear Lord Mayor,

"Very faithfully yours,

"BARTH. WOODLOCK, Bishop of Ardagh."

## The Bishop of Cork wrote and telegraphed:—

*"Cork,*

*February 2nd, 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"I received a circular regarding the Mansion House Fund Committee, signed by your Lordship, and as no other name appears in the document I trouble your Lordship with my reply. I place the most implicit confidence in the benevolence, the impartiality, and the prudence of the Mansion House Committee.

"I have the honour to be, your Lordship's faithful servant,

"#WILLIAM DELANY."

(Telegram.)

*"Feb. 3rd, 1880.*

"Right Rev. Dr. Delaney, Blackrock, the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor, Dublin.

"I place the most implicit confidence in the benevolence, the impartiality and prudence of the Mansion House Committee."

## The Bishop of Clogher wrote:—

*"Monaghan,*

*2nd Feb., 1880.*

"MY LORD MAYOR,

"I very willingly testify that the Dublin Mansion House Committee, established for the relief of Irish distress, has my unbounded confidence. No one here entertains the smallest misgiving as to the *bona fides* and impartiality of your Committee, and vast good has been already done by it throughout the famine-stricken district of the country, without manifesting the slightest political or religious bias. As to certain statements, alleged to have been made in America, calculated to injure the character of your organisation, I would hope and be half inclined to believe there may be some mistake or misunderstanding.

"I am, my Lord Mayor, your faithful servant,

"#JAMES DONNELLY, Bishop of Clogher."

## **The Bishop of Ossory wrote:—**

*"Kilkenny,*

*2nd Feb., 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"In reply to the query which has come to hand, whether I consider the Mansion House Committee for the Relief of Distress in Ireland deserving or not of public confidence, I hasten to reply that your Committee has already effected an immense amount of good, and, in my opinion, merits in the fullest manner the public confidence. It is only to be expected that when great good is being effected, and when all our leading men, whatever their political opinions may be, are found united in promoting the work of charity, some persons should be found anxious to sow dissensions and to introduce elements of discord into your deliberations. I trust that your Committee will pay no attention to such persons, but will continue to promote with the same energy as in the past this great work of public beneficence and true Christian charity in which you have so meritoriously taken a leading part.

"Believe me to remain your faithful servant,

"#PATRICK FRANCIS, Bishop of Ossory."

## **The Most Rev. Dr. MacCabe, who attended the meeting, said:—**

I thought it better to come here myself and personally enter my solemn protest against the charge brought against this Committee. I myself have not come in contact with it in so far as being an applicant for money, but I have had an opportunity of meeting a great many bishops in Maynooth, and I may tell you that I have heard from themselves the statements you have now heard from their letters, and their feeling, as mine, is one of complete satisfaction and unbounded confidence in the operations of the Committee. As some of the letters reminded us, it would be perhaps a miracle to find all the gentlemen around this table agreeing upon any subject except that of charity (hear, hear). I am sure we would not all agree on religious doctrines, on politics, and on a great many social subjects; but what brings us all here is the one great cause, the cause of Godlike charity. Though it may seem strange, I think that, assuming these telegrams are correct, perhaps it is very fortunate the charge has been made, for it has given an occasion for a great and generous outburst of approval of the proceedings of the Committee (hear, hear). Had you gone on unchallenged there never would have been such a unanimous expression of opinion (hear, hear). There is no evil so purely evil from which great good may not come, and I think you may rather congratulate yourself on this charge having been made. Had the charge been confined to Ireland, the Lord Mayor might have indeed afforded to despise it, but under the circumstances of its having been made in foreign parts it was right they should now protest against it (hear, hear). For myself, I have the most unbounded faith in this Committee, and I am glad to know with confidence that we all rejoice at being able to work harmoniously.

The following letter was read from Most Rev. Dr. Nulty, Bishop of Meath:

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"In the circumstances in which I happened to be placed I could not reply to your 'circular' of yesterday in time for last evening's post. In the chorus of approval which that circular has evoked to-day I heartily concur. That the Mansion House Relief Committee enjoys the confidence, and is entitled to the gratitude of the country, seems a truism to which everyone seems willing to bear testimony, and to which I most cheerfully and sincerely subscribe.

"I remain, my dear Lord Mayor, ever respectfully yours,

"#THOMAS NULTY."

## The following letter was read from the Most Rev. Dr. Dorrian:—

*"Chichester Park,*

*Feb. 4, 1880.*

"MY DEAR LORD MAYOR,

"On my return from county Down this evening, I beg to acknowledge the receipt to-day of your Lordship's letter in reference to the Relief Committee. Up to the present we received no aid in this diocese from the Mansion House Committee, though in the parish of Kilcoo, County Down, the clergy had to provide for 150 of the labouring adults who had not their dinner on Christmas Day. Your Committee knew nothing of this, and is not to blame. These poor fellows, having no work at home, went to England, but their employment ceased there from the slackness in the iron works, and they had to come home penniless. This will show your Committee how far you are from knowing the extent of the distress over the whole country. However, I am glad to say I heard no complaints of partiality in the distribution of the funds; nor do I for a moment believe any member could be influenced by any other motive than to relieve real want. Still, the question is, was the right thing done? Could not your Committee have started by using its influence to force the Government to give employment and save us from a gigantic system of soup kitchens, which perpetuate misery and do very little to allay hunger. Work brings wages, and wages wants no alms. If your Committees had turned to this way of relieving distress they were too influential to have failed, and no little jealousies would disedify the public. Wages in the beginning; alms, alas, now! I have had no experience of your Committee, but would agree with the Bishop of Elphin that diocesan, not county, committees are more workable for the distribution of relief. Here we made a collection in our churches as soon as we saw alms to be inevitable, and we sent them, like the Christians in the famine under Claudius Caesar, by the hands of Barnabas and Saul, to help the Christians in Judea—to the bishops.

"I have the honour to remain, my dear Lord Mayor,

"With great, esteem, faithfully yours,

"The Right Hon. the Lord Mayor, Dublin.

"#P. DORRIAN."

### **Appeal.**

Little more than two months have elapsed since the Dublin Mansion House Committee for the Relief of Distress in Ireland started into existence. At the period of its formation, there were some who were slow to believe that any pressing necessity for the organization of such a body existed, and there were few who realised that the work before it would have proved so overwhelming in its sadness, and in its magnitude. At the commencement of the year, there were, however, abundant evidences that in many districts of the "West, and of the South-West and North, the shadow of a fearful calamity had settled upon the people, and that, there at least, there would be ample scope for the exercise of a benevolent charity.

With as little delay as possible the Committee applied itself to the task of sending succour to the afflicted; and as the funds for relief came in they were despatched with promptitude for distribution amongst the needy. The system adopted by the Committee, for relieving the wants of those who most required assistance, is described elsewhere; and the testimony that has been offered from every quarter of the country, as to the satisfactory results that have followed upon a close adherence to it, is the best proof of its efficiency and efficacy for all its purposes.

Three times in each week, the Committee holds a Public Meeting for the discussion of its work and for the allocation of its grants, and on each of the other three days the Sub-Committees of distribution are engaged in the careful and scrupulous investigation of every application for relief. Day by day, it was found that the area of want was increasing, and that hunger and suffering and misery were creeping into households and into districts, where but a short time before their presence was but little anticipated.

The wail of woe that first came from Mayo, and Gal way, and Donegal, and Clare, and Cork, and Kerry, began to conic in equally harrowing tones from Sligo, and Cavan, and Roscommon, and Leitrim, and Longford, and Tyrone, and Fermanagh, and the picturesque Glens of Antrim and of Down; and it is but a short time since

help was sent J to the fairest, spots in beautiful Wicklow, and to some of the once thriving villages of; fertile Kildare.

Tipperary has shared in these merciful ministrations, and Cork, and Limerick, and Dublin, have partaken of the magnificent generosity which has so splendidly manifested itself throughout the world, in behalf of our stricken and patiently-enduring people.

In truth, every day of the ten weeks that have passed since the establishment of the Committee, has intensified the distress, and to-day there is scarcely a corner of the land where famine is not impending over its inhabitants.

The prospect before them from this to August, when, as may be hoped, the fields will be ripe and rich for the harvest—is an appalling one, and but little expectation can be entertained that it will brighten till far into that month. A world's mercy and munificence have enabled the Committee up to this to save hundreds,—thousands, from death by starvation; to rescue thousands of little children from premature graves, and to avert the ghastly and historic incidents of the Schull and Skibbereen of three-and-thirty years ago. But as yet its work is far from done. The Committee has yet enough to keep our people alive for about six weeks more. With the expiration of that period, unless the world's mercy and munificence go on, God only knows what the result may be. The Committee makes a fresh appeal to the sympathy of the benevolent throughout the universe. The existence of a whole race depends upon the response. In her too brief and transient intervals of prosperity, Ireland was never slow in responding to appeals from afflicted nations, and out of her comparative poverty she gave with ungrudging generosity.

In her present need she asks for aid, and the Dublin Mansion House Committee will gladly continue to be almoners of any gifts that may be sent to it for the alleviation of Ireland's great distress.  
St. Patrick's Day, 1880.

## Secular Civilisation.

BY THE REV. FATHER O'MALLEY, S.J.

### The Pretensions of Secular Education.

*Economy.*—Secular Education claims to be the most economical of all systems.—It is the most costly.

In the year 1872 the education grant in Victoria was £200,000, and this sum was looked on as "appalling," and to be "considerably reduced" by the introduction of the new system.—(Hon. Mr. Langton, *Argus*, Wednesday 15, 1872.)—Hardly has the new system begun to work when we find Mr. Mackay, the Minister of Education, asking for £800,000! The population of Victoria was only 797,049—nearly a million of money for less than a million of people!

Under the old system the Catholics paid £50,000 a year, and received the value of their money. Now they pay three or four times as much, and receive no return whatever.—It is legalised robbery.

That the Catholics should be oppressed is a matter of course, but that the system should weigh heavily even on the *Secularists*, will perhaps seem surprising. Yet it is so contrived that *all* are unfairly taxed; that the man who needs assistance *least*, is *most* benefited by it, and that the *less* benefit one derives from it the *more* he has to pay for it. Evidently the rich man needs no assistance. Now it is precisely the rich man that derives most benefit from it, for he can easily keep his children at school for seven or eight years, while the poor woman who really needs assistance, can hardly afford to deprive herself for one or two years of her child's aid towards making out a scanty livelihood. Then even the rich man is unfairly taxed, for he receives a return for only these seven or eight years, while he must pay the education tax all his life. Still more unfairly is the poor woman taxed who receives a return for only one or two years. But most unfairly of all taxed are those who, whether poor or rich, have never had a child at all to send to school, and who, consequently, can never receive any return whatever. Of course, when Government recklessly votes £400,000 for education, the money is not straightway poured into the Government coffers from the inexhaustible purse of some beneficent fairy; but has to be collected with a ruthless hand from the hard earnings of the community. Therefore though there is *nominally* no education tax, this tax is *really* the heaviest of all; and it is precisely to give £400,000 *more*,—in addition to all that has been given already,—that even at a moment of such severe depression as the present, this enormous sum,—£400,000, is imposed under the name of *property-tax*.

"*Gutter Children*"—It professes to charge itself with the education of the poor neglected children, nicknamed "gutter children."—It has not done so. It has filled its schools with the children of well-to-do parents.

It leaves the "gutter children," even after this lapse of time, still in the gutter, and if ever it drives these poor

waifs into the schools, it will drive the others out.

*Denominationalism.*—It pretends to undenominational.—It is the most denominational of all. It is the undenominational or *onedenominational* system.

The secularists are a section of the community just as much as the Jews, the Wesleyans, the Protectionists, the Freetraders, &c. And just like them the Secularists are named or *denominated* according to the views they hold. And whereas the *religious* denominations would be satisfied with teaching their own children, this *irreligious* denomination insists on imposing its irreligion on all.

*Sectarianism.*—It professes to be a sovereign remedy for "sectarian bitterness."—It promotes it in the highest degree.

We Catholics have no bitterness, no nicknames for our fellow-citizens. For us they are Wesleyans, Presbyterians, Jews, Secularists—whatever they wish to call themselves. But we are "Papists, Romanists, Ultramontanes;" we are "ignorant, bigoted, superstitious, priest-ridden," &c., &c. The remedy for "sectarian bitterness" would be to induce the various sects to leave us in peace as we leave them. The remedy of the *secular system* is on the one hand to give those who hate us the gratification of seeing us despoiled, and the hope of seeing us one day yield to legal robbery, and give up the religion themselves abandoned long ago, and on the other to fill us with a burning sense of wrong and persecution.

It is manifestly the interest and duty of Catholics to keep these two facts constantly before the minds of those who admire "secular education." Both these arguments have been clearly set forth in the "New Zealand Tablet."

Of course everybody knows that the "secular system" is aimed against the Catholics, but the following avowals made in moments of incautious triumph, or under manly protest against our oppression are important proof:—

*"Many Protestants support a State system of public education, chiefly with the object of preventing the establishment of Roman Catholic schools throughout the colony.—Dr. Perry, late Anglican Bishop of Melbourne."*

*"If the law will weaken the priests, they are indifferent to its benefiting the children".*

—Melbourne Correspondent of the 'Times,' November 27, 1872.

*"I believe that many who voted for the Act, did so under the idea that they were resisting the claims of Rome."*

—Dr. McCartney, 'Argus,' Dec. 4th, 1874.

*"Mr. O'Grady is enabling the particular denomination of which he is the representative to gradually creep, like a fungus over the country. . . . The thin edge of the wedge has been driven into the Catholic body. That wedge is education, and you will allow me to say that the end of this wedge is a very sharp one. It will be driven home, and rend the Catholics asunder."*

—Mr. Stephen at St. Kilda and Prahran, 'Argus,' 24th and 26th June, 1872.

Mr. Stephen, the framer of the Bill, is certainly a reliable witness as to his own beliefs and his own intentions. He is not ashamed to tell us to our faces that the religion for which we have suffered anguish, that its entirety and bitterness is known only to God and His angels, is a loathsome Fungus! Why not stamp it out V Here is at least the merit of plain speaking and consistency. I cannot understand those who say—"Ultramontanism (the modern name for Popery) is an intolerable evil; mixed education is a sovereign remedy, which is sure to destroy it; we will apply the remedy, But We Have no Idea of Destroying the Evil!"

*Civilisation.*—Finally, *secular education* professes to lead the people to the highest point of *civilisation.*—It uncivilises and degrades them.—In fine this miserable system of education does none of the things it promises to do, and all the things it promises not to do.

It is with this last point that I propose to deal at present. I shall set before my readers this boasted *secular civilisation* as understood and explained by *Secularists*, and I shall draw from their own premises certain most startling conclusions.

## Worldly Notion of Civilisation.

It is quite possible to be very familiar with a word without having at all an accurate notion of its meaning. We are certainly quite familiar with the word *civilisation*, yet if we ask ourselves what it means, we shall, perhaps, be astonished at finding what vague ideas we have about it. By, however, seizing these ideas as they flit by, and examining them carefully, we shall be able to form a most accurate conception of it.

A little consideration will show us that, by an immense number of men, a great public exhibition is looked upon as the best test and highest expression of *civilisation*. A very city of marvel and beauty! Painting, statuary, carving; the most precious stuffs; the most beauteous designs; the blending of the richest colours, bright, soft, various, changing, to glad the eye; while the ear drinks in with delight the most exquisite music of the noblest

masters of the art, as, beneath the touch of the most skilful players, it pours forth from the costliest instruments in sparkling rivulets or majestic streams. And not merely what is pleasing to the senses but also those wonderful inventions which enable men to seek in Nature's profoundest mysteries the highest purely intellectual enjoyment, and apply her wondrous forces to the uses and conveniences of life. Delicate instruments to reveal the wonders of the microscopic world, to investigate the constituent elements of the distant stars, or enable man to command her subtle influences to carry his behests round the world with a throb! Mighty engines whereby he makes her giant strength his own, and strikes the crushing blow, not by the force of his body—wherein he is more akin to the brute—but by that of his intellect—wherein he is more akin to God! In short, the endless triumphs of man's genius! Such is a public exhibition, and such is a most common notion of civilisation!

An English journalist writing professedly on the subject, states thus clearly his views:

*"The ENDS of Civilisation are culture, the diffusion of the higher enjoyments, life made liberal for as many as possible by knowledge and beauty. The Mean of Civilisation are prosperity and wealth, and the commerce and instruments of commerce which conduct to prosperity and wealth."*

—'Pall Mall Gazette.' and he explains the higher enjoyments to be "music, painting, poetry, and the other fine arts, as well as the knowledge of nature and man for its own sake."

If these be the *ends* and *means* of civilisation, its *beginning* must evidently be a training which will enable man to procure the *means* of civilisation, and through them its *ends*. And another journalist writing of the connection between civilisation and education, says:—

To the education—the free untrammelled and unbiassed education—of the people, are due the perfection of the arts and sciences, the improved appliances and conveniences of life, the inventions and the discoveries which so peculiarly distinguish the age in which we live." 'Melbourne Age,' Tuesday, March 11th, 1873.

It appears necessary, then, to be a good "Secular Education."

## No Necessary Connection With Morality.

However eager "Secularists" may be to put forward such views on civilisation, I trust sincerely, that there are none who will not be equally anxious to disclaim the consequences which flow rigorously from them.

Perhaps the first thing which strikes us is, that this civilisation is not for *all*. It is for those only who have "wealth and prosperity." There is something selfish in it: it conveys the idea of each one's working for himself alone, for his own enjoyment: and as in the well-known theory of "natural selection" all struggle for existence, but only the strong succeed, so in the struggle for civilisation all but the wealthy fail. Thus the most "civilised" class is precisely that against which our Saviour has pronounced that awful woe:—"Woe to the rich: it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter Heaven."—(Matt. xix. 23, 24. Luke vi. 24.)

Then observe there is no word about *morality* here. A man might be possessed of the keenest intellect—keen as demon's—the most exquisite taste and judgment in the fine arts, and unbounded wealth wherewith to procure every enjoyment, and yet not be the owner of a single virtue! On the other hand, were one, in the language of St. Paul, to "distribute all his goods to feed the poor," he would at once deprive himself of the "means and ends of civilisation"—riches and pleasures which they purchase! Both were wanting to the Apostle of the Gentiles, who worked for his own living with his own hands; to the twelve poor fishermen on whom Christ built His Church, and to the Saviour of mankind Himself, who lived on alms! So that while the highest immorality might co-exist with the highest civilisation, the sublimest virtue might be uncivilised!

One of the misfortunes of this age is the number of theories people hastily adopt without examining into their ultimate consequences. These theories are so dictatorial set forth, and so disguised under pompous, high sounding language, that their false hood, absurdity, and impiety are concealed from all who do not look beneath. We will always strip off the fine words mercilessly, and looked beneath.

Let us pursue our examination. Here is another specimen of the same inflated language concealing the same follies.

*"what, in the name of common sense, have the clergy to do with the secular education of the people. Theirs is the cure of souls. The educating and cultivation of the mental faculties is the schoolmaster's province. It is for him to break up the ground, plant the tree, and to watch and promote its vigorous growth. When his work is done, or while in its latter stages it is being performed, the minister of religion may opportunely step in, and graft upon the healthy stock, the scion of spiritual truth, which he desires to see bearing fruit for time and eternity."*

'Melbourne Argus,' July 13th, 1872.

"

When will the schoolmaster's work be *done*? When the child has learned reading, writing, and arithmetic, spelling, geography, and sewing? Or is the "minister of religion" to wait till it has learned all about the false



gods of the pagan poets, before teaching it anything about the true God of the Christians?

But suppose that just as "the schoolmaster's work is done," the child *dies*, and goes to the next world. Be it borne in mind that many of those who write in our newspapers deny their 18 a next world. with a full knowledge of Jupiter and Venus, and utterly ignorant of Jesus Christ? It would be too long to refute everything he said, but look at this—

*"What in the name of common sense have they—the clergy—to do with the secular education of the people?"*

I never yet heard that the clergy of any denomination, Catholic, Protestant, or Jewish wanted to have anything to do with it. So far are they from trenching on the schoolmaster's province, that they give him up their own. They say: "We cannot give religious instruction—let the *schoolmaster* give it." They certainly do protest against the knowledge of the Creator being postponed to that of the creature. They protest against religious instruction being rendered practically impossible, and for doing so much, here is the way they are dealt with:—

*"One would imagine to hear some of our reverend platform orators talk, that there was something antagonistic between mental cultivation, though ever so rudimentary in character, and religious belief and practice—that the rules of syntax veiled impious doctrines—that one of the seven deadly sins lurked in the multiplication table—that to spell correctly was a device of the Evil One—and to write a legible hand was equivalent to exhibiting 'the mark of the beast.'"*

Does this writer really fancy he is talking common sense? He reminds one forcibly of those who look through a telescope without being aware the image is inverted. He sees everything upside down, with, apparently, so little suspicion of the truth, that he actually appeals to common sense for confirmation; but common sense returns a rather unfavourable verdict. It says that they who find something antagonistic between religion and mental cultivation must be those who think the two things cannot be combined, and who do not think religion should be taught till the schoolmaster's work is *done*. It says that the clergy who want to have religion taught along *with* the multiplication table, spelling, and good writing, must be acquitted of this charge; and that as they cultivate these useful branches of secular knowledge themselves, it is to be presumed they see no harm in them.

In so grave a matter we have a right to be met with serious arguments, not with smart conceits. It would have been even more prudent not to urge so fiercely against the clergy, language which has no weight against them—for everyone sees it is an unwarranted exaggeration—but which tells so heavily against the writer because it is so applicable to his own doctrine. You will remember that he maintains the all-sufficiency of secular education. Apply to this his own words:—

*"One would imagine, to hear some of our Secularists talk, that there was an intimate connection between mental cultivation, though ever so rudimentary in character, and religious belief and practice—that the rules of syntax veiled pious doctrines—that the multiplication table was a sovereign remedy against the seven deadly sins—that to spell correctly was a sign of predestination—and to write a legible hand was equivalent to having a passport to Heaven."*

Secular morality is such an extravagance that its serious discussion, when stripped of its fine words, looks like a wild joke. Hence the importance to its admirers of concealing it under grand phrases, and the importance to us of stripping them off. To say that "as secular education spreads, crime will diminish," does not seem absurd, and thoughtless persons will be found to credit it. But as secular education means only reading, writing, spelling, &c., this means in plain English that reading, spelling, and multiplication will make a man virtuous! Now what can be more preposterous? Why should there be fewer criminals among fifty men who know that 10 times 10 make 100, but who have been never taught the ten commandments, than among fifty men who have been taught the the ten commandments, but don't know the multiplication table? Just as the commandments teach us nothing about spelling and reading, so do spelling and reading teach us nothing about them. The *secular* catechism merely says:—

- 1st. Thou shalt learn to read.
- 2nd. Thou shalt learn to write.
- 3rd. Thou shalt learn thy spelling book.
- 4th. Thou shalt learn thy multiplication table, &c.

And very good commandments too, as far as they go. But just as the commandment "Not to steal" does not tell me how many pence there are in a pound, so the knowledge that there are 240 in it is no reason why I should not take it when I get the chance of doing so without fear of detection.

Here is the intrinsic reason why there is no necessary connection between *secular civilisation* and morality:—

Morality consists of two things—the *knowledge* of our duty, and the *frill* to do it. The only way, therefore, that "secular" civilisation could promote morality would be either by teaching us what our duty is, or by inclining our will to discharge it. Now it is evident that no amount of spelling, multiplication, or even playing

the piano will ever do either one or the other.

## It Actually Excludes Morality.

Having established our first conclusion, that there is no necessary connection between "secular" civilisation and morality, let us now proceed to examine a still more serious charge, namely, that the "secular" *system*

Let me not be misunderstood. I do not say that "secular Education" favours immorality. But I say that a "system" which proposes to impart "secular education Only," and which not only professedly ignores, but actually excludes religion, does favour immorality.

favors immorality.

St. Paul tells us of the double law he felt within himself, and how the law of the flesh warred against that of the spirit, and how in consequence he did not the good he would, but the evil he hated. (Rom. vii. 15, 23) a sentiment which a poor pagan poet conveys in the familiar:—

*"Video meliora proboque:  
Deteriora sequor."*—(Ovid, *Met.* 7,21.)

And which is re-echoed by the testimony of each man's conscience: "that he has left undone the things which he ought to have done, and done the things which he ought not to have done." The immoral tendencies of this unhappy law of the flesh being indubitable, it follows as a rigorous consequence that any *system* which throws obstacles in the way of its subjugation favours it, and consequently favors the immorality to which it impels.

The only question then is *does* the "secular" system throw any such obstacles in the way ?

Why is the "secular" system called the "secular" system? Is it because "secular" instruction is imparted? Evidently not. There is as much "secular" instruction imparted in any Catholic college, as in the most intensely secular school. It is "secular,"—and this should be distinctly borne in mind,—because *it trill not tolerate religious instruction.*

Now, what is religion? Religion teaches us our duty, urges on us the most powerful motives for fulfilling it, and engages our will to range itself on the side of the law of the spirit, and to wage war against the flesh. It is consequently the *cause of morality*, and the "secular" system by *excluding the cause of morality*, evidently favours that of immorality.

All instruction on man's duties towards his Maker, himself, and his fellow-creatures, on the necessity of subduing his corrupt inclinations and the means of doing so are deliberately excluded. Our Lord led a holy life in poverty and suffering, to show us the way to Heaven by His instructions and example; but the *secular system* knows nothing of His instructious, and will not allow His example to be proposed to the unhappy children beneath its wing, as long as they are beneath it. It knows nothing and proposes nothing nobler than "prosperity and wealth, external polish, and mental refinement, suited to the higher enjoyments." It may make them urbane men, but it will not make them good citizens.

## It is Atheistical or Godless.

The word atheistical means godless or without a God; and in this system there is to be no word about God. Therefore if the children brought up under the secular system, acquire any knowledge of God, it certainly will not flow from the *system*, but must trickle in from some *other* source, and *in spite* of all the secular precautions to exclude it. As secularism in its present stage does not go so far as to deny God openly, but merely ignores Him, it is not yet atheistical in the fullest sense of the word, but it is distinctly atheistical, to the degree of declaring there shall be no God, till the schoolmaster's work is done.

'Argus,' July 13th, 1872.

Would it be believed that the upholders of such a system would charge *us* with atheism? Yet so it is.

That it will be morally impossible to teach religion out of school, and absolutely impossible to teach it in school, I showed on a former occasion; so that if this system which I have already convicted of injustice and religious persecution, and which I now prove guilty of atheism, continues; some will grow up without any belief in God, and nearly all without any practical knowledge of Him. The little pagan boys of Rome knew their arithmetic well

Horace, "Ars Poet."

but where ignorant of Christianity. In what respect will the little secularist boys of Melbourne, or Dunedin, or Christchurch, be superior to them, when they leave the secularist schools, with precisely the same knowledge

and the same ignorance?

And this is what some Secularists want—no "dogma"—that is, no doctrine; that is, no religion. Others would be horrified at such an idea, and fondly imagine religion will be taught or learned some way. If their piety be but on a par with their simplicity, they must be really admirable persons. Do the secularists ever reflect on the exactness with which they have unconsciously named themselves? SECULARIST means WORLDLING

It must not be supposed that I bring this accusation against them, merely because "worlding" happens to be the translation of "secularist" but as with the word "civilisation," having proved the meaning of the name, I call attention to the exactness with which it expresses the thing.

and Christ "is not of this world;" and the whole world is seated in wickedness," and for this wicked "world he does not pray;" and as it "hated Him" and crucified Him two thousand years ago, it hates Him still and will not "suffer little children to come to Him!"

Let us review the conclusions at which we have arrived. *Secular* civilisation means *worldly* civilisation, civilisation which promises nothing beyond the things of *this world*; or, as we have seen, "riches and the pleasures they procure." Is there a country in the world more civilised than England, or a city more civilised than London? Is there a spot on earth where there are greater riches and greater pleasures? But alas! these riches are only for "as many as possible," and these many are few. A comparatively small number of men are possessed of wealth so enormous that there are not pleasures enough to exhaust it; but while the civilised Dives sits clothed in purple and fine linen, and surrounded by the "appliances and conveniences of life," uncivilised Lazarus starves upon his doorstep. Can this be Civilisation which relieves some few from all care, condemns the vast majority to a hard struggle, and allows many to lead a living death of cold, hunger, and despair?

*Secular* education means education in *worldly* sciences. It may be allied with Virtue, but it also may not. There is no necessary connection. It gives a man more power for good or evil, and it does not bid him employ it only for good. To use the common phrase, we say "a polished villain" and a "rough diamond." Can polished villainy be civilised, and uneducated integrity be uncivilised?

The *secular system* deliberately rejects and excludes the source of morality—Religion. Can a system which favours immorality and atheism be civilised?

No! Something tell us that CIVILISATION is good, that this thing is not Civilisation: but by pursuing further the simple analysis which has overturned a false system, we shall now proceed to rear the magnificent edifice of Christian Civilisation.

## Christian Civilisation.

### Arrogance of Secularism.

INSULTS.—Must be answered occasionally.—"Anti-Catholic prejudice.'

THERE seems to prevail among certain writers the impression that they have a sort of prescriptive right to belie and revile us. We wrong no one, offend no one, interfere with no one; but our innocence does not save us. We claim only what is just, only what is our own, as we prove by unanswerable arguments; and we are met by unprovoked vituperation. Of course the Secularist press, so loud in its own praises, is proportionately severe upon us. Though it would not be dignified, nor even possible to notice every petty insult flung upon us Catholics, yet, as it is manifest that such assertions would never be made if no one could be found weak enough to believe them, it is well to confute them from time to time, that timid Catholics may see there is nothing in them; that honest adversaries may learn the truth, and protest against our being oppressed and insulted; that prudence may be inspired to those who might otherwise fancy that we can be assailed with impunity; and that those who in reality are perhaps not actuated by unfriendly dispositions towards us, but merely from want of consideration, allow their pens and tongues more liberty than they quite intend, may be taught to measure their words, and respect the feelings, and conscientious convictions of even a Catholic.

When we consider the falsehood and bitterness with which non-Catholic literature teems, when we remember that the life of even a young man, almost stretches back to the day, when one of the most illustrious of our race, was called upon to testify, publicly on oath, that the religion we practice is impious and idolatrous; when we recall how eagerly the two men to whom is chiefly due emancipation, endeavoured to extenuate their crime in yielding to us even that slender measure of justice, by pleading that they did it most unwillingly, and only through "fear of greater dangers;" when we look back in vain through the history of our country for hundreds of years, for even *one* instance of mercy or justice not prompted by the same unworthy motive; when we think of the unvarying contempt and cruelty with which we have ever been treated; when we reflect on the

indecent exultation over the difficulties in which the venerable head of our Church has been placed by lawless violence; when we see even crime and dishonour hailed with acclamation, so long as they are directed against the Catholic Church; when we see the old hate following us out to these new colonies, and making laws to enable itself to perpetuate abroad the robbery and oppression from which we fled at home;—it is impossible to conceal from ourselves that the old spirit is not dead, and that it ignores our rights and tramples on our feelings precisely as of old. Still let us be just. While it would be folly to suppose that the mass of false utterances constantly hurled against us does not spring from malice, it would be unjust to hold equally guilty all those who speak foully of us. There can be no doubt that many do but thoughtlessly repeat what they have heard from childhood, without examining—is it true? I can conceive views the most unjust, oppressive, and insulting to us, being held and acted upon by non-Catholics, without a particle of unkindly feeling. They hear us called "Papists," and having heard us so called from their earliest childhood they fancy it is our name, and have no suspicion, far less intention, of insult. They call us "idolaters," but they have been carefully taught from their infancy that we "worship images." If we are guilty of so degrading a crime, why not bear the stigma justly attaching to it? They see our feelings so constantly wounded, and our rights so constantly crushed, that they grow up with a vague idea that we have neither feelings nor rights, and see us wounded and wronged with the same indifference one trained to battle from his youth, would gaze upon a bloody field.

The same journalist who is so confident of the virtues of "the free, untrammelled, unbiased education of the people," writes most flippantly of us. He deplors "the mental prostration of the Spaniards, the atheistical tendencies of the Italians, and—apparently rounding off a period—the ignorance and superstition of Roman Catholics in all countries!"

I do admire the courage of these writers! They are deterred by no absurdity. Provided what they say is anti-Catholic they are satisfied. Consistency is no consideration.

"Many bore false witness against him, but their evidence was not agreeing."—MARK xiv. 56.

They accuse us of having corrupted our way on earth—that is, of having *changed* the pure doctrine of Christ—so outrageously, that a Reformation was needed; and of tolerating no "progress,"—that is, *no change!* They accuse us of idolatry, whereby we believe in more Gods than one, and of atheism, whereby we believe in no God at all! When I hear them declaiming about "breadth of thought, religious progress, mental prostration, superstition, &c., &c.," I cannot help thinking that they do not mean anything by these expressions; or if they do, they do not know what they mean. Then they rarely condescend to attempt to prove anything they assert, which perhaps is not unwise, considering what unprovable things they advance.

Touching the "prostrate Spaniards," here is what an Englishman writes:—

*"The Spanish standard of morals, of manners, of religion, of duty, of all the courtesies which are due from one person to another, however wide apart their ranks, is of a very different and, in most of these points a much higher standard than the English one, and if an English traveller will not at least endeavor to come up to it, he had much better stay at home.*

*"Cheating and extortion seem incompatible with the Spanish character. Even the poorest peasant who has shown us our way, and who has walked a considerable distance to do so, has invariably refused to receive any thing for his services; yet all are most anxious to help strangers. The same liberal spirit seems to breathe through everything, and was equally shown at our little possada at Elche—equal to a small English public house - when a number of maimed, blind, and halt collected daily to receive the broken viands from the 'table d'hote.' The temporal works of mercy, to give bread to the hungry and drink to the thirsty, to take care of the sick, to visit the captives, and to bury the dead,—these are the common duties which none shrink from."*

*"Wanderings in Spain," by Augustus J. C. Hare, London, Strachan & Co., 1873.*

What of the atheistical Catholics of Italy? I take it on me to answer for the Pope, that he *does* believe in God. So does the "Ecclesiastical party." So do all the Catholics in Italy, and over the world. In fact, for a Catholic there is no liberty to doubt, far less to disbelieve a single dogma. To talk of Catholic "tendencies" of any sort—good or otherwise—in matters of religion, is to display an ignorance of the Catholic Church, so profound as to convict the writer of being wholly unqualified to offer an opinion on the matter of which he undertakes to treat. A "tendency," implies some inclination to *change*, and much more some possibility to *change*. Now the great crime of the Catholic Church is precisely that she will tolerate *no* progress,—which is merely a grand way of saying that she will tolerate *no change*. Her children must believe all the old truths that the Apostles taught, and nothing contrary,—or go. And if the Pope himself were to refuse his assent to a single dogma of the Catholic Faith, he would find himself at a single step outside the pale of the Catholic Church. I do not deny that there are atheists in Italy, but they are not *Catholics*; they belong to the "party of *progress*," and their first step towards atheism is the abandonment of their religion. Having attacked and persecuted the Church of God, it is not unnatural that they should endeavor to relieve themselves from the apprehension of His vengeance, by trying to persuade themselves that there is no God. What extravagance of injustice to accuse us Catholics of a tendency to give up the fundamental belief of all religion, when we will not tolerate even

*doubts* concerning a single dogma! But passing over the absurdity of supposing any Catholic could be an atheist; what folly to talk of the wickedness of Italy, when in the gilded saloons of England it is openly maintained that man is descended from an ape, and that there is no God!

Lord Beaconsfield.

No! Catholicity is at an infinite distance from atheism, secularism, and all the other hideous "isms" that are crawling over the souls of unhappy men at the present day, befouling and blighting them.

## Catholicity and Civilisation

Coming now to the last and most sweeping assertion, that "the Roman Catholics are in *all* countries, ignorant and superstitious." I shall first prove, on the authority of the Apostle of the Gentiles, that we Catholics are highly civilised; that a nation is civilised in proportion as it is Catholic; whence it will follow, as an inexorable consequent, that as the Irish nation yields to none in Catholicity, so it is surpassed by none in Civilisation. Then, laying down a definition of Civilisation to which not even a Secularist can demur, I shall draw from it the same conclusion.

### 1st Argument.—St. Paul's Words.

St. Paul writes to the Ephesians:—"You are fellow-citizens of the saints and servants of God." Without knowing yet what civilisation is, we see that it would be a monstrous absurdity to suppose for an instant that the fellow-citizens of the saints and the servants of God, could be uncivilised. We see likewise that St. Paul addresses the Ephesians thus, precisely because they are *Christians*: therefore, whatever civilisation may be, it is evidently and intimately connected with Christianity; Christianity is the *cause* and Civilisation the *consequence*; and as evidently, that nation is the most civilised which is the most Christian. Further, we have the authority of the illustrious Burke, that Catholicity holds all the doctrines of Christianity, "though—he adds, "mingled with some errors and superfluities." That it holds all the doctrines of Christianity could be proved without his authority; that it contains no errors or superfluities, I have proved in spite of his authority.

Influence of Birth on Religion.

Therefore, this Catholicity, which has been so unwarrantably connected with "mental prostration, ignorance, supervision, and atheism," is indissolubly linked with the sublimest civilisation.

### 2nd Argument.—Meaning of Civilisation.

My next argument shall be drawn from the meaning—the Christian, the true meaning, of this word.

We have already traced its signification up to a certain point. We have examined the most and the best that SECULARISTS could say for their boasted civilisation, and we have found that, like many other things, when stripped of its fine words, is shrivelled up to something so selfish and contemptible, that they themselves would probably be but too glad to disown it. On their own showing, it meant wealth, and the temporal advantages wealth brings. In its very highest flights, it soared at nothing higher than intellectual enjoyments. It did not include virtue. The man who had climbed to the very highest pinnacle of secular civilisation might be the very soul of vice and meanness. Even the rude virtues of the manly pagans of Sparta and early Rome were nearer than this to true civilisation, for they inculcated self-denial and love of country.

By analysing still further our ideas of civilisation, we shall form an exact notion of it, and we shall find that while it embraces *all* that is most brilliant from a worldly point of view, it adds a nobility which lies far beyond the reach of worldly ambition.

Listen, then, to the magnificent argument with which Catholic theology supplies me.

Civilisation, as understood by all men, Secularists and others, implies *culture*—that is, the individuals composing the civilised nation are cultured or cultivated.

In the next place, the greater the number of individuals so cultivated, and the higher their point of culture, the more civilised the nation is.

So far I have every Secularist with me. According to the English journalist I have cited, "life should be made liberal for *as many as possible* by knowledge and beauty." But here we part company. When I ask the Secularist, "What does he mean by 'culture'?" he replies readily: Every accomplishment, from reading, writing and arithmetic, up to music, painting, poetry, &c., and the knowledge of nature and man *for its own sake*" Merely the usual dressing up of folly and impiety under fine words! To some distinguished Secularists, who consider themselves the pioneers of secular civilization, the knowledge of nature means the knowledge that there is no God, and the knowledge of man means the knowledge that man is an ape! The poor Secularist has a chain round his neck which bows him to the ground, and prevents him from raising his eyes to heaven.

Pushing our analysis still further, we find that civilization implies *co-operation*. We do not call the

individual, however highly cultivated, *civilised*; but we call civilised the society of cultured individuals *who mutually exert a salutary influence on each other*. Man is powerfully influenced by the society in which he lives. If a good man is surrounded by bad companions he is likely to suffer from their bad example; if a rude man is introduced into refined society, he will grow polished.

Therefore the two fundamental ideas of civilisation are:—1st., *the perfection of the individuals* who compose society; 2nd., *the salutary influence they exercise on each other*. It is a sort of common fund, to which each contributes his share, and from which he draws his profit. Thus we gradually work our way to the conclusion that civilisation means Good Citizenship

The etymology of the word points in the same direction. The Latin word "civis," from which it is derived, means a citizen. Men throng to the cities because of the advantage they hope to derive through intercourse with their fellow-men.

Just as the "prostrate" Spaniards do.

Observe. I do not say that this is the *first* idea which presents itself. On the contrary, it was by examining ideas which lay nearer the surface that we finally arrived at this. But this is the fundamental notion, and having cleared away the ruins of the secular system, and laid well this solid foundation, we shall now proceed to erect upon it the splendid edifice of Christian Civilisation.

As the beauty of a material edifice depends on the care with which the stones have been hewn, so does the beauty of this depend on the care with which each individual has been prepared;—or to employ another metaphor, the fruitfulness of the orchard will depend on the solicitude with which every tree is cultivated. Culture implies in man a process analogous to that which land undergoes in cultivation. What is noxious must be weeded out, what is good must be planted, and the natural fertility of the soil must be quickened. By taking man to pieces and examining his compound parts, we shall see how his nature is to be cultivated; what is to be extirpated, what is to be sown, and how his various faculties may be most opportunely developed.

Let us take the definition laid down in our catechism;—"Man is one of God's creatures, composed of a body and soul;" and if it should seem strange to any one that we should speak of the body in connection with civilisation, let us remember that it is not the soul alone, but the entire man, that is the citizens, we must consider the entire man, body and soul, in connection with civilisation. However true that the nobler part of man has the foremost part in civilisation, still, good citizenship requires us to assist our neighbor in his corporal as well as in his spiritual necessities;† besides, as it is by the body we are chained to this earth, and as it is from the body that springs those degrading tendencies which it is the duty of civilisation to root out or to subdue, we must take it into consideration, if we would know how to grant it what it reasonable requires, and how to deny it what it unreasonably demands.

What are the faculties of the soul? The *Intellect*, the *Will*, and the *Memory*, (which last is closely allied with the *Imagination*.) The soul, as we learn in our Catechism, is made unto God's likeness. It is a most beautiful, although, of course, is most imperfect picture of the most Holy Trinity. The memory is not the will, or a the will the intellect. They are all three perfectly distinct, and yet they are but one and the same soul!

Let us see how each of these noble faculties may be cultivated.

## Culture of the Intellect.

The object of the intellect is Truth. Therefore, the *greater the number* of truths with which it is furnished, and the *higher the order* to which they belong, the higher, evidently, the culture of the individual.

Let us re-examine, and from another point of view, what secular culture can do for the intellect. Let us begin with *science*.

Who of us has not often paused to view the artificer at work? Though mere mechanical skill is the very lowest order of knowledge, yet we gaze with pleasure while his skilful hands rapidly fashion matter according to the rules of his art. In proportion as the order of knowledge rises, the amount of training required by the intellect rises also; and the number of those who have opportunities of receiving such training, and intellects capable of receiving it, diminishes. Some are just barely capable of learning to read and write. Others pass beyond these and acquire a smattering of languages before reaching their limit. An immense number are almost utterly unable to think for themselves. They have few ideas of their own, and whatever ideas they have, whether original or borrowed, float confusedly before their eyes, without their being able to grasp them, range them in order, compare them, and draw conclusions from them. The great multitude halt on the gentle slopes of the Hill of Science. As it grows more steep and rugged, the strength and courage of the climbers fail, and but few of the strongest and most daring struggle to the summit. How few, for instance, penetrate to the higher regions of mathematics, and with what respect are they justly regarded by those who lack the abilities, or the application, or the opportunities—for all are needed—requisite to follow them. It is truly a noble science. It sharpens most keenly the intellectual faculties, throws open to its votaries vast fields of discovery, and enables them to shed

floods of light on astronomy and the kindred natural sciences; not only clearing up obscure points, but actually indicating what would otherwise have never been even suspected, and predicting results which seem incredible till experiment has verified them.

But this lofty pinnacle is not for the *many*, but the *few*.

Let us see what the *fine arts* can do towards civilising the multitude.

As music and painting appeal directly to the senses, they lie evidently within the reach of a larger number; yet even here, the moment we begin to examine, the number shrinks astonishingly. We must not confound in one class the artist and those who derive delight from his art. Recall the names of all the illustrious masters of whom you have ever heard. What are they in comparison with all the millions that have lived and died on earth, in comparison even with the millions that compose a single nation? A handful of drops taken from the ocean. Let us now see what it does for the mass who do not understand music scientifically, but who go to enjoy an agreeable sensation. How often can they go? How many are there whose means and occupations will allow them to go a dozen or even half a dozen times in the year? And then, would it be so very desirable that the "higher enjoyments" should be thrown open to all? Painting and statuary, where all that licentious poets have sung is depicted to the eye; and the theatre, where the licentious statues become animated, mock at the most sacred ties, deride modesty, and plead the cause of vice before sensual passions that are only too surely sworn to give a verdict of approval? How imposing to hear secular civilisation talk of a "life made liberal to as many as possible by knowledge and beauty!" But, as usual, what a wretched imposture when we strip off the fine words, and look upon the poor dead thing that lies beneath!

And so the Secularists are driven back, step by step, till they would probably be only too glad to cling to "reading, writing, and arithmetic" as a last refuge; but even here, the *as many as possible*, are but very few. In England, in the year 1846, one in eleven could read, that is, of the twenty-two millions of inhabitants, two millions could read and twenty millions could not. We are naturally still more backward in Ireland, where you will remember our schools were deliberately destroyed, and education was forbidden under pain of death! Here the Secularists might fairly object that these twenty millions include children not of an age to read. True; but, putting these aside, the number of those who are of the proper age, yet cannot read, is still far above two millions. But the force of my argument is not in this. I say nothing of the millions who will reach and pass that age without learning the letters. I shall even allow, by way of argument, that the Secularists will accomplish all they aim at. What I condemn is the meanness and worthlessness of what they propose. We have seen that the object of the intellect is Truth. *Beading* is not truth. It is but a channel, through which truth or falsehood, good or evil, may reach the soul. According, therefore, to the precautions taken to shut out from this channel the greatest amount of evil, and pour through it the greatest amount of good, will be its contribution to the true culture of the individual, and to the true civilisation of the state.

Supposing, then, the proud day arrived when the Secularists shall have attained the summit of their humble wishes, the day that every man in England—and even in Ireland—shall be able to read, what reading have they prepared for the people? Omitting scientific works, which will always be for the very few, there will be the pious class, which will continue to be very severe on the "ignorance, superstition, mental prostration and atheism of the Roman Catholics." There will be the infidel class, which will grow every day more dogmatic in its views of the origin and end of man; degrading him to the level of the beast, but consoling him, by extending to him the beastly privilege of irresponsibility. Then there will be the immoral class; journals reeking with every impurity, and sold so cheap, that nobody will find it out of his power to poison his soul. And there will be newspapers which will not allow foul deeds to stagnate and rot in darkness, but will drag them forth to the light of day, and thrust them on the minds of the young. St. Paul says, "fornication should not be even named amongst us," yet it is only named, but so minutely described, in the daily papers that it is almost impossible for the young to escape contamination; and God only knows how many who are not wicked enough to seek temptation of their own accord, but are too weak to resist it when thus forced upon them, owe their ruin to these prurient descriptions.

I do not draw from these facts all the conclusions that I might. One is sufficient for my present purpose. Allowing—which I do readily—that the Secularists would do more if they could, I content myself with concluding that if secular civilisation could do for the intellect of man even the little all it proposes, that little would not be worth much.

And what can Christianity do for the culture of the human intellect? Can it offer anything superior? Yes, a high order of culture, and for *all*.

The principle we laid down just now, and which cannot be controverted, was: *The higher the order of truth, the higher the culture of the individual and the civilisation of the State.* Now the truths belonging to the supernatural order, are so immeasurably above those of the natural, that a single one of the former would outweigh all the latter. Place on one side a Christian, utterly ignorant of worldly learning, unable to spell even his own name, but instructed in the Christian Religion, and place on the other an Atheist from the *gilded*

*saloons* of London. Furnish the Atheist with every particle of profane knowledge any man ever possessed; condense into his single brain all the acumen of the wisest of men; bid him ransack nature till he has overturned her last secret; let him heap up all his treasures before us till we are dazzled by the sight; and then let the Christian step forward and say:—

## I Believe in God!

and this single truth will outweigh all the knowledge of the Atheist!

And yet it is, as it were, but the foundation whereon is built the magnificent system of Christian truths—the most important that man can know. Within the short space of the Creed, is found not the knowledge of "nature and man for its own sake," but the knowledge of a most wonderful mystery of the Divine Nature; and the knowledge of the origin and end of man, and of his relations with God! The child learns that God is Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and is yet but One! A mystery so sublime that without revelation, it would have never have entered into the heart of man to conceive it; so sublime, that even after revelation it passes all comprehension! He learns that man is not an ape, but an intellectual being into whom God Himself has breathed the breath of life. He learns the ingratitude, disobedience, and fall of the first man, and the sublime problem God set himself to solve. He would not pardon man without an infinite atonement. He alone was infinite, therefore He alone could make it. But man had offended, therefore He willed man should make it. And a MAN did make it, but that MAN was God! for God, being unable to suffer, or demand pardon in His Divine Nature, the Second Person of the Blessed Trinity was conceived by the Holy Ghost and born of the Virgin Mary; that is, He assumed a human nature, a body and soul like ours, by the power and operation of the Holy Ghost, in the chaste womb of a Virgin, and was born MAN of her; and He suffered in His human nature, real pain and real death upon the cross to redeem and save us; and, Master of life and death—free among the dead (Ps. xxxvii. 6.)—He rose again, by His own Divine power, from the dead, on the day He had Himself appointed; and thus, as by dying on the cross, He proved Himself a real mortal man, so by raising Himself from the dead, He proved Himself God!

Secularists may smile with lofty pity at the "ignorance and superstition" of us poor Catholics who believe these dogmas. A poet who could weave a fable half as beautiful as these mysteries, would concentrate on himself the gaze of all ages. But here the noblest intellects of Christianity bow down and worship, not the brilliancy of the poet's fancy, but the revealed beauty of supernatural truth. There is in fact *no such thing as invention* in either the material or the mental world. What is called so is in reality but *a new combination of old facts*. The machinist can but combine anew the inventions of other men, the painter can but reproduce the forms he sees, and if he could produce something entirely new, he would not be understood; the poet can depict the passions, faults, and virtues of the human heart, but he could no more invent the august mysteries of the Trinity and Incarnation than a man can form a conception of his own soul, or paint an angel! Wonderful mystery! It is my soul that thinks and reasons, that animates my body, that is *myself*. Yet when I ask myself what it is—what I am—I know not, I cannot by any effort conceive. I have then, in this evident limit of my own powers, a proof that the sublime "dogmas" of Christianity never originated in the brain of man.

And these are the noble truths that adorn the intellect of the Christian. I am ashamed to have to confront them with the pitiful *culture* of the poor Secularist. We have seen that reading is more than the most he will be able to hold out to the entire people; but let us suppose, that instead of being unable to bring them all up, even to the very lowest step of secular culture, he could bring them up to the very highest, and lay before them all the treasures of the fine arts and poetry, how immeasurably superior is the poor starving Irish peasant, who cannot read the unblushing pages of a secular newspaper, but who can say his CREED!

Yes! Let us set aside the ideal philosopher, and compare those sad realities, the Irish landlord and the Irish tenant. The one sucks the blood of the poor and defenceless in order to squander it on "the higher—and on the lower,—enjoyments wealth affords." The other, without a hope—in *this* world,—gropes feebly through a life of black misery. No gallery of art, no theatre, no rich scents, no ravishing music for him. Without—a patch of land in which his labours and his hopes of food lie rotting; within—a starving family, the bare ground, or a little musty straw, and the dreadful odor of poverty. The one comes armed with the power which the law of a highly "civilised" land places at his disposal, and at his breath the wretched hovel which misery

The special misery of Ireland is that her sufferings are all legal. There is a law for every wrong. If it was Contrary to Law for a brutal landlord to turn out a whole village to perish in the snow, as Bishop Plunket and Mr. Adair did, the law could redress the wrong. But what redress can there be when the Law Itself is brutal? How would Englishmen like to have a foreign nation making such laws for them in their own land?

called a home, and which was at least less wretched than the wet ditch, is torn to the ground! The wailings of helpless children, of a wife, of perhaps an aged mother resound in the poor man's ear, while the bitter blast and driving sleet beat fiercely against his naked bones. Yet he clutches his Crucifix to his breast, and in the



contemplation of his Saviour's sufferings, he seeks for strength to keep down the despairing curse that rises to his lips.

And the black night descends on the luxurious Dives in some haunt of "pleasure," and on his poor victim coldly crouching beneath a bush.

Which of the two is the "fellow-citizen of the saints and the servant of God?" Oh God! thou knowest.

Oh sacred Sign of the Cross, thou shalt be my next proof of civilisation.

The Catholic Church commands the Catholic parent to anticipate the dawn of reason, by teaching the unconscious infant to make this Holy Sign, by forming its first faltering accents to prayer, and by watching for the moment when its little mind will have opened wide enough to write thereon the name of God, One and Three! And the young Christian learns to repeat this Holy Sign frequently—many times a day—particularly in all temptations and dangers, and before and after prayer, but always with great attention and devotion; and each time he does so in a proper spirit, the sublime truths of Christianity rise up before him, for the sign of the cross signifies and brings to his mind the principal mysteries of Religion—the Blessed Trinity, and the Incarnation and death of our Saviour. In making the sign of the cross, he invokes the three Divine persons, saying—"In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." And as Our Saviour suffered death in human flesh on a Cross, the sign of the Cross must naturally remind all true Christians of His Incarnation and Death.

Here, then, is the argument briefly.

We admire the noblest philosophers of paganism, if we can deduce from their writings the belief in only one God, and if they utter any sentiment worthy of a Christian; and here we find the very poorest Christian familiar,—observe—*familiar* with truths that soar beyond all imagination! And this sacred symbol, by which we at once profess and keep alive our Christian Faith, but which I should not be at all surprised to hear ascribed to "ignorance and superstition," is an unmistakable proof of the anxiety of the Catholic Church to *keep constantly present to our intellects the truths that civilise us*, "that whether we eat or drink or do anything else, we may do all for the glory of God," being, as we are, "fellow-citizens of the Saints and servants of God."

There is just one thing which the poor Secularist in his extremity might urge. He might say that I have changed the question altogether. The question was: What is *Civilisation*? and while professing to discuss this, I am actually preaching *Religion*!

I have not changed the question, I have *answered* it. I have removed the obscurity which secularism has thrown over the meaning of this word. Instead of accepting the arbitrary and absurd solution, that it means "wealth, and the pleasures wealth affords," I have taken the common idea among all men of *Civilisation*—mental culture—and I have laid down the broad principle which no sane man can controvert, that TRUTH is the ornament of the soul, and that the higher the order of truth, the higher the culture. Whence it follows, naturally and inexorably, that *Religion* is the highest ornament of the soul of man—a conclusion which is in the closest concord with the universal notion of men, that our *Civilisation* is due to Christianity, and which explains fully the manner in which Christianity exercises its civilising influences. What is Christianity but the religion Christ taught? and what is Christian *Civilisation*, but the effects produced on society by this Religion?

Thus in the theory and practice of Catholic Theology you have a most magnificent system, exhibiting in all its parts the most perfect harmony, and according thoroughly with the fundamental notions of mankind, while in the secularist system all is confusion, falsehood, and impiety. It pretends to the very highest mental culture, yet rejects the highest order of truth.

I said that Christian *Civilisation* contained all that is excellent from a worldly point of view. Our foes contend, on the contrary, that the Catholic Church is averse to scientific progress. I have to refute this calumny, and make good what I have said.

I commence by denying absolutely that there is any worldly knowledge, properly speaking, apart from Christianity;—any knowledge of "nature or man for its own sake." All knowledge is TRUTH, and the Catholic Church eagerly embraces every truth as a stepping stone from whence the soul may and should rise to the Author of all that is good and true! "God has given the world to the investigation of man" that "by the greatness of the beauty and of the creature, the Creator of them may be seen so as to be known thereby."

Wisdom, xiii, 5.

"For the invisible things of Him, from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made! His eternal power also, and Divinity."

Rom. 1, 20.

Therefore the knowledge of the noble things God has made—the knowledge of nature and man,—is a noble Christian truth; but in Christianity it ranks *after* the knowledge of God, not *before*; and as the stream, if traced, leads to its source, so does the knowledge of the laws of nature and of the heart of man, his origin and destiny, lead us to the Eternal Source of Truth! To claim such knowledge as "worldly," is an impudent imposture, and to bid the human soul rest in it "for its own sake" is to prostitute it from its noble end, just as other sacred things may be prostituted. The smallest flower we heedlessly trample on is a minute picture of the Beauty and Power

of God! Its delicate petals, its fragrance, its mysterious life! which we can so easily destroy, but which we can neither comprehend nor recall! yet how paltry the knowledge of the poor worldling who contents himself with this for its own sake! But how sublime the thought of him who looks forward to the day when all the secrets of nature will be unfolded to his gaze! the wonderful mystery of Creation, the laws that govern matter, the vast spectacle of God's UNIVERSE, no longer seen dimly, as a few bright dots in space, but seen in its surpassing immensity; all that is most minute and all that is most gigantic equally displayed; the laws of heat and light and vegetation; enormous globes circling swiftly through immeasurable space! We can conceive the soul standing, as it were, upon the heavenly threshold, viewing the glorious scene, and seeing as God Himself does that "it is good," and then turning with love to the Great Artificer, and losing itself for eternity in the contemplation of His Infinite Beauty!

## Culture of the Will.

The object of the will is Good. Therefore its culture will be in proportion to its adhesion to that which is good.

We have been able while discussing the culture of the intellect, to make abstraction from the will, but we cannot, while treating of the will, leave the intellect altogether out of consideration. The intellect, will, and the memory are, as we have seen, but one and the same soul, and it is the soul that acts, now through one, and now through more than one of its faculties. Thus the reflection that two and two make four, is a pure effort of the intellect, unaccompanied by any motion whatever of the will; but the desire of having or doing anything always presupposes some apprehension that the thing is good. The intellect is, as it were, the eye, and the will the hand of the soul. If there were but those two noble faculties, there would be but little error and sin; for one would unerringly point out "good," and the other would have no obstacle to overcome before embracing it. But we are not pure spirits; we are "composed of soul and body," and as by the one we participate in the spiritual nature of the angel, so by the other we are chained to earth, and constrained to take our place among the animals. Our bodies are, like theirs, subject to heat and cold and hunger, and like them, we are urged by a powerful and blind instinct of self-preservation. But though we are animals, inasmuch as we have bodies and flesh animated by a vital, sentient principle, we are not beasts, actuated merely by this blind impulse, but above it and totally distinct from it, our souls are adorned by the noble gift of reason.

We have seen that the will cannot grasp its object, without having had some previous apprehension that it is good. This apprehension may come from the reason, or from this animal instinct. If it comes from the former, the will should at once embrace it; but if from the latter, the will should first examine, *is* this object, which is represented as good, really so. For the animal instinct conveys to the soul but one fact, that some things are pleasing and some things unpleasant. As the inferior animals follow blindly their brute instincts—they have indeed no other,—without being ever betrayed into excess, it is evident that all these impulses are regulated for them within proper bounds; while the deplorable effect on man of indulging his passions, shows that they are not regulated for us, but that we ourselves must rule them by the light of reason—"granting what they reasonably require, and refusing what they unreasonably demand."

The ravages of even a single vice—drunkenness for instance—show that, even without looking beyond the welfare of the body, the will must be accurately informed, not of what is most pleasing to the body but of what is really good for it.

But man is not alone in the world. He is a Citizen, and his duties are not confined to the care of the body; they regard his fellow-citizens, and those especially who are more intimately bound to him—a wife, a parent, a child. For their sakes he must often labour when he would wish to rest, and deny himself when he would wish to give himself up to enjoyment.

Finally, man is a "fellow-citizen of the Saints, and a servant of God." The society begun in this life should, in the design of God, continue in the next. But this can be only by our serving Him faithfully here on earth that we may hereafter see and enjoy Him forever in Heaven.

We are now in a position to judge how the will is to be cultivated. Our duties towards God and towards our neighbour demand Self-Denial. The senses insist upon Self-Indulgence. They utterly ignore our duty, all idea of the future, everything except their present gratification; and most fiercely and unceasingly do they press their unreasonable demands. Unfortunately, the intellect often allows itself to be rudely pushed aside by the furious passions that agitate the heart of man; and even when it urges on us our duty it frequently does it so feebly that "the evil which we will not, that we do."

Rom. vii., 15.

There are, therefore, two ways in which the will may fail to embrace what is good: either by not having its duty kept constantly and clearly before it, or by lacking the courage to do what it sees to be right. What does worldly and what does Christian civilisation towards illumining and strengthening it?

Secularism bids us procure wealth wherewith to purchase pleasure!—Exactly as the senses do! The very utmost it does, is to commend the higher pleasures, and to condemn those which are purely animal. It neither teaches us our duty nor gives us strength to discharge it. It ignores it quite as much as our instincts do, but not being, like them, blind, it perceives that over-indulgence diminishes the capacity of gratification, and recommends a more lasting source of enjoyment. This consideration may preserve a cool, clear beaded, strong-willed man from *excess*—and for this I allow to secular civilisation whatever credit may be due to it—but here ends its influence. It will not make such a man a good Citizen; it will not train him to merit the place destined for him in the next life; it will do absolutely nothing for him but teach him how he may obtain the greatest amount of gratification *in this world!* and for the weak and foolish, who are easily led, that it is for those who most need assistance, that is for the majority of men, it does not even so much!

But Christianity bids us deny ourselves, take up our cross, and follow Christ. If the passions constantly importune us, it was constantly holds before our eyes the sublime truths of the supernatural order; it points out the appalling consequences of sin; it promises to virtue a "reward exceeding great," eternal, infinite; it teaches us to war upon our sinful passions and appetites, and provides a remedy against our weakness by *prayer*. It teaches us to be good Citizens, by commanding us to perform all the duties we owe our fellow-citizens. We are to "love, honour, and obey our parents and superiors; to provide for our children, to instruct them and all others under our care in the Christian Doctrine, and by every means in our power to lead them to God;" and, in fine, "to do unto men as we would that they should do unto us."

This is the grand law of Christian Civilisation. And observe there is only the *one* law for the *Christian* and for his neighbour; while there are two totally distinct for the *Worldling* and for *his* neighbour. We have already seen that the law for the *WORLDLING himself* is To Procure Wealth as a Means of Pleasure,

From this selfish law, we might readily conclude what that for his neighbour would be, but it will be instructive to examine it as laid down in *theory* by eminent *WORLDLINGS*, and carried out *in practice* in certain highly civilised states.

All Secularists, even those who approve of the brutality I am about to expose, and who carry it out, will be displeased at the plainness with which things are called by their proper names; but the conclusions come home to all those who hold the premises. There is no use in certain pious Secularists, hoping that in some unaccountable way their children will learn to be good. The teachings of sensuality, and the maxims of the world go together, and these pious people will not allow their children to be taught that they must resist both.

The maxims and practice of secular civilisation are rapidly taking the world down to barbarism, to the immoral doctrine that *Might is Right*, and to the bestial theory of "natural selection."

"As you would that men should do unto you, do you Not unto them in like manner." (Luke vi. 31.—New reading.)

"If thou didst see a thief, thou didst run with him." (Psalm xlix. 18.)

"It is lawful for Achab to take the field of Naboth." (iii Kings, xxi.)

"And for the 'rich man who hath exceeding many sheep and oxen, to take the one little ewe lamb of the poor man.'" (ii. Kings, xxi.)

"If you see the strong oppress the weak, do Not interfere in the cause of justice, nor allow others to do so." (Maxim of a famous Worldling—Napoleon iii.)

"If a foul wrong has been perpetrated, do not permit it to be undone, but defend it as an 'accomplished fact.'" (Same.)

"Nature has allotted superiority of strength to superiority of intellect and character; and in deciding that the weaker shall obey the more *powerful*, she is in reality saving them from themselves, and then most confers true liberty when she seems most to be taking it away." (Mr. Froude.)

"A natural *right to liberty* irrespective of the *ability* to defend it, exists in nations as much as, and no more than in individuals." (Same.)

"A rude but adequate test of superiority and inferiority is provided in the relative *strength* of the different orders of human beings." (Same.)

"On the whole, and as a rule, superior *strength* is the equivalent of superior *merit*" (Same.)

"The *right* to desist depends upon the *power* (Same.)

Yes; *Might is Right!* The same law of the *strong* crushing out the *weak*, which "developed the protoplasm into the brute, and the brute into the man "

Lord Beaconsfield tells us that this doctrine is lispied by the young ladies in the gilded saloons in London.

holds yet; and advances man every day to still loftier development. It is folly to speak of "brute force." But for the "brutality" of our apish ancestors, we should be still "brutes," and the more "brutal" we are, the more perfect we shall become. It is a folly to talk of crime. There is no such thing. What we foolishly call crime, is in reality but the carrying out of the admirable law of superior might, which has made us what we are. This being the *theory*, see how many things which we foolishly looked on as crimes crying to Heaven, for vengeance,

suddenly become chivalrous deeds of civilisation! The proverbial brutality of the Irish landlord becomes a villainous slander. Bishop Plunket and Mr. Adair were of course quite right in turning out their miserable tenants to shiver and if they liked, die in the snow.

Mr. Adair depopulated a small tract of country because a number of his sheep were killed. It was not established that a single one of his victims had ever wronged him. But it was established that his own shepherds had unlimited supplies of mutton, and a bonus of 10s. for every sheep "found" killed. (See Mr A. M. Sullivan's "New Ireland"). Bishop Plunket cleared out a village because the Catholics would not send their children to proselytising schools.

So are all the other landlords. With the law at their back, who will question their irresistibility? and being irresistible, who can doubt of their "superior merit?"

The Jews were right in stoning the prophets and crucifying Our Lord: and the wolves into the midst of which He has sent His sheep, are justified in devouring them.

Here is a deed which meets with the special approbation of Worldlings, and which in a special manner uncivilises society.

*"The Government backed by the overwhelming majority of the Legislature, have set their face against the aggregation in monasteries of large numbers of men, who temporarily lead thoroughly idle and purposeless lives, who enjoy large revenues for which they make no return whatever, and who keep considerable tracts of land either entirely out of cultivation or else not more than half tilled. The Italians believe that by a process somewhat similar to that which took place in England during the reign of Henry VIII.—with this exception, that the soil has been resumed by the nation instead of being handed over in fee simple to certain favoured nobles—the land which formerly belonged to the monastic establishments will be probably used instead of being abused as heretofore, and that the productive powers of the nation will be enormously increased by the drones being converted into working bees. Of course a considerable amount of human suffering has been caused by the suppression of the monasteries, and many painful tales are told of the poverty and destitution of monks turned out of the homes in which they had resided Half a Century, and Left to Die by the Way-Side. But the Italian authorities seem to have acted generally with kindness and forbearance, though I am afraid that a certain amount of human wretchedness is inevitable before any great reform can be completed."*

*Travelling Contributor of AGE, Sept. 12, 1874.*

*The Capitals are mine.—Everyone knows that the monks have ever been most successful tillers of the soil, and reclaimers of barren wastes; that wherever there are monasteries, the poor are cared for without expense to the State, and that Italy, from a garden of paradise, is sinking to the condition of Ireland.*

Resumed by the Nation! ! !

Why?

Is there any greater enormity in a poor man's idleness, than a rich one's? What is the reason why the one should be punished for the abuse of his poverty, and the other should not be punished for the abuse of his riches?

"Resumed by the Nation! ! !"

How?

Is the "nation" something distinct from the people who compose it? Are not the poor "drones" a part of it, just as much as the rich ones? Have they not the right to live under a roof—under their own roof—like the rest of the Nation? The poor women "drones" have paid their marriage dowries into the convents, for their own maintenance, and the "Nation resumes" (!) these dowries, and turns the women out to die by the wayside!

To die by the way-side!

Everyone knows the touching story of the captive who was set free in his old age, and who implored to be allowed to return and end his days in the prison which had become his Home! Imagine the sufferings of these poor men and women—aye women too! who entered these convents as children; who have led within them for "half a century" the lives of children; and who with their child-like inexperience and failing powers, are turned out of their Home to die in their old age by the way-side! ! !

Men may assemble night after night, in the devil's name, to squander in drunkenness, the money they should spend on their families; they may pour into each other's polluted ears the language of Hell, till they sink upon the ground, a spectacle loath- some enough to make the demon himself turn aside and shudder; yet as long as they observe in their disorders, certain precautions sufficient to keep them clear of the law, they are not "drones" and the State recognises and respects their right to damn their souls!

But if these same men had had the foolish thought of "assembling together in the name of Jesus Christ, that he might be there in the midst of them;" if instead of bestowing on their sinful appetites and lusts every possible gratification, they mortified them by fasting, and by a continence so severe that it is believed by some to be impossible; if instead of sitting up at night, to pour out and drink in the foul promptings of unbridled passions, they were to rise from their hard couch at midnight to sing the praises of God, then they would evidently be

"drones," and it would be the duty of a "kind and forbearing" Government to reform their evil ways, to turn them out of their Homes in which they had resided half a century, and leave them to die by the way-side!

Oh shame on the civilisation that does such deeds, and shame on the civilisation that records them without a blush or a word of disapproval!

And if, my Protestant fellow citizen, whose eye these words may chance to meet, if you should think that I am a "partisan," you, at all events, are not; will you, then, say, by what right the man who has many palaces, turns out of their Home into the streets, hundreds of poor men and poor women who have but one Home among them? How is it that he should have a right to what does not belong to him, and they should have no right to what is theirs? How, if it be lawful for the ruler to dispossess those who live in community, that *they may be poor and mortified*, it should not be lawful for him to seize the property of those who associate in the pursuit of pleasure and wealth!

Use your reason. Do not allow crime to be palmed on you, under a high-sounding name, for virtue. Call robbery, persecution, and barbarity by their proper names.

Conscience and common sense declare that these deeds *are* evil—that Worldlings guided by worldly maxims, hate and persecute those who are not of the World, because they are not of the World, and their poverty, humility, mortification and chastity are a reproach to the World; just as Cain slew his brother Abel, "because his own works were wicked, and his brother's just."

Drones!

There are two gates whereby principally the souls of unhappy men stream into hell—impurity and inordinate love of wealth. Christ was poor and was a virgin, and in His Church there have always been numbers of men and women who voluntarily embraced poverty and virginity. They are not "drones." They stand on the very Highest Pinnacle of Christian Civilisation, because the whole object of their lives is to nourish their *intellects* with the highest Truth, and to bind their *mil* every day more strongly to the highest Good. They are the Very Best of citizens, because by their example they allay the feverish greed of wealth, and raise the standard of purity.

Sec Balmez' splendid work on European Civilisation; the various chapters on Religious instruction, especially chapter xxxix.

Occasionally an immoral Priest is to be found who not only tosses to the winds his vows, but glories in his apostasy. The unseemingly eagerness with which he is sure to be taken up by those who hate us is as amazing to us as it is disgraceful to them. Now those degraded beings who glory in the violation of their vows, and their shameless admirers, who, under pretence of horrifying themselves piously at our wickedness, go, in reality to feast like ghouls on the corruption set before them are the Very Worst of citizens.

Therefore, while Christianity cultivates the mind of the individual, by implanting supernatural truths, and civilises society by inculcating the sublime axioms of the Gospel, this godless, worldly system "prostrates" the soul in "ignorance" of aught beyond this world; and uncivilises society by inculcating maxims that aim at the destruction of "good-citizenship." If a Christian does wrong, he does what his own principles and his own conscience condemn, but what is to restrain the Worldling, to whom worldly axioms render all things lawful? If the Christian is a good citizen, he is so because of his Christianity. If a Worldling is a good citizen, it is in spite of his secularism.

Let us turn from this worldly civilisation (!) to the truth once more.

## Culture of the Memory.

Having treated so fully the cultivation of the intellect and will, we can briefly dispose of that of the memory and imagination, for it is really included in what has gone before.

The memory is the vast storehouse of the mind, in which the intellect treasures up all the precious truths it has acquired, that they may be forthcoming when needed. It follows that nothing should be deposited there but what is *true* and *good*.

Do these worldly newspapers, which arrogate to themselves the right of keeping the entire community in order, deposit there anything which is not true or is not good? Do they recount robbery, oppression, persecution, with tacit—and even with open—approbation, when we Catholics are the victims? *Maxima debetur pueris reverentia*.

Have they for the young that reverence which even a pagan held to be due, or do they thrust into their tender minds the most revolting descriptions of vice, from the foul reek of which the memory can hardly ever be thoroughly purified?

## Culture of the Imagination.

Within this storehouse dwells a busy faculty, the Imagination or the Phantasy or Fancy, so called from its power of calling images before the mind. Its employment consists in wandering about among the facts, good or bad, true or false, laid up in the memory. It is perpetually comparing one with another, ranging them in the most capricious order, and continually producing the most surprising and widest combinations. It is to this faculty that what are called inventions are due. In some men it acquires from exercise the most prodigious energy. When kept under proper control and properly guided, its services are invaluable; but when allowed to ramble about unwatched, it is like a child wandering through a house with a lighted candle, and when under the guidance of a corrupt heart, it can conjure images from hell.

Judge of the use it is likely to make of the facts furnished to it by these very papers that declaim so loftily about our "ignorance and superstition, mental prostration and atheism."

And what are the Christian uses of the imagination? TO RISE FROM THE CREATURE TO THE CREATOR! Not to rest in "the knowledge of it for its own sake."

To penetrate into the mysterious laws of "this globe which God has given us to investigate," by "imagining" from those which fall directly under our senses,—those which we witness only in their effects. And when—to use the beautiful metaphor of one whose blindness in supernatural matters is rendered all the sadder by his perspicacity in natural science,

Prof. Tyndall.

—"we have carried our feeble light a little way into the darkness that surrounds science," to raise our hearts thankfully to God by 'imagining' that beauty which is dimly shadowed in these noble laws, and to look forward to the day when there will be no more darkness, when we shall see not only the creature but the Creator face to face as He is!

And, nobler still, studying no longer the laws of inanimate nature, however beautiful, but gazing on the heart of man to imagine the beauty of that poor heart when all its human infirmities shall have been cleansed away, and it has become a dazzling mirror, without spot or blemish, to reflect the Sun of Justice!

Mal. iv. 2.

To take what is most pure, most holy in human happiness, and from it imagine the happiness of Heaven! The love of the friend for the friend, of the parent for the child, the joy of meeting after long separation. "God does not call us his servants, but his friends."

John xv. 16.

He is "Our Father, who is in Heaven;" and "after this our exile," we shall meet him. To try to imagine what that meeting shall be! and from the greatness of our failure, to gather the unimaginable greatness of the lot to which He has destined us!

## Pleasure.

We often speak of the "happiness of childhood." We may learn an important lesson by reflecting how far it is true, and why it is true. As contentment springs from the gratification of our wishes, evidently the fewer and less clamorous these are, the more easy it is to content them. The desires of early childhood are of so simple a character, that there can hardly be any difficulty about satisfying them: and if the parent wisely train the child to obedience, from the age when obedience costs nothing, it will never wish anything but what the parent wishes, and will thus be able to "have its own will" always. But if the child be spoiled by indulgence, it will be a torment to itself and others, by perpetually seeking for what it cannot have. It is well-known that the most obedient children are the most happy, and the most indulged are the most miserable. Hence, childhood is happy only inasmuch as its wants are *few* and its passions *weak*; and inasmuch as it affords the opportunity of laying the foundation of life-long happiness, by learning to Keep the wants few and the passions weak.

It is a well-known fact that there are no men and no women so happy as those who live in religious communities. Why? Because they carry out literally the precept of becoming like "little children." Childhood is poor, chaste, and obedient; and these are the three virtues which Religious vow. They call each other, "Father, Brother, Mother, Sister." They have all the pure loves and joys of home, and only the easily satisfied wants of the children of the family, and their whole lives are spent in keeping their passions under. The man of the world may look with equal contempt on the simple joys of childhood and religious life, but what are all the projects of World-lings—from the great crimes of the ambitious conqueror to the small meannesses of the man of pleasure—but so many straws floating in the stream? And what are the votaries of wealth, impurity, and ambition, but children, who—with all the folly, but without the innocence of childhood—stand eagerly watching upon the brink?

The Worldling, bent upon the pursuit of "wealth and the pleasures it affords," looks upon himself as free, because he will obey no one but himself; and upon the Religious as a slave, because he always obeys another; and he is mistaken in both judgments. The religious is free because he only obeys right reason, and the

pleasure-seeker is a slave, because he serves his passions, the most unreasonable and savage of all masters. As the obedient child, by having no will but that of its parents, always does what it wills itself, so the Religious, having no will but that of God, follows the dictates of his own will when he obeys. As the supernatural joys of Heaven are man's last and ultimate perfection; the more man dilates his soul and increases its capacity to receive Almighty God, the more perfect he renders himself. On the contrary, as the joys of earth not only do not, of themselves, perfect him, but even tend to impede his perfection by persuading him to forget God for earth, he should be on his guard against even innocent pleasures. It is in this attachment to Heavenly things, and disengagement from earthly ones, that sanctity consists. Still the innocent pleasures are not without their use. "Heaven suffereth violence, and the violent bear it away" (Mt. xl. 12.); and moderate relaxation, by relieving the strain, helpsman to the attainment of perfection.

But woe to those who propose to themselves to avoid mortal sin indeed, but to "deny" themselves no lawful gratification. If so, where is their "self-denial?" And have they found out a way to Heaven that was unknown to our Saviour?

By way of illustrating, in a simple manner, the wisdom even from a merely human point of view, of not multiplying our earthly needs, let us take an enjoyment, usually looked on as harmless in itself,—smoking. The smoker creates a want and gratifies it. Is he happier than one who has no such gratification, but has also no desire for it? So far both seem on an equality, but if circumstances should prevent the smoker from satisfying his artificial need, his indulgence becomes a torment.

In the year 1867, the mayor of a small township near Albano, was carried off by brigands, and a ruinous ransom demanded. Some delay about the third instalment occurring, they bound him in a chair to cut off one of his ears to send to his wife, with an intimation that he would be sent to her thus piecemeal, unless she procured the money. At this moment, fortunately, their sentinel rushed in to say that the messenger was coming, one would think that a man in such extremities would not have minded an apparently slight privation, yet being accustomed to take snuff, he felt they want of it so much, that he had to powder dry clay in his hands and use it as a substitute.

It is a most important thing to know the difference between pleasure and contentment. Pleasure is a sweetmeat exciting the appetite unduly, and, when indulged in to the excess it has provoked, palling on the taste. Contentment is plain wholesome food, never provoking to excess, and never producing disgust. As therefore we should use sweetmeats in moderation, so should we beware of indulging too much even in the most innocent pleasures,—those which are not innocent are of course out of the question. It is well known that men who give way to the wildest mirth, are subject to fits of the deepest despondency. Their lives are not a gently undulating plain, but a succession of lofty mountains and profound depressions.

As we should not allow ourselves to be too much carried away by pleasure, so neither should we permit ourselves to be too much cast down by sorrow. Against the small annoyances of life there is a very homely but very effectual remedy; all thought of them should be put off till the next day. When we have slept over them, and said our prayers over them, we shall find that partly by natural, and partly by supernatural means, our pain will have calmed down, and that a trouble which yesterday seemed a very mountain, has dwindled to day to a mere speck. Some men are extremely sensitive to changes of the weather. On dull, cloudy, warm days they feel a depression actually painful. Let them understand whence their pain is and have courage. The sun will shine again.

But in the great sorrows of life, we should go to the Garden of Gethsemani, and learn how to bear them. If this were but well understood, how much misery and sin would be avoided. But it is unhappily only too common for men to give up all prayer at the very moment when they most need it: and many endeavor to avoid their afflictions by taking refuge in the shameful vice of drunkenness!

The mainspring of most men's actions is *pleasure*. It should be *duty*. The possession of an "iron will" is a precious gift of God, provided reason guides. This "iron will" under the guidance of passion made Napoleon a scourge of men, and under that of reason made Ignatius a Saint. Everyone should try to strengthen his will as much as possible by keeping constantly before his mind the motives of *duty*, and go steadily on, without ever swerving so much as a hair's-breadth to the right or left.

A remarkable instance of the power of the will is mentioned in Richardson's "Induced Diseases of Modern Life." p. 11, 407. He says that physicians finding the necessity of being cheerful with their patients, Accuire serenity of temper and cheerfulness.

## Care of the Body.

Last, and least important, comes the care of the body. It asserts its wishes so persistently and so clamorously, that there is little fear on the score of neglect, while there is great danger on the score of indulgence. One of the purest pleasures of the body is the pleasure of health: that sensation which we do not

usually advert to, because we are so accustomed to it, but which is occasionally so strong that the glow of vigor pervading our whole frame forces our attention, and excites a feeling of wondering delight. Religious, not withstanding the hard treatment to which they subject the body enjoy more of this blessing than any other class of men. From the absence of intense and exhausting enjoyments, their health is more even, and they often live to what Mr. Washington Irving was pleased to consider an exceedingly good-for-nothing old age, in praising and serving God; while those wretched beings, who seek only 'wealth and the pleasures it affords,' who live in a perpetual round of wearying excitement, who have never known what it was to deny themselves a gratification, and who have served only too well "the world, the flesh, and the devil," so often seek a refuge from their miseries in death, or expiate their indulgence in the hospital or lunatic asylum.

The body should be kept in good health, in order that the greatest possible amount of work may be got out of it. There is, however such a thing as too much health. The mind may be partially overgrown, so to speak, and thereby rendered in some degree less able to discharge its higher functions. The noblest condition of man is that his mind should be clear and vigorous, and his body full of endurance. The body should never be pampered, that it may be but little inclined to rebel, and that rebellion may be always quelled as soon and as easily as possible. All excess in eating or drinking is punished by some diminution of the pleasures of health, and great or continued excess by its loss. We are never tempted to exceed by plain wholesome food, any more than the lower animals. It is the highly-spiced meats and delicacies of the epicure that stimulate the appetite unduly, and lay the seeds of ill-health, by Imposing on the digestive organs an amount of work which they are not able to get through. But it is chiefly by drunkenness that the sin of gluttony is committed. Fatal vice! which ruins the body, extinguishes the light of reason, sets the passions in a blaze, and fills the world with impurity!

Such my fellow-countrymen, is Catholic civilisation; and such is yours, so long as you remain Catholic. You are not "ignorant nor superstitious, nor mentally prostrate, nor atheistical." On the contrary, "so long as you yield to no nation in Catholicity you are surpassed by none in civilisation."

If it is grievous to be robbed and persecuted, yet think it is one of the signs wherby we are known as the followers of Christ, and think of the special advantages arising for our children. Their education will pass entirely into the hands of religious persons. If the "Majority" are unjust enough to persist in forcing on us a law which we have abundantly proved to be oppressive; if they are ashamed to acknowledge and undo, the mistake, there is nothing to be done but fight out our battle, careless of being plundered in this world, provided we but secure the next. In a few years we Catholics will stand face to face with this godless system. The Protestant churches have given up to it their schools and their children, and in a generation or two, it will have swept away every vestige of Christianity from these communions. The various Protestant names will probably still remain standing for some time longer but they will no longer shadow anything Christian; and when they will have crumbled and tottered into oblivion,—

THE CATHOLIC CHURCH, FOUNDED ON THE ROCK OF CHRIST, WILL STAND UNSHAKEN AS IT STANDS TO-DAY!

WOODIFIELD, JOLLY & CO., PRINTERS, OCTAGON. DUNEDIN.

Protection *Versus* Free Trade. Speech on the Necessity of Promoting, Encouraging and Protecting Native Industries..

By David Buchanan, ESQ., M.P.

(*Barrister-at-Law*)

Of Sydney.

*Reprinted from the "Morning Herald"*

For the

Dunedin National Industrial Association,

Dunedin: Woodifield, Jolly & Co., "Morning Herald" Jobbing Printers. Octagon 1880.

## Protection V. Free Trade.

As the above subject has of late excited so much attention, and as Free Trade advocacy has preponderated, we give the following on the other side. It is a speech by David Buchanan, Esq., M.P., for Sydney, and was recently delivered at the Victoria Theatre there, under the auspices of the League for the Encouragement of Colonial Industries:—

The position and prospects of our mechanics have always appeared to me in the highest degree unsatisfactory; large bodies of them continually idle and unable, however willing, to find any regular or continuous occupation. Everything having the semblance of a local industry either struggling for bare existence, or finding itself suddenly drowned and extinguished by a flood of foreign importations. All workers in wood, iron, leather, cloth, and many other materials are thrust aside and condemned to enforced idleness, while the



corresponding workmen of other countries are kept busy and comfortable with our money. Is there a man amongst us so blind as not to see, that if we import all we want in manufactured iron, wood, leather, and cloth goods, the workers in those materials here must, of necessity, remain idle; while all the money which we pay for these foreign importations goes mainly as wages to the foreign workmen, while our own workmen stand at the street corners, in pitiable idleness, watching the drayloads of foreign goods rolling past them, and the manufacture of which goods here should have given them full and constant employment, good wages, and all the comfortable happy home accompaniments of a state of things so beneficent and so just. I say again, emphatically and truthfully, that if the people of New South Wales resolve to employ foreign workmen for all they want in the shape of machinery, furniture, clothing, boots and shoes, and many other articles, let them not be the least surprised if they find large bodies of their own mechanics condemned to lives of idleness and poverty. Let them not be the least surprised if they find the country destitute of manufacturing industries, and the people unemployed, hopeless and despairing. Let them express no wonder if they see our male and female youth growing up with no means of employment open to them, and their prospects for the future dark and lowering. How is it possible for these to be otherwise when a fiscal system is in force, by which our whole manufacturing and mechanical community is sup-planted by the mechanical and manufacturing community of some other country. And this state of things is justified by Freetraders, forsooth, by the shallow pretext that we can only be producers of the raw material. If there is any truth in this most iniquitous assertion, we want no mechanics here, we want no skilled workmen of any kind. Slaves from the South Sea Islands will do our turn. As far as I can gather, all that the Freetraders have to say in justification of the state of things here described is a few phrases such as "Buy in the cheapest market and sell in the dearest;" "Free Trade benefits the many, Protection the few." But I put it to the common sense of this meeting, even supposing that you can buy the imported article a little cheaper than if it were manufactured here, is this cheapness in any way to be looked upon as a compensation for your armies of idle mechanics, and the dosolation of your industrial population? But we deny the alleged cheapness under Free Trade. We say that by a wise system of encouragement to all our native industries, the competition amongst ourselves would keep prices fair and equitable. In fact, in the neighbouring protected colony of Victoria almost every article can be bought their cheaper than in Free Trade New South Wales. The four-pound loaf is twopence cheaper in Melbourne as compared with Sydney, although there is a duty on imported wheat and flour in the neighbouring Colony, vastly to the advantage of the Victorian farmers, and essentially to the advantage of the people of Victoria, as compared with their Free Trade brethren of New South Wales. It makes me melancholy to think of the narrow-minded and narrower-hearted argument used by Freetraders, that Protection can only benefit a few manufacturers. Protection calls into existence every industry that the country is capable of. It originates manufacturing enterprises, employing thousands and thousands of our men, women, and children. It keeps our mechanics engaged doing all that the surrounding population wants done. It circulates all the money that went to pay for foreign imports amongst ourselves. Who, therefore, can truthfully say that it is a system that benefits the few at the expense of the many? If Protection enables a manufacturer to rise amongst us who employs 5000 hands, and pays them wages which keeps themselves, their families, and their homes in every comfort, how gross and ignorant a thing it is to say, as Freetraders say, that Protection only benefits the few manufacturers. Just look for a moment at this. Suppose we had no manufactured furniture imported, no boots and shoes imported, no ready-made clothing imported, no cloth imported, no saddlery imported, no machinery imported, and that the manufacture of all of these commodities, including coach-building and many other industrial articles, afforded full and constant employment for every worker in the community, what a revolution would be created in our whole industrial system! What an absorption of all idle hands! What an infusion of fresh energy and strength into every conceivable manufacturing enterprise! What an accumulation of wealth among ourselves; and what a startling metamorphosis would be effected in the whole interests, prospects, advantages, and rights of labour! I assert that one year's experience of a system which brought about this state of things—and I further assert that a judicious encouragement to our native industries would go far to bring it about—would so change the industrial aspect of this country, would so enhance its prosperity, progress, and wealth, would so invigorate and stimulate labouring enterprise at its very heart and centre, that the best and oldest friend of the country would not know it after one short year's experience of a system so sound, wise, and beneficent. Mr Justice Byles, in his remarkable and most able work on the "Sophisms of Free Trade," says—and to make it more clear to you I will substitute the word "Australian" for "British"—Mr Justice Byles speaks thus: "The entire price, or gross value, of every home-made article constitutes net gain, net revenue, net income to Australian subjects. Not a portion of the value, but *the whole value*, is resolvable into net gain, income, or revenue, maintaining Australian families, and creating or sustaining Australian markets. Purchase Australian articles with Australian articles and you create two such aggregate values and two such markets for Australian industry. Whereas, on the contrary, the entire net value of every foreign article imported is net gain or income to the foreigner, and creates and sustains foreign markets. Purchase foreign articles with Australian articles, and you then create only one value for your

own benefit, instead of creating two, and only one market for Australian industry instead of two. You lose by this policy the power of spending the entire value on one side, which you might have had as well as on the other, and you lose a market for Australian industry to the full extent of that expenditure. It is not a small difference in price that can compensate the nation for the loss. For example, suppose New South Wales can produce an article, say an engine, for £100, and can import it for £99. By importing it, instead of producing it, she gains £1; but though she pays for it with her own manufactures, she loses (not indeed by the exchange itself, but by not producing at both ends of the exchange) £100 of wealth which she might have had to spend by creating the value at home; that is to say, on the balance she loses £99, which she might have had in addition to the £100 by producing both commodities at home. You will remember that when this was quoted at the great Free Trade v. Protection controversy, at the Masonic Hall, Mr Reid shrieked out, in tones that resembled the crowing of a spasmodic cock, "But what becomes of the engine?" evidently not seeing that under Free Trade whatever paid for the engine went away from us; while, under Protection, both the engine and what purchased it remained as wealth among ourselves. I do not think that this reasoning of Mr Justice Byles can by any possibility be refuted. Let us take another illustration from the same high authority, merely using Australian names, for the sake of a better understanding of the matter. Suppose we had manufactories in this country of any importance—which I regret to say we have not, and never will have under a system of Free Trade—but suppose the day came when this state of things was altered, and that under a Protective system manufactories sprung up in every district—well, then suppose woollen stockings to the value of £500,000 a year are made at Bathurst, and exchanged annually for gloves to the value of £500,000 a year made in Maitland—the landlords and tradesmen and workmen of Bathurst and Maitland enjoy together an annual net income of £1,000,000 sterling from this source. Suppose now that from some real or supposed advantage in price or quality the Bathurst people, instead of exchanging their stockings for gloves from Maitland, exchange them for gloves from some foreign country, say from Calais, thus depriving the Maitland people of their Bathurst market—what is the consequence? It is this, that Maitland loses what Calais gets; that Australia loses and France gains half a million a-year by the new locality of the glove manufacture—by its transference from Australia to France. Australians have half a million a-year less to spend, Frenchmen have half a million a-year more to spend. Australian markets, of which Maitland used to be one, fall off to the extent of half a million a-year; French markets, of which Calais is one, are augmented by half a million a-year. The Australian glove manufacture, with its half-million of national net income, is gone from Australia, where it used to maintain Australians and Australian markets, to France, where it now maintains Frenchmen and French markets. Nor does the mischief end here. On the Maitland glove-makers were dependent bakers, millers, grocers, butchers, tailors, shoemakers, &c., with their servants and families. The migration of the glove trade from Maitland to Calais ruins all; they are destroyed like a hive of bees. Let me illustrate this subject a little farther, by recording a little bit of trade history, which will enable you to see clearly what a disaster Free Trade is to a young struggling country like this. When last in England I met a gentleman who was carrying on business as a merchant in a small seaport town. He told me the following story:—He said he had orders from Melbourne—at this time Victoria was under Free Trade principles—for certain machinery to be manufactured at a certain fixed price. He asked some engineers if they could execute the order. They declined to do so at the price. He then had recourse to a clever blacksmith of the town, whose prospects were, at this time, at the lowest ebb, probably not worth £10. Well, the blacksmith undertook the work willingly, and executed it with cleverness and alacrity. The result was that the blacksmith got a prodigious quantity of this work, his fortunes rose, large workshops were erected, and numerous hands employed. In about ten years the blacksmith had made a large fortune, and he resolved to see the country that had been such a benefactor to him. He consequently took his passage in the ill-fated London for Australia, and unfortunately met the fate of almost all concerned in that disastrous voyage. He had appointed the gentleman already spoken of, and who opened up this splendid prospect to him by first employing him, as his executor, and that gentleman informed me that his estate realised £87,000, besides the cost of large and extensive works. He had employed numerous hands in carrying on this trade, who drew high and regular wages. Now, I ask this audience to reflect on this for a moment. All this work might, and should, have been done in Melbourne. It went away from Melbourne to employ foreign workmen and to enrich the foreign manufacturer. If Victoria, at that time, had adopted the wise and salutary principle of protecting its own people, and encouraging its own industries, the £87,000 that was realised at Home in ten years would have been realised by a Melbourne manufacturer, instead of by an English one. The extensive and expensive workshops that were erected to carry on this trade would have been erected in Melbourne, instead of the English seaport town referred to; the hundreds of workmen employed to execute this extensive work would have been Melbourne workmen instead of English workmen. So that the prodigious loss to the colony by this little bit of trade history is so palpable that a blind man might see it. No doubt it will be said that the English manufacturer could do the work cheaper than the Victorian. Probably he could, at a time when Free Trade had struck everything in the shape of manufacturing industry with paralysis, and laid waste the whole industrial prospects of the country.

But Victoria has awakened from the delusion of Free Trade; and I know as a fact that, at the present moment, Victoria could turn out the same machinery cheaper than it was at the time imported from England, and cheaper than it could now be imported from that country. Freetraders cannot answer arguments of this description; they prefer to pass them by in silence. But just let us look a little into the history of this great question, with a keen rapid glance which time necessitates. As far back as the time of Queen Elizabeth, and anterior to that time, no country was so environed by Protective laws as England. She was protected at all points, and under this system she achieved whatever wealth and greatness was hers up to the time when she adopted the principles of Free Trade. England's policy seemed to be to create markets abroad for her manufactures, and to protect herself strictly at home from any injuries by importations. Although she herself was wedded to Protection, she enforced Free Trade upon all her colonies, including America, then a colony of hers. Ireland was treated in the same way, and looked upon merely as a market for England's manufactures, as was also India and the Cape of Good Hope. At the time spoken of England's treatment of her colonies was very different to what it is now, and the most unpalatable things were forced upon the colonies until open rebellion brought about emancipation and freedom as in the case of America. The very same spirit shows itself in some quarters in England at the present time, and may be seen in the angry spirit in which the colonial protective laws are condemned—showing that England has no consideration for the interests of the people here, but merely wishes to use the colonies for her own advantages, or, in other words, as markets for the absorption of her manufactures. England turns a deaf ear to the fact that Protection is undeniably benefiting Canada and Victoria; but what is that to her; they have closed their doors against her manufactures, and that is an unpardonable fault, no matter what prosperity it brings to the colonies named. The time was when England would not have permitted this, but in these enlightened times the colonies can govern themselves, and seem to be resolutely bent to study their own interest in whatever legislation they adopt. England may grumble as much as she likes at the loss of colonial markets, but if the colonies are wise they will resolutely secure those markets for themselves, and employ their own work-people in the manufacture of all they want, and who for a moment doubts their ability to do this? Under Free Trade this will never be done. That system means abundance of work for the foreign workmen, paid with our money, and total idleness and poverty for our own people. Horace Greeley calls Protection a system of national co-operation for the encouragement and elevation of labour, and who can deny that this is a sound and true definition? Its truth and wisdom, illustrated by the practice and experience of every nation on the face of the earth excepting England, and England itself seems, for some time past, to have been feeling most keenly the injury to herself by her ports being open to every protected country on the face of the earth while theirs are strictly shut against her. In the days immediately preceding the declaration of American Independence, the colonists of America were kept in great poverty and distress by all their industries being destroyed as soon as attempted, by importations from England. No sooner was an industry started than ship-loads of English manufactures pouring in swamped and destroyed it. The people were consequently idle and impoverished; but no sooner was their independence declared, than their first President, the illustrious Washington, in his first message to Congress, most earnestly exhorted them to adopt a stringent system of Protection if they wished to save their country from absolute ruin. But even before this those sagacious men, the authors of the federal constitution of the United States, urgently recommended the adoption of the principle of Protection, as an absolute necessity to the well-being of the State. All the early Presidents of the United States were equally earnest in their recommendation of Protection, as the only policy by which the country could rise to wealth and power. That extraordinary man, Benj. Franklin, earnestly exhorted his countrymen, at the very birth of the nation, to adopt without delay a system of Protection to their native industries, if they wished to grow in wealth and greatness. The policy was adopted by the universal voice of the people, every statesman of note, from that day to this, adhering tenaciously to the principle, and such men as Clay and Webster spending their best powers in proving its soundness and truthfulness and defending it against the attacks of enemies, Well then we sometimes hear Free Traders talk of the wealth and advancement of England since she adopted the principle of Free Trade. But is there in the history of nations any approach to the miraculous and swift advance to greatness and power made by the United States during her short existence? She is about one hundred years old, and, at the present moment, she stands at the very head of the nations of the world, and outstrips them all in her gigantic wealth and in her continually swelling proportions. If any one doubts this at the present moment, there will be no room for doubt after the lapse of a few years. This great nation owes her present position largely to the wisdom of her statesmen, who would not suffer their people to be kept in idleness while the money that should have paid them wages went to enrich the workmen of another country. The great statesmen of America, from its foundation up to the present hour, did not believe in supporting the manufacturers of England while they left their own to perish. They saw at a glance that they would have no manufactures without Protection. They also saw that if everything they wanted was manufactured abroad, they must of necessity have an idle and impoverished people at home. With one emphatic voice they enacted protective laws, and at the present moment, as well they may, they cling to those laws with

more determination than ever. Well, here is a country that has had a large experience of the advantages of Protection. It has grown in every conceivable way as no other nation has done. It is composed of a keen, shrewd, sagacious people, alive and sensitive to every injury, and just as clear sighted in discerning an advantage, and, therefore, those who know this great people must know that if Protection was an injury to them, it would not stand twenty-four hours, or rather would never have been adopted, as the Americans are far too clever a people not to know what is best for them—but written on the mind and heart of the nation, in characters that cannot be erased are these words, "Protection has been our salvation, and is now our highest hope," and the whole nation, while I speak, is more wedded to it than ever. Can it be that a nation like America is wrong in adopting the Protective principle after a hundred years' experience of its advantages, and after every one of her great statesmen and writers in different eras of her history, vieing with each other in extolling the soundness, wisdom and absolute necessity of its adoption? Surely a fact like this should teach your flippant shallow Freetrader a little modesty and lead him to the belief that it is just possible that a nation like America may know what is for her advantage and what is for her disadvantage. And above all that shrewd people after long years of practical illustration of the benefits of a protective policy, may be allowed to continue it without being called "lunatics," the civilist word that Freetraders have for those who differ from them. America has grown to unprecedented wealth and power under Protection, and the nation seems to be at the present moment more thoroughly satisfied of its immense advantages than ever. How extraordinary a thing it is that we should have the case of Canada alongside of this great State to illustrate at once the injury and ruin worked by Free Trade, and the prosperity and wealth brought about by Protection. I assert that the history of Canada mathematically demonstrates the truth of both these propositions. Canada has had a long and dismal experience of the results of Free Trade in the fullest sense of the word, and after a most extensive and all-embracing trial of the principle, she has condemned it, and abandoned it. Under Free Trade, Canada found that she could not prosper. No sooner did she attempt to establish a native industry than an inundation of imports from the United States and England swept it away. Canada struggled hard to establish manufacturing industries of her own, and again and again attempted to do so, but was always defeated and destroyed by shiploads of importations. She struggled on in this way till hope was at last extinguished and desperation took its place, and the nation demanded in a voice, the tones of which could not be mistaken, either Protection or annexation to the United States. Under Canada's long experience of Free Trade, the people were idle—everything that their mechanics should have made was imported—distress was everywhere the consequence. No manufacturing industries of any kind existed, and the nation was drifting fast towards utter ruin, when the people, awakened to intelligence by the powerful lessons of fact rose in their majesty and might, and scattered to the winds a Free Trade Parliament and a Free Trade Government. The Government and people of Canada have now, and for some time past, adopted the protective principle with almost electric advantage to the best interests of the people. The moment Protection was adopted by Canada one man came forward with £100,000 to again set up an industry that had been previously twice or thrice ruined by Free Trade importations. That industry now flourishes in Canada, and employs many hands; those hands would be idle but for this beneficent principle of Protection. Other industries have started up in every Canadian district, and the country prospers and grows in wealth and greatness; while her formerly idle people are now well employed, earning good wages. Just let us pause for a moment to con-temple the significance of this small piece of Canadian history, and see with what irresistible force it comes to the aid of the advocates of Protection. Canada had done all she could with Free Trade; she had tried it for years and years, and, under it, her whole fiscal and industrial system was crushed to utter ruin, and her people left in idleness and penury. She saw alongside of her a stupendous nation which had grown to her unparalleled dimensions of wealth and power by the adoption of a fiscal system which she claims as the main cause of her unexampled rise. Canada looking, with the eyes of intelligence, at all this, roused herself from her lethargy and apparent stupor, and with one supreme effort, revolutionised her whole system and adopted Protection, as the only means left her to ward off impending ruin and to save the nation from inevitable decay. The nation is, beyond doubt, saved by this policy—Canada no longer having her markets swamped and ruined by foreign importations—witnesses now her own mechanics and her own manufacturers supplying the wants of her own people. She witnesses a busy, well-employed people thriving and prosperous, just because she has come to see the advantage of keeping the work to herself, instead of sending it, and the money to pay for it, to keep busy and to enrich the labourers of other countries. One would think that a child could see the reason and the force of all this, but Freetraders seem unable to see anything. Need I remind you that every country of Europe is strictly guarded by protective duties; and that all the great continental statesmen, such as Bismarck, have never dreamt for one moment of even giving Free Trade a trial, so satisfied are they of the immediate ruin that would follow, What a country would India be if Protection gave it a chance to rise to manufacturing greatness. But as long as England rules there, India will be reserved as a great market for her manufactures, utterly regardless of the poverty and idleness that this brings on her people. No country in the world offers such advantages to the establishment of native manufactures, and if they were established by India protecting herself

against foreign importations, that country would speedily become one of the richest countries on the face of the earth in industrial enterprise and manufacturing wealth. As it is her enormous population are in the most abject poverty and ruinous idleness. England compels them to keep their ports open, and supplies all their wants,—how is it possible, under such circumstances, for any industries to start there, or the people to thrive there? But now, just let us inquire how England herself is thriving under Free Trade. She is the only Free Trade country on the face of the earth, or, to speak more accurately, in Europe. According to Freetraders all England's greatness dates from the day she adopted Free Trade; but sensible people know that England was a great nation centuries before this. All England's manufacturing wealth grew under a system of strict Protection. The nation was made what it is by the adoption of a protective policy, which existed up to our own times, and I question if England would have ever thought of Free Trade but for the tax on corn. This was an impolitic and an unjust tax, simply because England could not grow half as much wheat as would supply her own wants; and in the face of a famine and a starving people, how could such a tax be for a moment maintained? It was abolished amidst a ferment of angry feeling, the people's passions being lashed into fierce agitation at the bare thought of such a tax, and, in the public turmoil of the time the system of Free Trade, which now prevails in England, was adopted. No intelligent reader of the history of those times fails to observe that the leading advocates of Free Trade imagined that if the principle were adopted by England, every other country would have followed England's example; and if this had taken place, every other country would have speedily found how completely they had out their own throats, and how essentially they had served England. But every other country had more sense, and instead of following England's example, they redoubled their protective guard, and set themselves earnestly to the perfecting of themselves in manufacturing art, so that they might as soon as possible take all due advantage of England's open door to pour in their own manufactures on her markets. There is not much use in Freetraders producing statistics of England's exports and imports during her Free Trade history, to prove her great increase of trade, and her great prosperity. What is the use of this, unless they can prove that protected countries, of equal wealth and power, fell away during the same period in a corresponding ratio. We all know that England advanced, with giant strides, during the last forty years; so did also America, France, and other countries. The Freetraders say Free Trade did this for England. If this is so, will they kindly tell us what did the same thing for America, where Free Trade has no existence? I apprehend that increase of population, the discoveries of science, the improvements in locomotion, and the wonders that time works, had much more to do with England's prosperity than Free Trade. Well, as a Free Trade country England is left alone in her glory; and instead of even her own young colonies imitating her example, they jump at Protection as essentially necessary to their existence, and thrive and prosper under it, as they had previously sunk towards ruin and decay under their experience of Free Trade. No question about this, that it will take an enormous amount of injury inflicted on England before she cries out; her innate strength, her colossal wealth, her vigorous and energetic people, the rare spirit of enterprise that impels them, and which seems characteristic of the nation, will always enable it to put a good face on the worst of times. But that England has, of late, cried out in tones of utmost distress is a fact that cannot be denied. There is at present serious calamity in the manufacturing districts of England, and her trade is weltering in a state of stagnation. A child might ascertain the cause of this, and it is a comfort that the English people are not blind to it. They say they are fighting an unequal battle, inasmuch as, while their manufactures are excluded from every country on the face of the earth, so far as heavy protective duties can exclude them, yet our ports are open and free to the entry of the manufactured goods of every one of those protected countries, and on these terms we can no longer continue the battle. This is true, whatever Freetraders may say to the contrary. In one year £64,000,000 sterling of manufactured goods comes into the free port of England from protected countries. If England had been protected that year she would have sold £04,000,000 sterling of her manufactured goods more than she did do. Is it not clear that England's Free Trade brings her the loss of this enormous sale and consumption of her manufactures? And is it in the least degree wonderful or surprising that the English manufacturers cry out when they find their own manufactures thrust aside to the extent of £64,000,000 sterling in one year, and see the manufactures of foreign countries to that amount bought in preference! No wonder the call for reciprocity is loud and long at the present moment in England; and it will be louder still as the imports from protected countries flow in upon her in a stream continually increasing in breadth and depth. The protected manufacturer in America and other countries, is guarded against foreign competition, and has the home market entirely to himself, supplying which clears all his expenses and gives him his profit; but seeing England's door gaping wide open, and a free entry, he, with the zeal of a keen man of business, takes instant advantage of the position, so favourable to himself, works his plant to its fullest capacity, supplies the home market, and pours an immense surplus into England's open door. If the English manufacturers can stand this much longer, I will be greatly surprised. It is already causing them to cry out in much agony and even shutting up many of their manufactories, while many are working half time. One of two things must take place, either England must be armed with the same weapon yielded by her competitors, that is Protection, or she must go to the wall as certainly as I speak. England cannot perform miracles, and if other

nations have now reached the same perfection, skill, and ability, in the manufacture of every commodity that England has long been distinguished for, how is it possible for England to continue a fight so unequal, which must be the case as long as her ports are free and open to the manufactures of every nation in the world, while every nation of the world most carefully shuts the door against a single ounce of England's manufactured goods coming in upon them without previously paying a heavy and impassable duty. Can anyone doubt that England will very soon be compelled to listen to the voice of distress, which rises from the manufacturing districts, and resort again to protective duties if she has the slightest notion of preserving her great manufacturing interest from total ruin by being supplanted by the enormous importations of the manufacturers of other countries. If the late Mr Cobden had been alive at the present time, judging from what he said during his life, who can doubt that he would have been an earnest advocate of reciprocity. Listen to those words of Mr Cobden, uttered not many years before his death. "What," he says, "is the cause of England's enormous wealth? the answer is the cheapness of her manufactures. What is the cause of her great maritime strength and power? the answer again is, the cheapness of her manufactures. What is likely to wrest this wealth and power from her? I answer, only the superior or greater cheapness of the manufactures of other countries." Now this is exactly what has happened. Other countries, assisted by energy, zeal, and activity, and the all-powerful weapon of Protection, and seeing England, through her Free Trade and open ports, in a position of enormous disadvantage, have greedily seized the opportunity to inundate the English markets with their own surplus manufactures, made for the purpose, and so undersell her on her own ground to her palpable injury and distress. Free Traders, in deep chagrin, may shut their eyes to this, but the eyes of the English manufacturer, as well as those of the English people, are being opened wider and wider every day, until the ruinous and destructive fact has emerged from dim shadowy obscurity into the clear light of day, carrying with it lessons of wisdom, neither to be contradicted or explained away, and which are at present working out their purposes on the practical, thoughtful, and intelligent portion of the English nation. The statistics that Freetraders generally trust to, bearing on England's present position, prove little. Since the advent of Free Trade in England and for a long time afterwards other nations in their manufacturing skill, were not in a position to do her much harm; but as time rolled on they gave their whole attention to perfect themselves in manufacturing skill and industry, and now, and for some years back, America, Belgium, France, and Germany are not far behind her in manufacturing expertness and ability, if they are not actually abreast of her. And, consequently, it is only within the past few years that England has begun to feel keenly the tremendous results to her prospects in the continually increasing flood of manufactured goods that is constantly flowing in upon her from those strictly protected countries. Well, then, here are statistics that carry some meaning with them as bearing upon the present argument. In the year 1877 the exports of England decreased to the extent of £46,000,000 sterling, while her imports increased to the enormous extent of £56,000,000 sterling. This, to my mind, proves that while the protective duties of other countries reduced her exports as stated, her own free ports increased her imports by £56,000,000 sterling—or in other words, Free Trade in England, without reciprocity, cut down her exports by £46,000,000 sterling; while her open ports enabled protected countries to destroy her home markets in her own goods to the extent of £56,000,000 sterling. If this game is continued much longer, on the same terms, it requires not the assistance of inspiration to predict that a great change must speedily take place in England's policy, or she will find herself driven to the wall, wrecked and ruined in the notoriously unequal contest—a contest that would ultimately overwhelm England were she ten times what she is in point of stability wealth, and greatness. I have now said almost all I desired to say, although the subject is one so large that if I broke other ground the time allotted me here would not admit of me doing anything like justice to the matter spoken of. Well, then, gentlemen, if you believe in the soundness and truth of the opinions I have put forward in this somewhat lengthy address, act upon them if you are wise; resist, with your whole force, a system which leaves you a prey to the cupidity of foreign countries—act like the working men of Canada and Victoria, and assert your power at the ballot box—return men to Parliament who look forward to a higher destiny for this country than merely growing the raw material to be manufactured by other nations. Rise in your might against a system that necessitates the idleness and impoverishment of well nigh half the people. Let our mechanics and farmers, and all who wish to see this a thriving manufacturing country, aim their deadliest blows at the system which at present prevails, and which transfers your labour and its emoluments to the hands and pockets of foreign workmen. Never let this great fact be absent from your minds, that open ports mean work for the stranger and foreigner, and poverty and idleness for yourselves, accompanied by stagnation and national decay. Look to your children and the dark prospect before them under a system which encourages and prospers the workmen of other nations, while it leaves our own people in poverty and idleness. Never relax your efforts to destroy this system, but continually increase the emphasis of your protest against it. The truth is with you, and in the end victory will crown your efforts. In the meantime let all earnest souls combine in the devoted advocacy of this great cause—the very life of the country is involved in the struggle, and our triumph, which is certain at no distant date, will realise advantages for our people which will challenge the gratitude, and obtain the blessings, of our own and after ages.

# Death's Charity.

BY M. A. PAULL,

*Author of "The Flower of the Grassmarket,"  
"Tim's Troubles," "St. Mungo's Curse," etc. etc*

## Chapter IV.

*"A Glass too Much!"*

"I am very sorry indeed to have to mention this to you, Mr. Pope, for I have felt a real regard and esteem for you hitherto, and until the last few months your conduct has been all that I could wish. And before now, had things gone on comfortably as they used to go on, I should have felt justified in offering to take you into partnership, even though you might not be prepared to put much capital into the business. For I am becoming an old man, and should be glad to be relieved from the cares of trade, in part, at any rate."

Mr. Braithwaite sighed and looked, as he really felt, disappointed, both for himself and the young man before him. They were together in the counting-house behind the shop, and Ned Pope stood uneasily under his employer's gaze. He, too, looked as he felt, and the feeling that oppressed him was one of keen shame. To his credit, be it said, he did not, as so many do, attempt to justify his bad conduct by foolish and transparent excuses. On the contrary, no man felt more deeply than he did himself that his easily-yielding disposition was a curse and a snare to him, especially on club nights, in that warm bright parlour of the White Swan, which was set apart once a week for the use of the Peculiar Philanthropists, and where everything seemed to urge him on to mirth and jollity and excess.

Ned Pope, persuaded by Mrs. Parkhurst and Ellen, had complied with Uncle Simon's wishes, and been duly proposed and initiated into the "Cotton Corporation of Peculiar Philanthropists," and had become, quite un-expectedly to himself, one of the most popular members of that benefit club. Ned was not vain, but a man must have a dull soul indeed whose pulses are not quickened by the universal admiration and applause of whatever circle he makes his own; and Ned's unaffected gaiety, handsome person, agreeable voice, ready humour, and thorough good temper at once made him a universal favourite.

A club night without Ned Pope was not to be thought of; it was laughingly declared that his fines for absence ought to be double those of other men, because he was doubly missed. Uncle Simon took care to reap quite a harvest of good will, and glasses of spirit, for introducing such a jolly good fellow, and took care also to keep prominently forward his close connection with this perfect specimen of a Peculiar Philanthropist. Poor Ned! Agreeable, warm-hearted, loving, of the type whom society declares are "nobody's enemies but their own," those club nights at the White Swan were ruining his prospects in life, injuring the splendid constitution his Creator had bestowed upon him—a talent for which he must give an account—and making him inwardly wretched and unhappy, whenever conscience spoke plainly, as it did now in the presence of Mr. Braithwaite.

"I am so very sorry, sir," Ned said at last. "I don't deserve your kindness. It was very good of you ever to have thought of advancing me so highly; and I really will try to regain your good opinion. I know exactly how it has all happened, sir; it all comes of taking a glass too much."

If Mr. Braithwaite had been an abstainer he would very probably have been able at that moment to open Ned's eyes to the fact that *every* glass is proved scientifically, morally, and socially to be a glass too much. But as he himself believed only in the virtue of "moderation," and was wont to call tee-totalism a "foolish fandangle" (whatever that may mean), he was not the help to Ned in this crisis of his life which he good-naturedly intended to be, and which he otherwise might have been.

"You are right, Edward Pope," said the old man, kindly, "and I can't tell you how many young men I have seen come to grief through taking a glass too much. Do be moderate, my dear fellow; a little never does a man harm, 'tis the abuse. Remember what the Bible says, 'Let your moderation be known unto all men.' I am the last to wish to see you taking up with any foolish extreme notions on this subject of drinking. A young man should learn to control himself. I assure you, I always did. I restricted myself to one glass at home, and two in company, little enough that, to insure that I should always keep a cool head upon my shoulders. My advice is that you do the same."

"Sometimes I think, sir," said Ned, gravely, "that I can't take what others take and stand firm. Indeed, if it

hadn't been for Ellen and her friends laughing me out of it, I do believe I should have joined the Temperance Society and entered the Rechabite Club."

"Quite right of Miss Parkhurst," said Mr. Braithwaite. "A young woman should not allow her intended husband to make himself absurd and singular in the eyes of his friends. You can be a moderate man, Ned Pope, and keep from a glass too much without joining the teetotal 'fandangle,' a thing I never had the least sympathy with. And if," continued the old man, "I find you resume your former good and steady habits—and let me tell you these are the habits every mother likes to see in the future husband of her daughter—I do not say that I shall prove hard-hearted in the matter at which I have briefly hinted. Only remember, Edward Pope, there *must* be an improvement and very watchful care; for I cannot trust my lucrative business to the brains and hands of a man who very often takes a glass too much. Accept my warning, and be wise in time."

So saying, and followed by the young man's grateful thanks, Mr. Braithwaite quitted his counting-house. Unconsciously to himself, that worthy burgher had been arguing in a dark circle; there was neither light nor point in his remarks for his troubled and perplexed listener. And Ned sighed heavily at first as he thought of the future. It had not been an easy thing to him, as yet, to practise this vaunted moderation. In fact, he did not understand what it meant. He could go without the drink altogether, and feel his head and pulse cool and collected, and calm. But his first glass, even his first glass of wine, acted upon him like the match upon the fire ready to be enkindled.

For a few weeks he persistently ran the risk of offending Uncle Simon, and endangered the future possession of the fortune of that irascible individual, by keeping himself aloof from the club, preferring to pay a few fines rather than lose the chance of the partnership which he was naturally most anxious to attain. But the repeated assaults of Uncle Simon and many other Philanthropists upon the citadel of his determination finally caused him to waver and yield.

A few months more convinced Mr. Braithwaite that his confidence in his assistant was altogether misplaced—he would never be fit for a partner. He had little difficulty in finding a steady young man, with some capital to introduce into the business, and Ned had the mortification to read "Braithwaite and Cash," where he might have read, but for the glass too much, "Braithwaite and Pope."

Ellen was indignant, and advised his leaving the service of such a "mean, stingy, deceptive old curmudgeon as Mr. Braithwaite." But Ned told her the truth about himself so plainly as to silence her grumbling, and he even ended by declaring that his master showed himself very good-natured to retain him in his service at all. Of course, when the young man said this to Ellen he was in a repentant mood. On club nights, in the brilliantly-lighted room at the White Swan, he "threw dull care away," resolved emphatically that "Britons never should be slaves," and was willing to declare of every special Philanthropist that "he was a jolly good fellow, which nobody could deny."

Mrs. Parkhurst, about this period, began to think that it was time Ned Popo should ask her daughter to "name the day." The match, she declared to Ellen, had been dawdling on too long already, and it was high time they had a wedding in prospect. Ellen herself had already painfully come to the same conclusion; indeed, she had grown irritable and listless and disappointed of late, expecting at their every meeting that Ned would make some reference to their getting married, and each time feeling aggrieved and annoyed when they parted without a word upon the subject so uppermost in her own thoughts.

"I don't see the use of our keeping company any longer, Ned," she said one evening, desperately, when they had had a rather dreary walk, for the young man was dull and gloomy, as people discontented with themselves are apt to be. Ned started.

"Whatever do you mean, Ellen?"

"Exactly what I say," the girl retorted, her face flushing, her eyes sparkling, and her figure drawn to its full height.

"I've thought sometimes you did not love me very much, Ellen."

"I've more reason to think so of you," was her answer. "You're making me a laughing stock to everybody."

The hot, angry tears filled her eyes now.

"Mother says," she continued, "that you dawdle on and on with me as no man has a right to do, and as father would have been ashamed to do with her. So I think we'd better say good-bye, and have done with each other at once."

There was a pause now, during which Ned Pope tried to comprehend the real cause of annoyance which made Ellen so indignant. He came to the conclusion that she had justice on her side, and he formed a sudden resolution.

"Ellen," said he, "I have been going on stupidly, like a man in a happy dream. But why didn't you bring me to my senses sooner, like a good dear thing? Your mother's quite right, and so are you. It will be the best thing in the world for us to get married; I shan't have the heart to leave you then, and 'there'll be no place like home.' I've been waiting, intending to make a better provision than I can do."



"But you're in the Club, Nod; that's a provision, you know."

"Exactly," said he, bitterly, roused by that allusion of her's to the Corporation of Peculiar Philanthropists, and its attendant blessings. "Death's Charity, you know, Ellen; and that will smile on you if I should go to the dogs."

"What a queer fellow you are, Ned," said Ellen, whose nature was far from alive to matters which acutely wounded his liner-strung sensibilities.

Before they parted the lovers had decided that their marriage should take place in a month. Ned was forthwith to proceed to have the banns duly called without further delay. Ellen was satisfied and smiling now, and they parted in the highest good humour. But when Nod had thought the matter over, he wished that his stock of ready money was not so miserably small. However, his credit was good, and he must trust to that. They need not have so very much to begin with, and perhaps Uncle Simon would give them a cottage to live in, or some other equally handsome present.

*(To be continued.)*

DEATH OF THE OLDEST MINISTER IN THE WORLD.—There died on Monday, March 3rd, 1879, in Shetland, the Rev. Dr. Ingram, Free Church minister, stated to be the oldest minister in the world. He was in the 104th year of his age. Four generations of the In grams lived in one house in Shetland. The deceased centenarian's oldest son, himself an old man, is also a Free Church minister. Up to a short time ago Or. Ingram was well and able to move about, but deaf. Travellers came long distances to see the old man, and occasionally a stranger would go up to a hale old gentleman on the road and inquire where Dr. Ingram was to be seen. "I am Dr. Ingram," was the prompt reply, He was ordained in 1803. When he settled in Unst, the Shetland Isles were noted for drunkenness and a low state of morality, he at once became a teetotaler, never tasted strong drink, and by the power of his example and influence, he brought about a great improvement among the people.

## Correspondence.

### The Rechabite and Templar Oaks.

*To the Editor of the Rechabite Magazine.*

Sir and Brother,—I was glad to see in the *Good Templars Watchword* a letter from a correspondent who had visited Alton Towers lately, and seen the Rechabite and Good Templar oaks, planted there some few years ago. He reports them as in a thriving condition, and well protected. Is it not time there was another trip got up to Alton Towers? Many would like to join in such an excursion; and I commend this subject to the serious consideration of the Board of Directors and other brethren accustomed to deal with trips and pleasure parties.

—Yours fraternally,

A NORTHERN RECHABITE.

March, 1879.

### The Mona Union Tent.

*To the Editor of the Rechabite Magazine.*

My dear Sir and Brother,—Last year you were good enough to insert in the *Magazine* a few particulars showing the financial position of the Mona Union Tent, No. 22, to the 31st December, 1877. The balance sheet for the year ending 31st December, 1878, is now before me.

I enclose a statement of income and expenditure, which shows that after paying all claims for sick, funerals, doctor, rent, salaries, procession expenses, &c., the balance, being profit on the year, amounts to the large sum

of £303 17s. 11d., which, added to the sum in hand last year, gives £4,555 3s. 2 ½d. This amount is accounted for as follows:—Secured on house and land property, £4,367 7s. 2d.; in banks, 162 3s. 8d.; due by Juvenile Tent, £20 14s.; in Tent box, £4 8s. 4 ½d.; and if the interest (£72 4s. 3d.) due but not paid, be added, gives a total worth of £4,627 7s. 5 ½d. The Mona Offspring Juvenile Tent has a balance in hand of £109 5s. 11d. The funds in hand of the Mona Union Tent will average fully £12 6s. per member. Great praise is due to the officers of these Tents for the lucid manner in which the balance sheet is prepared each year.

—Yours sincerely,

H. T. MC.IVER, P.H.C.R.  
Douglas,

Feb., 1879.

## Funeral Allowance for Children.

*To the Editor of the Rechabite Magazine.*

Dear Sir and Brother,—Will you kindly allow me, through the medium of the *Magazine*, to draw the attention of the members to a proposition that we intend placing on the digest, for the consideration of the next Conference, having for its object "the granting of a funeral allowance for the children of members dying under 16 years of age, at the rate of 10s. per share held by a member and his wife jointly (to the extent of four shares) in the Funeral Fund, but no such allowance to exceed £2 for one child."

As our Order at present makes no provision for rendering assistance to members at the death of a child, I think the time has arrived when this question should be taken into careful consideration, especially as we have to contend against other societies making such a provision. It is true that in some of our Districts funds have been established whereby members receive a certain allowance on the death of a child; but they are not recognised by the Order, and the members are called upon to pay an extra contribution if they wish to become members of the fund.

In the Durham and Northumberland District, the greatest obstacle we have to contend with, in endeavouring to extend the Order, is the fact of our not making some such provision, so as to assist members to bury their children. As it is an admitted fact, which we feel proud to boast of, that ours is the healthiest of all friendly societies, surely the Order can afford to grant a funeral allowance at the death of a member's child without increasing the present scale of contributions. Our District is unanimous in putting forth this proposition, and we hope the members will consider the same, and between now and the time of the Conference discuss the subject in the pages of the *Magazine*.

—Yours fraternally,

HENRY WARDROPPER, D.D.R.

Sunderland,

Feb., 1879.

## Superannuation.

*To the Editor of the Rechabite Magazine.*

Dear Sir and Brother,—The question of Superannuation in connection with Friendly Societies is now becoming an important one, and will become of as much or more importance to us as Rechabites than the

members of other Orders, for the reason that our temperate habits most certainly tend to lengthen our days, so that we live longer and so stand in need of a better provision for old age than persons whose mortality is not so enduring. Although Superannuation in old age must be a very desirable object to attain, I regret to say many of the members of Friendly Societies generally object to pay the additional contributions necessary to secure so desirable an object. They cling to the idea that when unable to work they can claim the sick allowance of their Tent; but infirmity in old age is not always sickness, and ought not to be paid for as such; and as Temperance men, who are hoping to live long and useful lives, and not experience a sickly old age, it behoves us to be up and doing, and at once take up the question of Superannuation.

I suggest that the Board of Directors prepare a set of tables, and, when approved by Moveable Conference, have them certified, setting forth the actual amount of full sick pay, half, quarter, or other pay a member may receive; the sick pay to cease at 65 or 70 years of age and Superannuation to begin; together with contributions to secure these objects. Our present General Laws on sick pay are very vague, and leave too much discretion to individual Tents. I am aware that much must always be left to the Tents to regulate their sick pay in accordance with the state of their funds. If it is found, by valuation, they have a surplus—but to commence with they ought to have definite and fixed periods of full and reduced sick pay, to be stated in the rules, along with rates of contributions for the same—the necessity for this will appear when the assets and liabilities of our Tent funds have to be valued. At present our General Laws determine and set forth the amount to be paid into the sick fund, but leave Tents to find out by experience, and sometimes very sad experience, what they can or cannot pay out.

In reference to funds for Superannuation, my impression is that it should be vested in the Board of Directors and High Officers as the central body of our organisation, thus giving the funds greater stability, the area of assurance being larger, embracing the whole Order. The contributions for Superannuation being included in the returns to Districts, and sent by Districts in other returns to the Board of Directors, we should thus secure a large and substantial fund, whose reliability could not be questioned.

I feel persuaded that, sooner or later, we must legislate on this question, and if our members will think the matter over and ventilate their ideas in our *Magazine*, a way will be found to meet all our requirements.

—Yours fraternally,

T. L. G.

## The American Rechabites.

*To the Editor of the Rechabite Magazine.*

Dear Sir and Brother,—I read with great interest "A letter from an American Rechabite" in your January number. The brother's expressed object is to bring about an interchange of ideas. Mine may not be wholly discarded when I say I, too, have had a little experience in Rechabitism on both sides of the Atlantic. As far as I know, I am at this present time a member in good standing of the National Order of Independent Rechabites of North America, and also the I.O.R. of England. My experience with the American Order was varied, and of several years' duration, and my love and desire for the advancement of the Order was unbounded, as many there can testify. I have been a member in England of the Salford Unity nearly two years—long enough, I think, to note the difference in the two Orders. Without argument on the General Laws of either, my opinion is decidedly this—the English Laws would not work well in America, for the stated sick-benefit system as applied in England is not in accordance with the American view of brotherly assistance. I have seen various cases of sickness and distress there, in which the afflicted brothers have been better cared for than if a full member in like circumstances in England. There is a difference in the nature of the two peoples, especially the Temperance element, and were it not for taking up too much space, I would attempt to better illustrate my assertion. I have seen the sick-benefit system work badly in other Orders in America. I do not wish to throw cold water on Bro. Spencer's suggestions, although that has been my life-long beverage, and I hope no one will so misconstrue my meaning, as I know there is no one would wish more than I do to see all the branches of Rechabites under one noble banner; and as far as I have learned (and I was present at the session when the Order changed its name) the brother has given a splendid account of the history of American Rechabitism from a period just previous to the Rebellion. The main difference in the two Orders as I have seen it is this, the majority of those who join in England do so with the idea of pecuniary benefit in time of sickness, which, of course, is a noble object, as it is

instinctive of self-preservation; but the American brother joins, having been convinced that the Order is a genuine brotherly one, and is the sure road to reform himself and fellow-man by becoming a member and promoting the principles of the Order—Temperance, Fortitude, and Justice. It gives me joy to read that the Order is fast spreading in the West, and may it continue and be united, from the sable mines of Pennsylvania to the brighter mines of California—from one end of the earth to the other. Unity with the two Orders can be easily effected as far the American brethren are concerned, but it should be with the Ritual alone. The Initiatory and Degree work of the American Order is, to my mind, something sublime, when conducted as it should be, and would fill with joy and admiration the hearts of our great and grand Rechabites on this side. If we all worked under the same Ritual and Passwords, what more would be required to make us an united and mighty band of abstaining brothers, who could give and receive fraternal friendship's grip wherever the English language is spoken?

—Yours ever, in T.F.J.,

REUBEN KIBBEY.

Benjamin Whitworth Tent, No. 285, London District.

## The Drink Bill For 1878.

*To the Editor of the Rechabite Magazine.*

Dear Sir,—The Excise returns are to hand this morning, whereby we are enabled to calculate the consumption of intoxicating liquors for the year 1878.

The following table gives particulars of the various kinds of intoxicating liquors consumed together with the money expended thereon. It also gives the consumption for 1877:— Gallons. 1878. 1877. British £ £ spirits (a) 29,358,715, at 20s= 29,358,715 29 888,176 Foreign spirits (b) 10,438,637, at 24s= 12,636,364. 12,742,277 Wine (c) 16,272,295, at 18s= 14,645,066 15,904,146 Bushels Cwt. of malt. Beer: Sugar used (d) 1,128,226= 4,813,760 Beer: Malt used (e) . . . . . 57,259,393 62,073,153 1878. 1877. Gallons. £ £ Equal to 1,117,316,754, at 1/6=83,798,756..81,722,632 British wines, cider, &c., (estimated) 17,500,000, at 2/0= 1,750,000.. 1,750,000 Total.. £142,188,900 142,007,231

From these returns it will be seen that in 1878, with all the terrible depression that prevailed in trade, the money spent upon intoxicating liquors was £181,670 more than in 1877.

It will also be noted that whilst wine and spirits—supposed to be drunk mainly by the upper and middle classes—have fallen off nearly two million sterling, the consumption of beer, which is generally allowed to be the beverage of the working classes, has increased more than two million sterling.

During the last seven years the total expenditure upon intoxicating liquors in the United Kingdom has been £987,320,071.

In the year 1860 Mr. Gladstone, avowedly to lessen the deplorable intemperance which then prevailed, introduced his Wine Bill. It may therefore be interesting to compare the consumption of intoxicating liquors now with what it was at that time. For this purpose I will take the 7 years ending 1863, and compare them with the 7 years just ended:—

From the above it will be seen that the increase in the expenditure upon intoxicating liquors during the seven years ending 1878, as compared with the seven years ending 1863, was £351,165,094, being an increase of over 55 per cent.

The population of the United Kingdom in 1863 was 29,433,918, and in 1878 33,799,276, being an increase of less than 15 per cent, in population, as compared with an increase of 55 per cent, in the consumption of drink.

The entire value of all our exports for the four years ending 1878 was £815,000,000, being £171,000,000 less than the money which the nation spent on drink during the seven years just ended. If to the drink expenditure we add the indirect cost and losses resulting therefrom, it would increase the drink bill by at least £100,000,000 per annum, and it would show a national loss far exceeding the total of all our foreign trade.

At the present time the anxiety of merchants and manufacturers is as to where they shall find a market for their goods. Efforts are being made to open out Africa, and to increase our trade in other directions. Would it

not be well to turn our attention to our home markets as well, for when by our habits of drinking we squander, directly and indirectly, a greater sum than the value of all our foreign trade, we have a prompt remedy for the stagnation in our own hands?

The enormous burden of the drink expenditure is one that in the face of the world's competition we cannot continue to carry, and especially as it is accompanied by a deterioration of the workman, which makes the burden all the greater and outside competition all the more possible.

I will not further trespass upon your space, except to say that everyone who wishes to preserve our national status will be anxious to help all efforts for redeeming the country from the foul blot of intemperance, which paralyses its trade, corrupts its morals, and degrades its population to an extent that is beyond conception.

—I remain, yours truly,

WM. HOYLE.  
Claremont, Bury,

March 8, 1879.

- (a) Trade & Navigation Returns, Feb. 1870, p. 72.
- (b) Trade & Navigation Returns Dec. 1878, p. 12
- (c) Trade & Navigation Returns Dec. 1878. p. 14
- (d) Trade & Navigation Returns Feb. 1879, p. 71.
- (e) Trade & Navigation Returns Feb. 1870, p. 71.

## Review.

*Autobiography of J. B. Gough.* Revised and brought down to the present time.—This is a very handsome volume, divided into 28 chapters, and the last commences with the date November 24th, 1868, when occurred what is termed "our silver wedding." The chapter only occupies ten pages, and we name this that the reader may not expect to hear much about Mr. Gough's labours during the last few years. More particulars will, no doubt, be published at a future time. Every one who has read former editions will be pleased with this, as a beautiful collection of facts and pleasing incidents in the life of a great man are contained in the volume, and new readers will be charmed with its stirring events, humorous anecdotes, and pathetic appeals. The first part of the great orator's life will always have attached to it a kind of melancholy interest, inasmuch as it contains the fearful struggle's of a noble soul to break the powerful chain that bound him. We very highly recommend the volume to our numerous readers. It is published by Morgan and Scott, 12, Paternoster Buildings, London, whose edition of Gough's Lectures is also worthy of attention.

Great Giver of all good, to Thee we cry,  
Behold our hearts, how they in secret bleed  
For our dear country, lost, undone, indeed,  
Unless, in mercy, Lord, Thou drawest nigh.  
By her advantages exalted high, [shame,  
Yet cursed through drink, her glory turned to  
We know that she hath but her sins to blame,  
For that her commerce droops as if 't would die.  
E'en nations cannot sin unpunished long,  
Crime surely brings its own envenomed sting,  
Ills ever follow in the path of wrong,  
And on themselves both men and nations bring  
Their many woes. In mercy, Lord, forgive  
Our England's sins, heal her, and let her live.

DAVID LAWTON, PCR

To most men experience is like the sternlight of a ship, which illuminates only the track it has passed.

I never listen to calumnies, because if they are untrue, I run the risk of being deceived, and if they be true, of hating persons not worth thinking about.—*Montesquieu*.

Wherever you are, have your eyes and your ears about you. Listen to everything that is said, and everything

that is done. You must look into people as well as at them.—*Lord Cheslerfield.*

## **ESTABLISHED 1835.**

# **Independent Order of Rechabites, Salford Unity.**

*Registered under the New Friendly Societies Act.*

This Order, having been established over 40 years, and extending throughout the British Islands and the Colonies, offers to Total Abstainers a safe investment.

Men of sound constitution, and good moral character, from 15 to 50 years of age, may become members, securing, in case of sickness, from 2s. 6d. to 15s. per week, and in case of death, from £5 to £20. Contributions 1d. per week for each 2s. 6d. per week in sickness and 5d. per quarter for each £5 at death. This Order is the wealthiest, largest, and oldest Temperance Friendly Society, having over 33,000 paying members enrolled on its books.

Every information for the opening of New Tents and forming Districts may be had on application to the Secretary, R. HUNTER, 96 and 98, Lancaster Avenue, Fennell street, Manchester.

To Readers and Correspondents.

Reports for insertion should be brief, and must be in the Editor's hands by the 15th of each month.

## ***Rechabite & Temperance Magazine.***

APRIL, 1879.

### **Temperance Prayer Union.**

At the request of Mr. Henry Dunn, of Shipley, near Bradford, we have pleasure in calling attention to the above Union. In the words of the circular which he has issued respecting it, "Under a deep sense of the fearful evils resulting from drunkenness and the drinking customs of society, it has been suggested that an appeal should be made to Christians throughout the land, to make this a subject of special prayer. No attempt is made to underrate the importance of work in the direction of persuading individuals to adopt total abstinence, and of influencing the Legislature to enact laws for the mitigation or removal of intemperance, yet it is manifest that all our efforts and organisations have failed to remove the terrible drink curse from our midst. Although much good work has been accomplished, it is believed that the power of Prayer, in battling against these evils, has been much overlooked and woefully neglected."

It is hoped, therefore, that *all* who have at heart the temporal and eternal welfare of their fellow-men will unite in spirit at the Throne of Heavenly Grace, praying Almighty God for Christ's sake, that in His great mercy He would be pleased to awaken in His people more prayer and zeal for the removal of this tremendous evil, imparting all needed wisdom in the selection of the right means, and so blessing those means, that our beloved country may be speedily freed from that which is now its greatest curse, and which, if unchecked, will inevitably prove its ruin. It is obvious that vast results may be expected from a real and persevering combination of Christians in offering faithful fervent prayer. All are therefore invited to join this Union, and thus help in bringing blessings upon themselves, and upon their country, and, at the same time, promoting the glory of God.

- All persons enrolled as members of the Union engage (D.V.) to pray to Almighty God for the removal of the national sin *at least* once every week, viz.:—on the Lord's Day. It is hoped that all members who can do so will occupy some portion of the time between seven and ten o'clock every Sunday morning; but any member may adopt another hour, according to circumstances.
- All persons becoming members shall subscribe not less than threepence yearly towards defraying the expenses of the Union.
- Each person, on joining the Union, will receive a card of membership, which will be renewed annually in the month of January.
- It is found desirable to have some medium of communication between the members. With this view a

Monthly Letter is sent post free to all members who subscribe not less than 1s. per year to the funds of the Union.

Our H.C.R. and Bro. Pollard have joined this Union, and will be glad to give any information on the subject, or receive names of persons wishing to become members. Mr. Dunn gives away a vast number of tracts, and is a hard worker in the Temperance cause.

All communications to be addressed to Mr. Henry Dunn, Cross Banks, Shipley, Yorkshire.

Whenever you commend, add your reasons for doing so; it is this which distinguishes the approbation of a man of sense from the flattery of sycophants and admiration of fools.—*Sir Richard Steele.*

## **The Rechabite Burial Society.**

### **Its Origin, Progress, and Mode of Working.**

BY BRO. JAMES SHERWIN, SEC.

From the many inquiries made respecting the above Society, by members of our Order, I think it is absolutely necessary to give a brief outline of the origin and progress of the Rechabite Temperance and General Family Burial Society. The question of a Burial Society in connection with the I.O.R. is by no means a new one; for years the question was discussed in Tents, Districts, and Order, with a view of establishing such an organisation connected with the I.O.R. as would give the brethren an opportunity of insuring their families in a society which they might very well call their own. The question was discussed at one of the Moveable Conferences some years ago, and was left in the hands of the High Officers and Board of Directors: but nothing was done in the matter. The members of No. 1 District were very anxious about the much-talked-of society, expecting every month to hear something about it; they very patiently waited and watched, and eventually got tired of waiting, as nothing was done to develop the scheme; therefore, the question was raised again at the No. 1 District meetings, and a resolution was passed that the representatives bring the whole matter before their respective Tents, and report the result at the following District meeting. The Tents, through their representatives, were unanimous in giving their consent to co-operate with the District to establish a Rechabite Burial Society. The District appointed a committee to draw up a code of rules. The first meeting of the society was held on the 30th October, 1870, when the rules were agreed to. The principal rule provided that the business of the society should always be conducted by Rechabites, namely, three members from No. 1 District Board and one representative from each Tent in the District, which constituted the Board of Management, from which all officers were elected. It was decided to have the rules registered, which was done according to Act of Parliament. At this meeting the officers were appointed, including five collectors. Bros. H. Roper and H. Sharpies were appointed as a deputation to wait upon the members of the No. 1 Adult District at their next monthly meeting, also to Nos. 1, 5, 6, 7, and 900 Tents, with the view of getting the members to make a small grant of money to start the society. At a meeting held on April 13th, 1871, the deputation reported their praiseworthy efforts which had been the means of getting £12 from the Adult District Board, and £20 from the above-named Tents, making a total of £32, which sum was given into the treasurer's hands to lay the foundation of the society's funds. At the end of 1871 the first balance sheet showed the funeral fund to have a balance of £24 14s. 10d., the contingent fund £3 12s. 9d., or a total of £28 7s. 7d. The expenses had been £6 for funerals and £20 14s. 5d. for contingent expenses. Out of that sum a large amount of printing had to be paid for, and the necessary books provided. From that time to the present the society has increased yearly in numbers and funds. The total amount of funds at the close of last year was £258 10s. 8d.; the number of members 548, with nine collectors, six in Manchester, one in Liverpool, one in Cornwall, and one in Southsea (Hants). In commencing the present year we are hopeful that the society will be very rapid in its future progress, not in Manchester alone, but throughout a number of the large Districts of our Order in the United Kingdom. At the last Moveable Conference, held in 1877, the question of making some provision for the children of our brethren in case of death was discussed very freely, and the feeling of the brethren at the Conference was that it would be very desirable to have some plan adopted by which a sum of money could be given at the death of a member's child. There seemed to be a link wanting in our Order, and this evidently was the missing one. We had Juvenile Tents, but they only admitted candidates as members at six years of age, so that we had no provision whatever for children from three months to six years, the result being that in many cases our brethren entered their children in burial societies holding their meetings at public-houses, which is something all true Rechabites deplore. However, the Conference left the matter in the hands of the Board of Directors. As they had to revise the Juvenile Rules, they were requested to draw up a scheme at the same time which would remedy the evil complained about. The Board of Directors met for the purpose of carrying out the resolution passed at the Conference, namely, to revise the Juvenile Rules, and if possible to form a burial society in connection with the

Order. The Board of Directors obtained all the information it was possible to get on the subject, and also sent an invitation to the Juvenile District Secretary of No. 1 District to assist them in the work they had before them, which invitation was accepted, in order to promote the interests of our Juvenile Order. Having revised a suitable copy of rules which would meet the requirements of the Districts of the United Kingdom, the members of the Board were unanimously of opinion that it would be far better not to give sick benefits to Juvenile members, but have a uniform basis of funeral contributions and benefits; and as that plan had worked very successfully in the Manchester District for 15 years, they had no hesitation in recommending the large Districts to work on the Manchester plan. The question of making some provision for the children of members from three months to six years had a great amount of attention and consideration from the Board. Great difficulties appeared in the way of forming a Burial Society to be worked from the Head Office of the Order, therefore it seemed as if nothing could be done in that direction. As the question of the Rechabite Temperance and General Family Burial Society had been brought before their notice by Bro. Henry Roper, the president, who fully explained the manner in which the society was worked, the Board saw that this society was the very thing which would remedy the evil they had spent so much time to remove. In fact, it was the very thing that was wanted, and it was now in a good position, having overcome the difficulties which very often appear in the early history of similar societies. Therefore the Board of Directors passed a resolution that they would recommend the Society to the attention of the members of the Order, and especially to the large Districts, as that appeared to be the only practical method in which they could deal with the question which had occupied so much of their time and attention. In fairness to the High Chief Ruler and the Board of Directors, I must bear testimony that they have carried out the resolution to recommend the Society to the very letter, judging from the large number of letters and inquiries I have received, and which has already resulted in commencing branches of the society in Cornwall and at Southsea (Hants). I have written this article so that the members may get all the necessary information respecting the Society, and no doubt it will save unnecessary inquiries being made, as I hope that all the brethren throughout the Order read our valuable *Rechabite Magazine*, published monthly, which contains all our Order intelligence. In conclusion, I have to state that the Committee of Management are prepared to open branches of our Society in any part of the United Kingdom, and appoint suitable collectors or agents. Each applicant for the office of collectorship must be a Rechabite, and obtain a reference from the District Secretary in his District, to ensure success. The terms are 15 per cent, on amounts collected; 6d. each for every new member after three months' membership, and a fee of 1s. for each death which occurs in the collector's district. The collectors are provided with all the necessary material for working. Return sheets are provided, one of which the collector fills up at the end of every quarter, according to the printed headings, then deducts amount of commission due, and remits balance through post with a P.O.O., payable to the Secretary. In case of death of a country member, the collector sends a registrar's certificate of death, and the amount due will be at once forwarded through the post office to the collector, whose duty it is to pay at once to those entitled to receive the funeral money. I have thus endeavoured in as brief a manner as possible to give the origin and the progress of the Rechabite Burial Society, and hope and trust that my efforts to give the brethren information respecting this question may be satisfactory to all, and that the members will see that this is the link that has been missed by many in our Order.

## **Address to Bros. Alcock and Madge, South Australia.**

We have been requested to publish the full text of the address presented by the Board of Directors to Bros. Alcock and Madge, on their return to South Australia, after a very useful and pleasant visit to England. It reads as follows:—

*Address from the High Officers and Board of Directors to Bros. Alcock and Madge, of No. 81 District. South Australia, the occasion of their visit to England, in 1878.*

Beloved Brethren,—It has given very great pleasure to us, as the highest representatives of our Order, to welcome you in our midst, and receive, through you, the kind wishes of our brethren in South Australia. We hear, too, with equal pleasure, of the cordial reception accorded to you by tin brethren in the various Districts of our Order which you have visited since your arrival, and we cheerfully acknowledge the services willingly rendered by you in addressing large audiences on behalf of the extension of our principles. We have to ask that, on your return, you should convey our cordial greetings to the brethren in that far-distant colony, accompanied by the heartfelt desire that it will continue to prosper in the future in even a greater degree than it has done in the past. In conclusion, we wish you a safe and pleasant voyage, and hope that your visit to the mother country has been a beneficial one to yourselves, as we feel sure it has been a benefit to the Order with which we are connected.—Signed, on behalf of the High Officers and Board of Directors,

THOMAS CUNLIFFE, H.C.R.



ROBERT HUNTER, C.S.

Head Offices of the Order, 96 and 98, Lancaster Avenue, Manchester,

Nov. 7th, 1878.

In a letter to Bro. T. L. Green. P.H.C.R., of Sheffield, Bro. Alcock writes from Adelaide as follows:—

I am happy to inform you of my safe arrival home on Wednesday, January 10th. We had a long, tedious voyage, which would have been a pleasant one but for the drinking habits of the passengers. On leaving the vessel, in company with my wife and son, I was thanked for all I had said and done, and my wife received a most excellent account of what I had done to maintain order and promote the happiness of all on board, and they wished me God speed in the good work of total abstinence. My health is first-rate. We expect Bro. Madge soon. Will you kindly request Bro. Cunliffe to inform all the brethren of my arrival through the *Magazine*, thanking them for the many kindnesses which I received from them during my stay in the dear Old Country?

## Order Intelligence.

### Banbury.

CADBURY TENT, NO. 134.—A very successful tea and entertainment in connection with this Tent was held at the Temperance Hall, Banbury, on Wednesday, March 5th. Mr. W. Bayliss, secretary of the Banbury Temperance Society, and a leading trades-man of the town, presided, and referred to the address of the Right Hon. Mr. Forster at Bradford, and drew favourable comparisons between the Rechabite Order and other friendly societies. An excellent programme was then given to an attentive and appreciative audience, the room being well filled. An address on the principles of Rechabitism was given by Bro. Good ridge, D C R. Several jubilee songs were well rendered by Miss Holland, Mrs. Kench, Mrs. Lintolt, and Messrs. Good ridge and Fleet. This was the first public meeting in connection with the Tent; but in consequence of its great success, it is deemed desirable to hold many meetings of a similar character.

### Blackburn District.

CHURCH AND OSWALDTWISTLE.—On Saturday, March 8th, there was a united public meeting and entertainment in the Baptist School, Oswaldtwistle. Rev. W. Karfoot (Independent), Rev. J. Dawson, (Wesleyan), Bro. F. Atkin (Secretary British Temperance League), and Bro. Thomas Cunliffe, H C R, addressed the meeting. The Band of Hope Choir, conducted by Mr. S. Henderson, gave several pieces in capital style. Bro. T. Carter recited "The Drunkard's Story." A Tent will be formed as the result of the meeting. On Sunday afternoon, March 9th, a Temperance sermon was preached in the Wesleyan Chapel, Mount Pleasant, by Bro. F. Atkin.

MEETING AND ENTERTAINMENT.—On Monday evening, March 3, a public meeting and entertainment was held in James-street School, in connection with the Refuge Tent, No. 236. There was a very large attendance. In the unavoidable absence of Mr. Councillor R. Whittaker, the chair was taken by Mr. Isaac Bunyan.—Mr. T. Cunliffe (of Bolton) said that he had come that evening to speak about an Order which had had an existence of 40 years as a Temperance association, and they showed by precept and example that they would have nothing whatever to do with strong drink. They believed that it was of no use whatever as a matter of diet, because it did no good in the human frame. Immediately it got there it disturbed every organ and nerve with which it came in contact.—Mr. James Cavis (of Darwen), gave some interesting statistics showing the superiority of the Rechabite Order over other societies in matters of sickness, &c. He had with him six years' returns, from 1862 to 1867, both inclusive, showing that the average amount of sickness was 10 days 16 hours in the Oddfellows' Society, whilst in their own society for the past six years it was only five days. An excellent programme of songs, recitations, &c., was gone through, each piece being loudly applauded, and the meeting was brought to a close by the audience singing the National Anthem—*Blackburn Times*.

IS THE RECHABITE ORDER THE BEST SICK AND BURIAL SOCIETY?—This question was introduced for discussion at the weekly meeting of the Blackburn Temperance Society, in the Club-room, Cert street, on Wednesday evening, Feb. 26th, by Mr. James Cavis, of Darwen. There was a good attendance, Mr. Swain occupying the chair. Mr. Cavis took the affirmative of the question, and based his argument on the fact that there was less sickness and a lower death-rate in the Rechabite Order than any other, and said the society could

also be carried on with less payments than ethers. Mr. Cavis gave statistics of the societies of Rechabites and Oddfellows, from which he drew a comparison favourable to the former. Bro. H. Sharpies, of Manchester, confirmed these statements in an able address. Messrs. Mercer, Dobson, Geldart, Cort, We all, Tuke, and Magor took part in the discussion.

## Bolton.

TEA MEETING.—On Saturday evening, Feb. 15th, the members of No. 31, David Tent, No. 9, Bolton District, held their anniversary in the Temperance Hall, when a large number partook of tea. A public meeting was afterwards held, under the presidency of Bro. Thomas Cunliffe, High Chief Ruler of the Order, who said that the David Tent now possessed 116 members, and the sick fund amounted to £938 4s 10d, or £8 1s 10d per member, which, with £1 9s 8d each member was worth in the funeral fund, made £9 8s 6d per member. The evidence given before the Friendly Societies Commission was that members in ordinary friendly societies were worth from £3 to £4 each, so that the members of the David Tent were worth twice as much as members of societies which met at public-houses and allowed their members intoxicating drinks.—After an overture on the piano and violin by Miss Settle and Mr. Laitliwaite, a reading by Bro. Holmes, and "Let the hills resound" by the choir, Bro. Dimond said one of the objects of the Order was to promote the principles of total abstinence. The Order was a result of the Temperance reformation, and was able to present facts and statistics which had startled the general public. The Order had 33,000 members, with £186,000 in funds. During the past week he had visited several Tents in No. 7 Bolton District, and at Bury he found the members were worth £16 10s 8d each in the sick and funeral funds. During the cotton famine the Bury Tent suspended contributions, but gave sick pay, and yet had been able to save money. During the past year the receipts of Bury Tent from the money invested had been double the amount spent in sick pay. The speaker earnestly exhorted the audience to assist them in extending Rechabite principles.—Miss Blackmore sang "Within a mile of Edinboro' town" in good style, and Miss Settle and Mrs. Moore with excellent taste rendered the duet "O'er hill, o'er dale."—After a duet on the piano and violin, Bro. Ellis, of Manchester, one of the Trustees of the Order, said all the influences connected with Rechabitism were in favour of morality and religion.—Mr. Townson sang with great vigour "The Call to Freedom," being the Marseillaise Hymn set to temperance words.—Bro. 11. Roper, of Manchester, also a Trustee of the Order, called attention to the Juvenile Order of Rechabites, which numbered over 10,000 young persons, who in course of time would be added to the Adult Order.—Mr. Graham gave "The Death of Nelson." Messrs. Townson, Graham, and Wright rendered the glee, "To all you ladies," after which Bro. Hopkins sang "Hearts of Oak," which was encored, when he gave "Life is a River."—Bro. Charles Lowe, of Salford, moved vote of thanks to the deputation from the Board of Directors, which was seconded by Bro. Thomas Jones, and carried with acclamation.—Mrs. Moore sang "Come back to Erin;" Mr. Townson, "The pure crystal wine," being "The good Rhine wine" to temperance words; and Miss Blackmore, "Oh pretty red-lipped daisy." During the evening Miss M. E. Settle, assisted by Mr. E. Smith, presided at the piano.—Bro. Maxwell, secretary Primrose Tent, moved, and Bro. Heald, secretary Rose of England Tent, seconded, a vote of thanks to the choir, which was carried, and acknowledged by Bro. Leigh, who moved a vote of thanks to the chairman, which was seconded by Bro. E. Rothwell, secretary David Tent, and agreed to.—The proceedings concluded with the usual Rechabite hymn and the benediction.

## Bury.

WOOLFOLD TENT, No. 1207.—The second annual tea meeting was held in the Wesleyan School room, Woolfold, on Saturday, March 1st. The chair was occupied by Alderman Duckworth, ex mayor of Bury. The speakers were Bros Thomas Cunliffe, H C R, of Bolton; J. Dimond, of Southport; and the Rev H. A. Lawson, M A, of Bury. Mr A. Sutcliffe, of Bury, gave several readings. Bro A. C. Jamison, secretary, read the annual report, which was of an encouraging character.

## Clitheroe.

VALIANT FOR THE TRUTH TENT, No. 233.—On Tuesday evening, March 4th, a social tea and meeting was held in the Tent meeting-room, Castle-street. Bro John Hall, C R, presided after tea, and gave a short address on the past history of the Tent. Short addresses on the subject of Rechabitism, and the best means to be adopted for extending our Order, were given by Bros Robert Garner, W. Cooke, W. Howarth, G. Irring, E. Ford, I. Robinson, J. Bilsborough, and R Garner (secretary). Readings were given by Bros J. Preston and Sweetman; songs by Bros A. Langford, W. Orr, and W. J. Langford; glees by Bros 3. Myres, R. T. Myres, A. Langford, W. J. Langford, and Miss Myres. Bro Davies gave a solo on the concertina. Violin solos were given by Bros R Bilsborough and R. T. Myres (both juveniles). Bro J. A. Langford presided at the pianoforte. It was resolved to

send a memorial to R. Assheton, Esq, M P, requesting him to support Sir Wilfrid Lawson's local option resolution in the House of Commons. The secretary's report for the past year shows the Tent to be in a better financial position than it was twelve months ago, there being a clear gain of £26 10s 9d on the year. Only three members have received sick pay, and no death has occurred during the year.

R. GARNER, SEC.

## Colne.

FESTIVAL.—The annual tea party and meeting in connection with the Colne Rechabites were held in the Inghamite New School, on Saturday, March 1st. A large number sat down to tea, and after the tables were cleared the Rev R. Botterill presided, and was supported by Councillor Heap, of Burnley, and Messrs H. Greenwood, J. Hartley, J. Whittam (Burnley), and Z. Catlow (Bradford). Bro H. Greenwood read the annual report, which was of a most encouraging character. The receipts for the year ending December last amounted to £150 5s 9d, which after payments to sick members and other expenses, leaves a balance of £92 3s 3d. The accumulated capital in the sick fund now reaches £1,269 19s 1d. Number of male members, 92; female, 13; total, 105, an increase of five on the previous year. Average age on admission, 26; present average, 38. Nineteen members had been on the sick list, giving a percentage of 18, and the total period of sickness had been 105 weeks, an average of seven days per member. The past 13 years' average rate of sickness was six days twenty-three hours.—The funeral fund of No. 41 District now amounts to £620 7s 7d, an increase of £20 10s 10d., containing 154 members, four of whom had died during the year, making a death rate of 25 9 per 1000. During the past 13 years 23 members died, making a death-rate of 13.6 per 1,000.—The Juvenile Rechabite sick and funeral fund amounts to £63 1s 4d, an increase on the past year of £5 5s 6d. Number of male members, 16; females, 2; total, 18. The Chairman said the report presented a contrast to that just made in Parliament by the Chancellor of the Exchequer, for whilst the country's expenditure was increasing, the Rechabites were growing richer. They were growing younger also, when contrasted with the previous year, which averaged 39, whereas it was now only 38 years. A resolution in sympathy with Sir Wilfrid Law son's local option resolution, was moved by the Chairman and seconded, in an able address, by Councillor Heap, who in alluding to Rechabitism, said the thing was nearly three thousand years old Mr Whittam spoke in favour of Rechabitism, and con demned the practice of holding clubs in public houses, on account of its demoralising tendency. Mr Cut low afterwards addressed the meeting, and proved from statistics the longevity of teetotalers as compared with even moderate drinkers.—*Colne Times*.

## Dumfries.

The annual meeting of the Dumfries and Kirkcud bright District, No. 44, was held in the vestry of the Congregational Church, Irving-street, Dumfries, on Friday, February 14th, Bro J. Herron, D C R, in the chair. From the secretary's report, it appears that the number of Tents is six, and the total membership 305, being an increase of 53 during the year. The accounts showed a balance in favour of the funeral fund at the end of 1877 of £119 4s 1 ½d; an income during the year of £56 1s 10 ¼ d; and four deaths had occurred, entailing an expenditure of £40; leaving a balance in hand of £135 5s 11 ¾d. There are also four Juvenile Tents in connection with the District, with a membership of 138, being an increase of 12 during the year. There is at the credit of the juvenile funeral fund the sum of £27 19s 9 ¼d. After the revision of the District Bye-laws, the following office bearers were elected:—D C R, Bro Eraser, Dalbeattie; DDR, Bro Gourlay, Kirkcudbright; Secretary, Bro T. C. Farries, Dumfries; Treasurer, Bro F. Armstrong, Dalbeattie; PDCR, Bro. Herron, Dumfries; Auditors, Bros Brown and M'Kill. Bro Armstrong was appointed to represent the District at the Moveable Conference to be held in Manchester.

EXCELSIOR TENT.—The anniversary of the Excelsior Tent was celebrated the same evening by a soiree in the Irving-street Temperance Hall, at which Mr. C. Moore, C R, presided. The Tent, it was stated by Mr T. C. Farries, numbers scarcely 30 members; but it is financially in a most satisfactory position. It is the wealthiest in proportion to its membership of any in the District, having, in the course of three years, accumulated a capital of £58. There had only during these three years been some £5 or £6 paid on account of sickness among members—a proof at once that total abstinence promoted health, and that abstainers who wished to connect themselves with a provident society were more likely to get the full value of their money by joining one founded on abstinence principles, and which was consequently not burdened with the increased sickness which had been proved to exist among non-abstainers. There had not been a single member on the sick-list during the whole of this severe winter. Excellent addresses were delivered by Mr Southcot, Rev F. Binns, and Mr Rodger. The last named gentleman spoke specially of the Rechabite Order, of which he highly approved, as not simply a temperance society, but one which supplied what had long been a want in connection with the temperance

movement. It did not only seek to make them sober men, but it educated its members in provident habits, and helped to preserve that independent spirit which we were in danger of losing in these days. Songs were contributed during the evening by Messrs John Muir, J. Gibson, J. M. M'Millan, R. Kerr, and T. Stobo.

**ABSTAINERS' RIGHT TENT.**—The sixth anniversary of the above Tent was celebrated by a soiree on the evening of Friday, 31st January, 1879, when 170 persons sat down to tea. Provost Shortridge presided. He was accompanied on the platform by Bros. Dr. M'Culloch (honorary consulting physician of the Tent), Dr. John Cunningham (Tent Surgeon), Rev. J. Strachan, Bros. J. Glover, James Houston and J. H. Brown. The Chairman expressed his cordial sympathy with the objects of the Society. Bro J. H. Brown, secretary of the Tent, read the sixth annual report, which stated that notwithstanding that our Tent has been little over five years in existence, and though the claims on our sick fund have been many, there is still a considerable balance to the credit of this fund, viz., £58. Our membership at the beginning of 1878 was 100; at 31st Dec. it was 113, being an increase of thirteen during the year. He also read a short report regarding the Cunningham Juvenile Tent. Dr M'Culloch, Dr John Cunningham, and Rev Mr Strachan also addressed the meeting, urging the members to take greater interest in the Juvenile Tent and try to keep up its meetings regularly. Songs were given in the course of the evening by Mr Beattie, Miss Smith, and Mr S Smith, a reading by Mr Robertson, and a recitation by Mr Wilson.

## **Glasgow District.**

The twelfth half yearly meeting of the District Council was held in Dewar's Temperance Hotel on Saturday, Feb. 15, and was opened in due form by the D C R, Bro. Peter Braid wood. The reports showed that there had been one death during the half-year, and the balance left in funeral fund was £91 5s 3 ½ d. There had never been any deaths in the Juvenile Tents, and the District Juvenile Funeral Fund amounted to £27 5s 10 ¾d The District Trustees, Bros. Cooper, Taylor, and Brown, were re elected. Bro. George Rowe, of Greenock, was elected D C R; Bro. James Leiper, DDR; Bro. Robert Dunnachie, D T; and Bro. Richardson Campbell, D S (re-elected). Bro. Campbell was also elected representative to the Moveable Conference, and Bro. Braid wood alternate.

The first social meeting of the Scottish Favourite Juvenile Tent was held in the Rose-street Hall on Friday evening, Feb. 14, Bro. Richardson Campbell, Superintendent, in the chair. Addresses were delivered by the Chairman and Bros. Peter Braid wood, Cooper, and Rev. Wm. Halliday, of Guthrie Kvangelical Union Church. A capital programme was given entirely (with one exception) by the young folks. Bro. John Brown deserves great praise for the complete arrangements made by him on the occasion, The Tent is in a very flourishing state. Total abstinence is a condition required for membership in the church of Bro. Haliiday.

**NEW TEXT AT HAMILTON.**—A Tent of our honourable Order was duly opened at Hamilton on Thursday, 30th January, by Bro. Peter Braid wood, D C R, assisted by Bros. John Brown, D T, William Taylor, Graham, John Sinclair, and Richardson Campbell, D S. It was agreed to call it the "Hamilton True Blue" Tent, No. 1265. The meetings of the Tent are to be held in the British Workman every alternate Thursday.

## **Gwent and Glamorgan District.**

**MUMBLES TENT, No 193.**—A public meeting was held in connection with this Tent in the Gospel Hall, on February 26th. The chair was occupied by the Rev J. Spinsley. After a few opening remarks by the chairman, Bro J. Dimond addressed the meeting, and gave a very good address on the principles of the Order At the close the secretary, Bro G.Latimer, stated that the Tent had been in existence five and a half years, and now numbered 48 members. The Tent is worth £132 19s. We have also a Juvenile Tent, numbering 17 members.  
GEORGE LATIMER, SEC.

## **London District.**

**VISIT OF THE HIGH CHIEF RULER.**—The eighth annual meeting of the London District was held at the Temperance Hall, Blackfriars-road, on Saturday, February 22nd. The chair was occupied by Bro T Cunliffe, H C R, who was on a visit to the District.—On the Monday following, Bro T Cunliffe, together with the principal officers of the District, addressed a meeting at the Independent Chapel, Orange-street, Lcicester-square.—On Tuesday evening, the H C R met the District executive at the residence of the DS.—On Wednesday, the members celebrated their eighth anniversary at the Lambeth Baths, when 180 sat down to tea. In the evening a public demonstration was held, presided over by the Rev G M Murphy, when the following gentlemen addressed the meeting, which was a very large one:—B Whitworth, Esq, MP, J H Raper, Esq, Mr Black, and Bro T Cunliffe, H C R. During the evening, Bro Robertson Affleck was presented by the H C R, on behalf of the London District, with a silver medal, as a small token of their esteem for his untiring labours in the cause.

The following ladies and gentlemen enlivened the meeting by some excellent music:—Mr Quennell, Bro Hall, junr, Miss Hall, and Miss Price, of Reigate.

HENRY HAVELOCK TENT.—The annual soiree of this Tent was held in the Lecture Hall of the Vines Church, Rochester, presided over by Bro R T Jeffs, C R., when 70 of the brethren and friends attended. During the evening, tea, coffee, and biscuits, with a good supply of fruit, were served. These, with short addresses, recitations, and songs, made up a most enjoyable evening. Bro Jeffs presented Bro T Clifford with a beautifully bound copy of Dr F R Lees' "Temperance Commentary on the Bible," as he had been the means of bringing the largest number of candidates for initiation. Bro Jeffs then handed to Bro Smith a beautiful ink-stand and book slide of ebony and silver, subscribed for by the members of the Tent in recognition of his services as Tent Secretary during the past five years.

## Manchester.

RECHABITE BURIAL SOCIETY.—The annual meeting of the above Society was held on Thursday evening, February 20th, in the Temperance Union Offices, Market street, Manchester. The Society was commenced eight years ago, and from the commencement to the present time, it has met with great success, increasing yearly in members and funds. The report showed a balance in the funeral fund of £251 9s. 2d., in the contingent fund £7 7s. 6d., the total amount being £258 16s. 8d. The number of members is 548, increase on the year being £64 3s. 5 ½d. and 22 members. There are at present nine col lectors—six in Manchester, one in Liverpool, one in Cornwall, and one in Southsea (Hants). From the many inquiries made from the Districts throughout the Order, the board of management expect to have a very large increase of members. The officers elected for the year are Bro H. Roper, president; Bro H. Milner, sen., treasurer; Bro J. Sherwin, secretary; trustees, Bros H. Roper, H. Sharpies and T. Ellis. The board of management have pleasure in recommending the Society to the brethren of our Order.

J. SHERWIN, SECRETARY.

## Perthshire District.

PERTH.—The sixth anniversary soiree of the Knights of St. Johnstone Tent, No. 166, was held on the 31st January, in the Good Templar Hall, which was kindly granted to us by the Star of Hope Lodge. The chair was occupied by Bro. Ex-councillor Moncrieff, H M, and the attendance was very gratifying. Tea was served in excellent style, after which a most interesting programme was enjoyed. Addresses were delivered by the Chairman, Bros. Clark, D S, C Johnstone, and P. Campbell, Esq., H M, the latter having been a Reclsbite when the Order flourished in Scotland many years ago. He made affecting all us lons to that period, and believed there were now only two surviving members of the Perth branch of 1840. Bros. Charnley and Kemp gave pleasant readings, and an efficient glee party, under Mr. Serin gour's leadership, added greatly to the success of the meeting by their tasteful rendering of songs and harmonised airs. Members, 35 financial and 6 honorary; sick fund, £78; funeral fund, £22. Prospects bright The usual voles of thanks brought the meeting to a close.

OPENING A JUVENILE TENT.—On Saturday evening, 8th February, the Mayflower Juvenile Tent was duly formed in Perth. The juveniles are quite in earnest, and the Adult Rechabites displayed their interest in the Juvenile Branch by eight of their number enrolling themselves as honorary members. We expect the Order will derive much good from the establishing of the Juvenile section in this District.

JOHN CLARK, D.S.

## Peterborough.

The annual public tea meeting in connection with the Hope of the City Tent, was held on Tuesday, February 4th, in the Primitive Methodist Schoolroom, New-road. We were favoured with the services of Bro R Hunter, the C S of the Order, who rendered us very efficient help. At six o'clock about 170 persons sat down to tea, an i the public meeting afterwards was well attended. Our old friend Mr Alderman Roberts presided, and suitable and stirring addresses were delivered by Bros J Chamberlain, H Key, G Harrison, and R Hunter, C S. The speech of the C S was full of wise counsel and clear exposition of the principles of the Order, and will long be remembered by those who heard it. Bro R Maltby, tent secretary and P D C R, gave the report of the Tent as follows:—Present number of members 116, an increase of 17 members for the year; amount of funds £225 9s 4d, an increase of £37 5s for the year. We have paid to sick members £73 0s 5d during the year. A choir composed of Bros A Bonshor, J Foster, D Glover, J Smith, W T Wooton, and J Young, sang some Temperance melodies during the evening, accompanied on the harmonium by Mrs Meehan. A cordial vote of thanks to the chairman, speakers, and all who had contributed to the success of the meeting, was moved by Bro J Foster, seconded by Bro J Moore, secretary of Stamford Tent, and unanimously carried.

ROBERT MALTBY, Sec.

## Sheffield.

VICTORIA TENT, No. 965.—The members of the above Tent held their anniversary soiree on Monday, February 10th, in the Garden-street Congregational school, when between 40 and 50 sat down to an excellent meat tea. After tea the chair was taken by Councillor Percy Rawson, who is a staunch teetotaler. Bro. W. Waller, the Secretary, read the annual statement, which showed the gain for the year to be £33 16s 6d, and the total amount of funds in hand £226 3s 5 ½d. A very pleasant evening was spent, readings being given by Bros. Bridges and Single; recitations by Bros. Whitehead, Bedford, and Harrop; and singing by Mr. Crowther and Miss Nichols. Speeches were given by Bros. Marshall, Grayson, Parkin, and Mr. Hill.

WM. WALLER, Sec.

## Southern District.

ANNUAL MEETING.—The annual meeting was held in the Temperance Hall, And over, on Tuesday, January 21st, and was opened by Bro William tales, D C R. There were present Bros C. Greening, jun., D D R, W. Best, P D C R, and H J. Gundry, D S; and representatives from the following Tents:—Bud of Hope, Star of Hope, Earnest, Pride of Sarum, United we Stand, Fidelity, Hope of Andover, Weymouth, Friend in Need, David's Sling, Queen of the South, and Superior; letters were read from Excelsior and Reliance stating the reasons they were not represented. The District Secretary's report referred to the death of Bro Rev D. Hann, D T. The Henry Gundry Tent, No. 1260, located at Portsmouth, was instituted December 6th, with 14 members, since which they have had several added to their number, eight being proposed at the last Tent meeting. The D S reported a total of 683 members, shoeing an increase for the year of 30 members. The total worth of the District is now £610 1s 8 ¼d. The auditors' report says, We think we should be doing the Secretary an act of injustice if we did not add, by way of report, that the books are kept in a most business like and efficient manner, consequently rendering auditors' work easy and explicit." It was unanimously resolved that a letter of sympathy be sent to Mrs. Hann, the same to bear the signatures of the District Officers. The representatives from Hope of Andover, Friend in Need, and Superior Tents referred to the visit of the District Secretary; they reported that his visit was much appreciated, that the Tents had worked better, and that the secretary's work was much easier since his visit. Bro. H. Gundry, D S, was elected representative to the Moveable Conference, to be held at Manchester in August. The election of officers resulted as follows Bros Charles Greening, jun., DCR, of Earnest Tent, Dorchester; George Miller, DDR, of Queen of the South Tent, Lytehett Minuter; William Best, DT, of Queen of the South Tent, Lytchett Minster; William Eales, PDCR, of Pride of Sarum Tent, Salisbury; Henry Gundry, DS, of Weymouth Tent, Weymouth. The next District Meeting will be held at Fordingbridge. The officers were installed by Bro. Eales, PDCR.—A public tea was provided in the Temperance Hall by Bro. Childs, of which about 70 members and friends partook. A public meeting was afterwards held, presided over by the Rev T. E. M. Edwards, pastor of the Congregational Chapel, and addresses were delivered by Bros. William Eales, of Salisbury, J. W. B. Emery, of Farm borough, Henry Gundry, of Weymouth, and Charratt, of Andover. Bro. W. West lake, secretary of Hope of Andover Tent, read the annual statement, which showed that the Tent had prospered during the past year both in members and funds.

## Stamford.

EXCELSIOR TENT, No. 85.—An anniversary of the above Tent was held in the Oddfellows Hail on Sunday and Monday, February 2nd and 3rd. Two sermons were preached on Sunday afternoon and evening by Bro. R. Hunter, of Manchester, Corresponding Secretary of the Order. His texts were "Do thyself no harm," and "By their fruits ye shall know them," and his argument was that it is a sin against nature to take alcohol as a beverage. The hall was well filled, and the speaker was listened to with marked attention. On Monday the members and friends sat down to a first class tea, after which the public meeting was presided over by Mr. Markham. The report read by the Secretary, Bro. J. Moore, showed a low rate of sickness for the year and a balance of £93 in the sick fund of the Tent, which has 40 members. Bro. Maltby, of Peterboro, gave an address, after which Bro. Hunter spoke of the advantages to be received by joining the Order, they having much less sickness and longer lives than any other friendly society. Mr. Clapham, in proposing a vote of thanks to the chairman, said to insure against sickness was a grand thing, though he believed much sickness was self-inflicted by not living in harmony with the laws of nature, eating proper food, drinking pure water, breathing pure air, &c., which would extend life considerably.

Mr. Hinson seconded the resolution, which was carried unanimously, as was also a vote of thanks to Bro. Hunter. A very pleasant meeting was closed by singing the doxology.

## Upper Mill.

FRIENDSHIP TENT.—On Shrove Tuesday, about 50 of the members and their wives sat down to an excellent knife and fork tea in the Mechanics' Institution, provided by Bro James Robinson, confectioner. A public meeting afterwards took place, presided over by Bro James Lawton. The secretary, Bro John P. Wild, lead the report as follows:—The Friendship Tent was opened in December, 1843, with nine members, five of whom are still alive and four are in the room. Our Tent has steadily increased, at the present time numbering 59 members, holding 201 sick shares and 117 funeral shares; also 16 wives, holding 28 shares, and two widows holding three shares in the funeral fund. The Good Templar movement has added to our ranks about 20 members, and the same number has been drafted from our Juvenile Tent. Our total worth at present is over £200 in the sick fund, and about £2 per member in the funeral fund. We are worth per member in the sick and funeral fund £5 15s 5 ¼d. Our average age is 30 years and 4 days. During the last year we have had 10 members sick, to whom we have paid £12 17s 6d. The average sickness of the 59 members has been 3 days and 11 hours, an average of 4s 4 ¼d per member during the year. We have during the year added nearly £20 to the sick fund. Our Juvenile Tent meets monthly, and now numbers 13 members. There has not been a single case of sickness during the year, and their fund is over £20. I wish to impress on our members the advisability of attending their Tent meetings, instead of sending their contributions by other members. Nothing looks better than to see our Tent room filled with its members, and the officers at their posts.—Bro W. R. Buckley gave the "Postman's knock" Bro. Henry Sharpies, B D, of Manchester, explained the working of the Order in a homely style. He advised the brethren to look after the juvenile members, and instruct them in the affairs of the Order, as in the course of nature the older members would have to succumb and the young ones take their places. Several very important questions were asked and replied to by Bro Sharpies. Bro James Bradbury gave a recitation and a temperance song. Bro Tyas made a few remarks, and votes of thanks brought the meeting to a close.

I know of no manner of speaking so offensive as that of giving praise, and closing it with an exception.—*Sir Richard Steele.*

Say nothing respecting yourself either good, bad, or indifferent; nothing good, for that is vanity; nothing bad, for that is affectation; nothing indifferent, for that is silly.

Session, 1879.

Philosophical Institute of Canterbury, New Zealand.

Presidential Address

By Professor A. W. Bickerton,

On the

The Genesis of Worlds and Systems.

(From the "Press" April 5, 1879.)

Christchurch: Printed at the Office of the "Press" Company, Limited, Cashel Street. 1879.

## Presidential Address.

The following address was delivered by the President, Professor Bickerton, on Thursday Evening, at the Conversazione given in connection with the Philosophical Institute:—

LADIES AND GENTLEMEN.

After much consideration, I have decided to depart from the custom of giving a general view of the advance of science, feeling that the stupendous strides of the last few years are more fitting a course of lectures than a short address. I shall therefore devote the time at my disposal to one branch of science, namely, astronomy, which, from our occupying the southern portion of the globe is one of the few physical sciences which possess local interest.

A new country with its strange fauna and flora is the naturalist's paradise. But the isolation, the want of differentiation in his studies and laboratory work, must ever render it a desert to the experimental physicist. The impossibility of ascertaining fully the progress of any branch of science by the few intellectual rays which reach so far from the focus of intelligence will also tell in preventing much original research. But of course locally characteristic natural phenomena, if any exist, form an exception to this rule. This is the position of stellar astronomy. A circle of the heavens is hidden from the view of the great men of Europe, and, as it happens a

circle singularly rich in phenomena, containing as it does that magnificent region of the galaxy about the Southern Cross and the two Magellanic Clouds.

It is true that the harvest of this work was reaped by Herschel with his great reflector at the Cape. But there is still work for the gleaner, and in a large field of research it may be considered that his observations were only seed sown, the harvest of which may be reaped by future observers. I refer to all those phenomena in which the effect of time gives the chief interest.

As the study of astronomy has thus an undoubted claim upon our consideration, I shall not apologise for offering to you a brief account of a new cosmical hypothesis which has occupied a considerable portion of the society's time lately. An hypothesis which appears to offer a possible explanation of many of the more peculiar among celestial phenomena. It certainly suggests many definite fields of astronomical research, the results of which, even if unfavourable to the hypothesis, cannot fail to be of value to science.

To the mathematician also it offers many novel problems. In fact, if this theory should attract attention so far as to pass into that first stage of success as to be called fallacious in principle, impracticable in detail, and absurd on the face of it; or, better still, should it succeed so well as to promote rational discussion worth answering, or obtain that highest eulogy the world knows how to give—of being discovered not to be new, it is probable that the problems it offers will be fertile ground for the new calculus of vectors to take root in and expand itself, for both are apparently just fitted for each other.

This being a popular gathering, I propose giving a rapid sketch of the progress of astronomy, and its present position, especially of the phenomena which this theory purports to link together and bring under the domain of recognised scientific law. This will also enable the extension of our ideas, which the theory suggests, to be better understood. I need not tell you that this sketch must be a very hasty one, as from the opposition which has generally attended progress in astronomy, every step would require much space to discuss it fully.

It is certainly not now necessary to demonstrate that the earth is not the centre of the universe, although we all know the amount of prejudice and obstruction which had to be overcome to get even this much admitted. But the whole view of the universe and the utterly insignificant position the earth occupies in it has been achieved only by very hard steady work, in the face of the most virulent opposition, and probably even now some would not be prepared to concede all the ground claimed by astronomers.

Nor need we wonder at this. It is natural for all of us to think more highly of anything which immediately concerns us than it probably deserves, and it is necessarily the peculiarity of ignorance to intensify this failing. The stay-at-home resident of a small town grows up thoroughly convinced that it is the undoubted centre around which the world revolves, and for which the metropolis exists as a place for the supply of the town's necessities, and although the disputes of the terrace and the square render it doubtful as to the exact position of the axis, yet the broad fact of its local existence is never questioned. So the untravelled mind sees in the sun, moon, and stars, ministering lights, having the sole office of rendering this earth a fit habitation for man. But occasionally, amidst the long ages of almost brute-like stupidity, periods of enlightenment have occurred, when men have thrown away this garment of egotism—have looked beyond mere self and tried earnestly to gauge man's place in nature. Thus we find Democritus teaching that the milky way was a belt of stars. Aristarchus showing the Greeks that the sun is the centre of the system, and the earth and planets revolve round it. Eratosthenes measuring the size of the globe and placing meridians and parallels on its surface. Then again, for many ages the cobbler stuck to his last, the practical man to his wooden plough, and the scholar to his traditions. No speculative theorist disturbed the calm, and gradually the world again became flat, and men's ideas stale and unprofitable. But, after many centuries of this hibernation, Tycho Brahe, Kepler, Galileo, led on by Copernicus, with the insane folly of visionaries, neglected their business and again went star gazing. Many others followed the pernicious example of these unpractical dreamers, until the long succession of such lunatics, and the wonderful method of their madness, impelled even the most stolid to look for themselves, and then the astonishing discovery was made that men were not entirely composed of pocket and stomach. In fact, that unless development were to proceed backwards, and the tail again manifest itself, intellectual food was perhaps as essential as corporeal. In this way, after many efforts, the human mind has escaped its leading strings, has travelled, and seen on what a vast scale the universe has been constructed, has gauged the sun and seen him to be a million times larger than the earth, and the millions of stars, suns like himself; has seen the earth sink into a small particle of cosmical dust of insignificant dimensions, compared to even the visible universe.

But do we think less highly of the earth for these extensions of our ideas? Certainly not. Like the travelled man returning to his boyhood's home, it is true the church spire may have lost its relative grandeur and altitude, and he no longer looks in his back garden for the earth's axis, yet he loves the place none the less, and finds the brook as clear and the wild flowers as fragrant as when he left; with all kinds of poetic essences diffused around everything, which it never would have had without the wider knowledge he has brought back with him.

So whilst the universe has been made to reveal its myriads of blazing suns and systems of suns, the earth



has unfolded to our ages an endless diversity of treasures, and thus at once an infinity of massive grandeur and an infinity of detailed beauty have been simultaneously discovered.

But astronomers tell us that among the myriads of ordinary stars or rather suns which form the milky way, there are many erratic members and many bodies altogether unlike the general order. Some ten thousand stars are such close pairs that they appear to form twin suns, sometimes each of the twins have still smaller suns revolving round the larger one. In some places the stars appear so thickly spread that to the naked eye they are mere specks of mist, but the telescope says they are clusters of suns. Over a hundred stars appear to be altogether abnormal in their properties, shining with varying intensity at different times, and at some of their bright periods shining much more intensely than at other times. Quite like a modern belle going through regular short cycles of brilliancy, as each day rolls on, and, like her also, having as it were, London and country seasons, for, after going through long periods of brilliant dress and undress, it gradually sinks into humdrum country life, scarcely even dressing for dinner. In fact the vagaries of variable stars are so extraordinary that they appear without any law or order; but, as Mrs Grundy rigidly regulates the apparently giddy proceedings of society's neophyte, so it appears possible on this new hypothesis to show that all this apparent stellar disorder conforms to laws as completely as the most carefully watched young lady.

Besides these variables which have been long out, it occasionally happens that a star blazes forth before the astonished gaze of beholders, and for a time monopolises all attention. But after a little while, sometimes only a few weeks, sometimes a year or so, this meteor like sun gradually loses its brilliancy, and passes away altogether, or becomes a very insignificant little star: the temporary star having no longer any existence except in history. The celestial temporaries have one advantage over our earthly stars, they are sufficiently rare that it is seldom any one is cut out by the appearance of a rival. Two of these stars have however appeared within the last twelve years.

But there appear several reasons to suppose that there are quite another class of stars, modest retiring suns, of altogether an unobtrusive character. Suns which have put up their shutters, and retired from business. Suns with very little vitality, or perhaps altogether dead suns.

In addition to all these varieties of stars there are a very wonderful class of bodies called nebulae. These are delicate luminous clouds, probably consisting of masses of glowing gas. Some of them are of very definite structure, spherical, spindle-shaped, spiral, comet like, and frequently strewn all over with brilliant stars. Some of them are so large that the size of our whole solar system would be hardly a sufficient unit to measure them with. Most of these nebulae are spread out in two sheets covering a large part of the celestial sphere at the poles of the galactic circle.

As in the human family so with the stellar inhabitant of space, many are associated into well marked groups; as we have families, tribes, nations, and the whole race, so we have our solar family, our multiple star system, and probably, by the recent researches of Procter, the whole visible heavens is a definite and connected system, consisting chiefly of a vast ring of stars, with nebular caps at both its poles.

All of these bodies appear to be moving indiscriminately about; without common direction or purpose, although certain pairs and groups seem to have considerable community of motion. But they move fast in those celestial regions, they quite out-do our Canterbury snail ways, a thousand times as fast as our fastest railway train is only a walking star, and I feel afraid to tell you how fast some can run. And every star is pulling hard at all its near neighbours. The nearest star to our sun must have a velocity of sixty miles an hour to escape the sun's attraction.

But amidst all this flying about, this indescribable hurry, these powerful attractions, surely you will say there must occasionally be collisions. The hypothesis I am about to describe suggests that this is the case, but especially says further that if they do knock against each other the blow may be a mere graze of the two out sides or sometimes a large piece of each may be struck off, and in extremely rare cases they may meet fair; but as this latter is so extremely rare, the other cases are those chiefly considered, and so the theory is called *Partial Impact*. I shall now try and show you what a perfect Aladdin's lamp of possibilities this theory possesses.

A gentleman who was present at a bombardment told me that he had seen the cannon balls strike pieces off the cannon and travel on in space. But the energy of each particle of a star at collision is hundreds of thousands times greater than in a cannon ball, so the stars also will strike a piece off each where they strike one another, the remainder passing on in space. The proportional resistance to motion produced by impact in the escaping parts would be thousands of times less than if a cannon ball of butter just grazed the top of an iron wall; in fact the large pieces not coming into collision will be certain to travel on. So the effect of the collision of our two stars will be to strike a piece off each other where they touch each other, and each star will travel on, with a slice cut off its side. The parts of each which met will be left behind by both the retreating bodies, and will probably remain where the collision occurred. But, owing to the way it has been struck off, the two sides being impelled in opposite directions, it cannot help revolving, and it is not unlikely that nearly all the thousands of rotating bodies and systems in the universe may have thus been set spinning by partial impact. At least,

although we do not know what other agencies may ultimately be found to be capable of producing rotation, at present it seems to be the only one known.

Everyone, now-a-days, knows that heat is a kind of motion, and that ordinary motion destroyed, produces heat. An axle, screw, or gimblet, without grease, gets hot if quickly used. A rifle bullet makes a flash of light on striking the target, and often melts. A particle of matter plunges into our atmosphere and becomes so hot as to form a shooting star. A school boy takes his caning, and speaks of it as a warming. We rub the little cold hands of the wee ones who have been playing with the snow, and we stamp our feet when the thermometer sinks below zero. So if stars come into collision they will develop heat in the part struck off as striking a flint and steel strikes off a spark. In fact, our two stars may be considered as flint and steel meeting one another, striking off a spark, and passing on in space. Any student of heat will tell you that if the motion of a piece of iron be destroyed he can calculate the temperature produced, if he knows its speed, and that the heat does not depend on the size of the iron, only on its velocity. So when our dead suns come into impact the temperature will not depend on the size of the spark cut off, only on the velocity destroyed. But if the piece cut off be small, it has but little attractive power to keep it together, and the particles are so hot (or moving so fast) that every single molecule flies completely away and disappears into space. Does it not look extremely likely that here we have our temporary stars, bursting forth when the collision occurs, and disappearing when its particles travel away into space? It certainly appears very likely.

But what about the two large pieces (the two wounded stars), a slice has been cut off each, and the hotter interior exposed; friction has also developed heat, and so when they become round again they will be hotter on one side than on the other. As they revolve they must almost certainly form a variable star, and the struggle of the two rotations will make this variation pass through long cycles, just as a spinning top oscillates if it has a kick. You will be shown a model which shows this action. But as two variable stars are often produced together the lists were searched to see if any pairs could be found, and a chart has been made from Chambers' list, and it shows sixteen well-marked pairs, or thirty-two connected stars out of one hundred and twenty. Unless we suppose this spotted condition to be a disease, and catching, it is difficult, except on this view, to account for the pairs. Not only do we thus find these pairs existing, but some variable stars are close to the places where old temporary stars formerly existed, and also variable stars have become ordinary stars, as we should expect them to do when the temperature became uniform; and doubtless when the whole are carefully matched, many will be found to be gradually approaching the state of uniformity exhibited by ordinary stars. But it is not necessary to suppose that the piece struck off each should always be such an excessively small ratio as to be projected into space, although the temperature produced by the collision will be almost always high enough to make gas of the coalesced part. This part may have mass enough to remain a permanent nebula. In this case reasons have been urged that render it probable that at first this gas would tend to take a spindle shape. Afterwards many possibilities present themselves according to the varying circumstances of the collision, for it is perfectly evident that these may be very numerous indeed. As the bodies may vary from cold dense solid bodies to rare masses of hot diffused gas, they may originally be moving very fast or very slowly, they may have been spinning with great velocity or hardly rotating at all. They may be nearly the same size, or a very unequal pair, and it does not need a Newton to see that any of these states will influence the result attained at collision and afterwards. The only effects which appear absolutely certain to follow partial impact is that rotation must ensue, that the matter will tend to spread out more or less in a plane, with frequently gas at the poles, and that the middle body produced by the collision will generally be very hot, proportional to the mass.

In the papers presented to the institute, the possible conditions of impact under which the different kinds of nebulae may have been produced have been discussed. Thus it is suggested that the spiral nebulae may have been produced by the collision of two previously existing nebulous masses otherwise it appears that the extreme pressure would have destroyed the central part of the spiral. Singularly enough these nebulae are found in the nebulous portion of the celestial sphere, such evidence as this gives great probability to this theory. It is suggested that the comet like nebulae are masses with a high resultant velocity; that the planetary nebulae are gaseous shells produced by the outrushing gas leaving the position of impact, and travelling outwards in every direction into space. Reasons based on the dynamical theory of gases have been urged why the heavier chemical molecules should return and form the star which is very often seen at the centre of these bodies. Anyone who has followed this speculation must see that if this theory does represent the birth of nebulae, they must be changing their shape, and sometimes new ones will be formed and old ones die out, and this is really the case. They vary; many new nebulae have not only been found, but some have disappeared again, and many that used to exist are lost.

But such mere gas as nebulae must not be allowed to detain us. There are far more solid matters to be discussed yet. Thus it has been suggested that the solar system is not the kind of family Laplace has pictured it, with the sun as the parent and Neptune as the eldest brother, down to the youngest Mercury, or perhaps Vulcan. But it implies that the whole system are twin brothers and sisters, all born together. A deserted family whose

severed parents are wildly travelling space. The collision which gave the sun its heat gave it its rotation, threw off the masses which become planets, set these spinning also, giving them their accompanying masses of cosmical dust we call moons. That same great whirl set all the planets travelling in orbits all in the same direction, and nearly in one plane. The theory also attempts to show how the elliptical orbit became nearly circular. How the original rotation of the two colliding masses would disturb the exact symmetry of the rotation of the planets. It attempts to account for many things too numerous to speak of here. But you will say the solar system could not have been born in two different ways. Well hardly. Then you must dispose of Laplace's nebular rings; perhaps so, but even Laplace's theory demands a rotary nebula to start with, and it would therefore still seem that he needs partial impact to provide him that. But I will tell you, in confidence, that although we have not dared yet to put it in black and white, yet, in our discussions, we have even hinted that Laplace may have been altogether wrong, and have whispered many, many reasons, on modern views of energy and the dynamical theory of gases, why we think so. I will tell you one. According to Laplace the surface of the nebulous sun should go on getting faster and faster as ring after ring was thrown off, but as a matter of fact the sun's energy of rotation is only one fifty-thousandth part of that necessary to throw off a ring, and those among us who believe in the conservation of energy ask where is that energy gone? It is thought possible that not only may bodies thus be set travelling around the central mass, but that frequently the resultant velocity left in them may carry them quite away from it altogether. It is suggested that possibly the comets and shooting stars which illuminate our sky may have been thrown off at the birth of temporary stars or systems, and as they travel through space come accidentally into our solar system, and are sometimes kept within it by the retarding action of an approaching planet, or by some other cause. Almost certainly they were not born with the sun and planets, for of all the comets observed, as many go against the direction of the planets as with it, so we really must consider the comets as foreign intruders, and as such treat them with the contempt they deserve. But you will say millions of millions of meteorites strike the earth each year; exactly, probably scarcely a stellar collision has occurred which did not strew space with millions of homeless particles left to wander recklessly through space, until they met destruction at the hands of some pitying cosmical shark, who sympathised with them in their loneliness and so took them in. But if there is so much dust flying about space it must interfere seriously with our view when we look at very distant objects, as muddy water is opaque if deep. Struve held manfully to his opinion, based on good evidence, that distant light did suffer extinction, and does this not appear to offer a very good reason for thinking he was right? But other things may be said of our two wounded stars, flint and steel, whom we left travelling in space. We have seen how a spark was struck off which became a temporary star, a nebula or a system, according to circumstances. We also suggested that flint and steel might become a pair of variable stars, getting more and more distant from each other. It is possible however, if their original proper motion were small, or if they had much cut off them, that they may return again and form a connected pair, and add another to the many twin suns already existing. It is suggested that probably many of these became connected in this way. It is known that some binaries are variable. It is possible that these stars may come into collision a second time, and even as an extreme possibility more than twice, and it does not appear unlikely that this is really the case with Tycho Brahe's temporary star. There is one thing that makes it likely. All the text-books speak of it as a possible variable with a period of 313 years. Now, it appeared absolutely certain that if such a thing as consecutive collision did happen, it would be longer between the first pair of impacts than between the second pair of impacts, and on taking the dates given by Herschel, it was found that the first interval was 319 and the second 308 years, thus adding another to the very remarkable series of coincidences which have been found in working out this hypothesis.

But people are never satisfied without trying to ride a hobby to death, and really it does seem going rather to extremes to suggest, as has been done, that nearly all we see in the heavens, all the millions of suns, all the nebulae, are parts of one great system produced by the impact of two stupendous bodies meeting in free space. A system so extensive that it would probably take light at least a hundred years to pass through the mass, while of the bodies themselves, some are so big that the number of times our sun would be required to measure their volume must be reckoned by thousands. Thus has the hobby been goaded on, and it is not absolutely certain that it has thrown its riders yet. It is true Procter has been for years carefully laying down a veritable railroad for just such a hobby, when he was working out his great research on the visible universe, so that it was easy work for it; it ran like a snowball down a hill, gathering speed and proportion as it went. But I must tell you how Procter did this work. He collected statistics of the number of stars and nebulae, of star clusters and star motion. He and his friends placed all these on charts and when they were finished, a single undoubted system was seen, which he describes roughly as a ring or spiral of stars, with our solar system at or about the centre, and with two caps of nebulae covering the poles of this ring. So when the picture of the risible universe, given by Procter, came to be examined, it was found to be so like that which had been suggested as likely to result from "partial impact," that it was felt the visible universe itself must be one of its numerous offspring.

But what does such an idea of the origin of the universe suggest to our mind of the contents of space

generally? Clearly that if two such bodies, why not many, some almost infinitely large compared to them? Why not go with Kant, and think that as the earth and its moon are part of the solar system, as this system is part of the galaxy, why not the galaxy a part of a still more imposing system? Anyhow, the idea of space suggested by this theory is that it contains an infinite number of masses varying in size from the particle of hydrogen to the stupendous mass which physicists look forward to as the final condition of the visible universe.

Of all the speculations of modern thought no two ideas have obtained stronger hold upon the human mind than the indestructibility of matter and of energy. But although energy is indestructible it is generally supposed it will pass into an unavailable form, and although matter cannot be lessened in quantity, yet it is believed it will all be aggregated into one stupendous mass. Consequently our great mathematical physicists look forward to a time when any motion but heat will be impossible, and all life will be extinct. Yet this dreary, this repugnant conclusion, has apparently been the only possible result that could happen from any of the standpoints from which the laws of nature have hitherto been viewed. It is no small recommendation that the theory of "partial impact" offers a possible mode of escape from this melancholy prospect. It suggests that if gravitation does aggregate and tend to drain space, impact produces dispersion. Everything moves more slowly at a distance from an attractive source, so if bodies are moving indiscriminately in all directions, it is clear that where they move most slowly they will certainly congregate together, thus tending in the opposite way to gravity, and in this way may be kept up a more or less uniform distribution of matter in space. The theory shows that the radiated heat of the sun falls upon the cosmical dust which shuts us in as a curtain, and it is thus prevented from being lost; it also shows how from various reasons we must suppose that inconceivable numbers of particles of cold gas are slowly travelling space, and as these particles touch any part of this heated matter, it uses the heat of the body to project itself at increased velocity into more distant regions of space, there perhaps helping to build up new bodies capable of carrying on anew all the wonderfully complicated functions which matter and energy are playing in the visible universe. In this way we hope that this theory will remove these repulsive blots of dissipated energy and aggregated matter, which deface the otherwise fair and stately structure reared by modern science, so that the intellectual cravings of the human mind may find in it the invigoration and rest it requires.

Thus the entire picture this hypothesis presents to the mind is that of a cosmos, infinite and immortal. In it a being travelling through eternity, on the wings of light, would see as little permanent change as does the sea bird over the restless ocean. He would sometimes be present at the nativity of galaxies, see solar systems in all stages, see suns absorb planet after planet, each time flickering up for a few thousand years, and finally, after having devoured all its family, shrink smaller and smaller, and then become less and less brilliant, until the last faint glimmer had died out, and a vast cinder is all that remains of that former scene of teeming life and brilliant beauty. Then he might watch the approach of dead suns, and see, Phoenix like, new suns arise from those cold masses of ashes, and as he watches the amazing flash of the collision he may see flights of comets and meteors emerge from the flames and start on their long journey. Travelling on, he may see worlds absorb their enveloping nebular curtains, see others solidifying. In some witness the garment of organized life gradually extending itself and clothing the surface with vitality, and should he stay to take a detailed look, he would probably sometimes see forms of life so strange, so weird, that the animated engines of Erewhon would be commonplace compared to them. Is it possible that in some white hot body he would see viscous silicon building itself into complex protoplasmic molecular skeletons, developing organ after organ, and breathing forth its halogen breath? Perchance he might watch a silicon monster tenderly waiting on a sickly friend, and feeding it with delicately flavored molten flint broth. But, methinks I hear someone whisper, "I thought so. Undoubtedly he is mad." So, remembering the fate of Solomon do Caus, and being desirous of retaining my liberty, I conclude by thanking you for the attention with which you have listened to me.

Copy of Letters Sent to "Nature" on Partial Impact

Professor Bickerton.

New Zealand PRINTED AT THE "PRESS" OFFICE, CASHEL STREET, CHRISTCHURCH, CANTERBURY. 1879.

## **Contents.**

# **Copy of Letters Sent to "Nature" on Partial Impact.**

BY PROFESSOR BICKERTON.

Canterbury College, New Zealand University.

THE following fifteen letters were sent to "Nature," with the intention of their being published one each week, in order that the essential idea of each letter should stand alone, without being prejudiced by any inaccuracy or supposed inaccuracy of thought or fact in the other letters; also that the class of ideas contained in "partial impact" should be gradually appreciated. It was believed that this method would elicit discussion, and the weakness or merits of the hypothesis might be ascertained before publishing the whole in a book.

This was the more desirable, as, of course, but little discussion could occur in a young colony like New Zealand.

The letters are here printed in the form, and with the dates, on which they were sent to "Nature." All the letters have the fault of being too condensed, to comply with the regulations of "Nature "; in fact most of the easier reasoning is taken for granted.

So many interesting facts have been elicited since they were written, that the letters might advisedly be written again; but, as it would be many months before I could spare the time to do so, and for other reasons, I have left them as they were. Some of these new facts appear to actually demonstrate the hypothesis in its outlines.

A rough outline of the theory, is that there are stupendous numbers of bodies distributed throughout space, almost all in a state of motion, and that probably most of these bodies are not moving in regular orbits. Consequently they occasionally come into collision, and this probability is also increased by their mutual attractions. Secondly, that, in case of a collision occurring, it is far more probable that the impact should be partial than that they should meet fair, centre to centre. Thirdly, that, in the event of such a partial collision, generally, a piece common to both will be struck off, which will coalesce, and the two wounded stars would pass on in space. Fourthly, that these two will be hotter on the wounded side, and, as they revolve, will form variable stars. The middle part forming a temporary star, if a very small ratio of the whole, otherwise a nebula or a system according to the varying circumstances. The two variable stars may escape each others attraction, and that of the middle body, and may travel into space; but often they may be attracted back by the increased attraction, which must act upon them after collision, and the two will then become a double star, orbitally connected.

It will be at once seen that if this theory represents the truth, that it is reasonable to suppose that sometimes variable stars will be in pairs; also double stars, which have been recently connected, will have one on both of their constituents, still exhibiting traces of their former variability.

We should also expect to find that variable stars remain where temporary stars have appeared, and expect that temporary stars should be occasionally, though rarely, recurrent. That variable stars should gradually lose their variability, and become ordinary stars, and, lastly, for certain reasons variable stars would have great irregularities of motion, which would alter the time of their rotation, and would also alter the intensity or apparent intensity of their periods of maximum and minimum, and generally give a want of uniformity to their action.

To ascertain if any variable were in pairs, Herschel's list was searched, and a few pairs found; but Chamber's Astronomy was found to contain a few more variables than Herschel's, and a chart has been made from this list. Eleven pairs—that is, 22 stars—are extremely close together, and ten more pairs appear to be close enough together that, assuming a moderate proper motion, they may have acquired their positions in a few thousand years. Probably, in the larger lists to be found in Europe, a greater ratio would be found. Mr. Arthur Beverly, of Dunedin, has kindly made an approximate calculation of the probability of such an arrangement being the result of chance. To eliminate much of the extreme complexity, the problem was taken in the following form Given 50,000 spaces and 120 particles, what is the probability of the 120 only occupying 100 spaces; it is approximately one divided by 162 Sextillions. I need not say these associated variables must be so associated by law. It behoves any one, who is not prepared to accept the conclusion of partial impact, to show that it is in error, or to give a better hypothesis.

*Of Variable Doubles*—After I had searched all the astronomies that could be obtained for variable doubles, and could find only a few casually mentioned, a gentleman told me that he had seen a long account of them in the "Intellectual Observer" for 1862. I requested him to look and ascertain if any were variable, and he found the remarkable fact that Struve had actually satisfied himself that twenty-three doubles were variable, and suspected forty-two more. I dare say some of my readers, with Antipodean advantages, may ascertain if any of these doubtful ones have been confirmed. Mr. Townsend, who has a magnificent 6 in, equatorial, and who is devoting himself largely to double stars, is distinctly of opinion that Alpha Centaura is variable. All the other points mentioned above have each of them also many representatives.

Many nebulæ are accompanied by two stars. It would be particularly interesting should any of these be found to be variable, or orbitally connected, or both receding from each other. Although I need not say, that without such further evidence, the hundreds of coincidences already found, render any idea of mere chance, an absurdity. In addition to all these coincidences the theory appears to give an absolutely satisfactory explanation of that permanent stumbling block, the origin of cosmical rotation. It accounts for the forms and changes of form of the nebulas; for the high velocity of meteors and comets. It gives a reasonable suggestion for the origin of the whole of the motion of the solar system, and possibly accounts for the structure of the whole visible universe. It gives a logical reason for an extension of the mathematicians age of the sun's heat, which naturalists so much demand, and not improbably furnishes a means of escape from the melancholly conclusion of the theory of dissipation of energy.

Of course it is not supposed that the whole of the vast number of inferences made are right, or that great modifications may not be required. It is impossible that an isolated worker can think of all the conditions, and it is the especial work of criticism to show such oversights. It is simply claimed that such a large series of coincidences could not occur, unless the outlines of the theory had some basis in truth, and consequently it is worth some investigation.

May 31st, 1879.

## No. 1

# On a Modification of Diffusion Which Must Occur on the Surface of a Mixed Gaseous Cosmical Body.

Supposing the entire surface to be at the same temperature; if in their excursions two molecules were both moving directly outwards from the surface, then the velocity being proportional to the square root of the mass, the lighter molecules will travel further against gravitation than the heavier. Again, when on their return they meet with other molecules, the mean direction of their new motion will be less towards the centre than before the encounter; whilst the mean direction of the heavy molecules will be more towards the centre of the mass than before, and generally, supposing originally an equal distribution of various molecules at the surface, the tendency of the movements is to produce such a distribution of mass that as a final result, although a few of the lighter molecules may probably be found at the centre of the mass, yet the greater number of the light molecules will be on the outside and the heavy on the inside.

This fact directly leads to several interesting cosmical speculations, of which the following are illustrations:—Supposing two bodies to come into collision by mutual attraction from infinite distance. After impact it may be shown that in order for any one single particle to be again projected into space, so as to escape the bodies' attraction, any particle at mean position must have twice the velocity or four times the energy, of the velocity of mean square during impact. The whole of the impacting molar

"Molar" used as the adjective of mass in these letters.

velocity will not go to produce velocity of molecule, as may be found by comparing the molar velocity necessary to produce any definite temperature with the molecular velocity as calculated for that temperature, therefore the actual velocity of mean square of the molecules will be less than the mean molar velocity, so if the temperature at impact be assumed to be approximately uniform throughout, the heat motions of any of the molecules will be too small to enable them to leave the mass in opposition to the attraction of gravitation. In such a collision, at impact the temperature of masses of different elements will of course be proportional to the square root of their atomic weight, because, as we have assumed, the mean square of the velocity of different elements coming into collision with equal velocities will be the same. But the temperature of a gaseous mass must generally become uniform. When it is so, the velocity of hydrogen may frequently be many times as great as the initial velocity, and hence any particles of hydrogen that come to the surface with this velocity would be carried away into space. Thus hydrogen must almost certainly be diffused through space. In the following letters I have called this action "selective escape."

Again this selective process must also be at work in the sun, and hence probably the reason why hydrogen

forms so large a part of its surface. On this principle the assumption that the line 1474 is of an element lighter than hydrogen is shewn to be very probably true. It may not be hopeless, when the real temperature of the photosphere, and the distance to which it extends, is quite known that the approximate atomic weight of this element might be ascertained. If hydrogen is diffused through space, then this element may be still more largely diffused. It is not impossible that some of this element may be in some of the meteorites, at all events in the analysis of these bodies this should be thought of.

November 30th, 1878.

## **No. 2.**

# **On a Possible Origin of the Rotation of the Solar System.**

If two bodies come into collision from rest at the limit of effective attraction, or have a proper motion directly towards each other, the collision may be complete, and there appears to be but little reason to expect a rotation in the nebula produced. But if two bodies have a proper motion in space, and come within one another's influence, a complete collision is very unlikely. If the bodies are email, and the proper motion large, the chances of a collision are infinitesimal; they will almost certainly pass each other. The smaller the proper motion and larger the body, the greater is the chance of a collision. If a collision occurs, it is reasonable to assume that a partial impact will be much more likely than complete impact. Complete impact of two equal bodies is the extreme case. Hence, seeing that all the bodies in the universe have a considerable proper motion, we must expect that almost all collisions will be cases of partial impact.

In every case of partial impact it appears that rotation in the coalesced mass is an absolutely necessary consequence. Let us suppose two equal bodies coming into collision in such a manner that the circumference of each passes through the other's centre, and let us suppose those parts coming into collision to coalesce, and the other parts to pass on in space. I will disregard the question of their escape or return, but will only consider the coalesced mass. The chief bulk of each side of this mass will be made up the one side from the one body, and the other side from the other body, because the section through the centre is both the thickest section and also the densest. Therefore, although the body will have its motion in space destroyed, yet on each side of the mass the momentum will not be balanced, and the resultant momentum will be in different directions on the opposite sides of the mass, owing to the motion of the colliding bodies being opposite. Thus a couple is produced, which will tend to spin the mass on its centre. The two rotating masses will also each attract chiefly one side of the coalesced body, which will tend to produce rotation in the same direction. It thus appears that the result of a partial collision is to produce two retreating pieces and a coalesced spindle-shaped mass, which mass has a tendency to rotation, in a direction such that the ends of the spindle lies in the circumference of the circle, of which the centre is the axis of rotation.

December 1st, 1878.

## **No. 3.**

# **Temporary Stars: Possibly Cases of Partial Impact.**

From the very considerable velocity of the proper motion of the so-called fixed stars, and the want of any definite order in their motion it is almost certain that they must frequently come within the influence of each other's effective attraction and sometimes into collision. When collision occurs, as I have shown in my last

letter, partial impact will be the general case and complete impact the exception. I shall also attempt to shew that partial impact offers an explanation of all cases of temporary stars. The companion to Sirius, the existence of variable stars, and the high temperature of radiation into space, all point to dark or feebly luminous bodies in space. The following reasonings apply equally to the collision of these bodies or to ordinary luminous stars. If two bodies come into complete collision with a definite velocity the destruction of the molar motion would develop a high temperature. If, with the same velocity, a partial collision were to occur, a piece of each would be struck off and would coalesce. The motion destroyed will be identically the same in this case, and consequently the temperature will be the same in the coalesced body, no matter how small it may be. In these two cases we have two masses, one large and one small, and both at the same temperature. It is possible to show that in complete collision, produced by attraction from infinite distance, the heat developed is far smaller than that necessary to project the whole of the matter into space, away from the influence of the bodies' attraction. Let us suppose that each of the bodies struck off one-tenth of their mass, the temperature is the same as with complete coalescence, but the attraction is a very small fraction, clearly the molecular velocity due to the temperature may be great enough to carry every molecule independently into space. If one-tenth is not sufficient take one-hundredth, the temperature is still the same, but the attractive force almost nothing. Here is a definite "vera causa," which exactly agrees with the great initial brilliancy and rapid disappearance of these stars. The star of Tycho Brahe is supposed to be a recurrent temporary star, may it not be that partial impact occurred, that the two retreating masses returned by mutual attraction and, struck off a star at each journey, such a return is highly probable; but if a second impact is not very likely, so there would be a very striking difference in the time of return. The extreme brilliancy of Tycho's star supposes a large piece struck off, but the rapidity of its disappearance proves it to have been only partial impact. It is only necessary to vary the conditions of impact, and I have not read of any case of temporary stars which cannot be explained on this hypothesis.

Thus, partial impact appears to be at once, not only very much the most frequent case of collision, but it also possesses capabilities of producing a variety of these phenomena to which no other single hypothesis approaches.

NOTE—In complete coalescence the velocity destroyed will always be somewhat greater than a similar case of partial impact, as the centres of the two bodies will not be so close, and consequently the attraction will be less and the velocity acquired also less, neither will there be such complete destruction of motion. Any physicist will readily see that this is not enough to affect the reasoning in the slightest degree, for it is only necessary to assume a smaller fraction at impact to obtain the same result.

December 1st, 1878.

## No. 4.

# The Origin of Nebulæ.

The possible varieties of "partial impact" seem competent to account for the origin of almost all the varieties of nebulae having definite shape. I will attempt to show how some of these may have originated. I need not refer to the fact that the coalesced part in the case of the collision of large cosmical bodies must be chiefly gas, and I have already shewn that in "partial impact" there will be a want of balance in the momentum on the two sides of the coalesced mass, also that this inequality will act in opposite directions, producing a couple, so that rotation is a necessary consequence. I have also shewn how this coalesced part will at first be drawn out into a spindle-shaped mass, which is a form very common with nebulae. I have also shewn that the tendency to rotation is at right angles to its length. It will need little thought to see that this must certainly develop into a spiral nebula after a time. It is not difficult to shew that in many cases, if the two parts of the spindle have been drawn out to a great length, the centre of the mass will acquire a greater angular velocity than the ends. A spiral will appear at the centre before the outside has developed into this form. We have an illustration of this in the elliptical annular nebulae of the Lion. In many cases the two pieces that did not coalesce will return, especially when the coalesced part formed a large ratio of the whole, or the original proper motion was small. In this case the nebula would be of a much more stable character. May not the dark lines, often seen in a nebula, be due to the passage cleared through the gas by the attraction of the moving body? The nebula of Andromeda, as observed by Bond, seems exactly to correspond with such an event. It is easy to show that a body passing out of such a nebula would cut a conical passage. There are two causes for this—1st, by the



mass becoming larger by the attracted matter, and secondly from the fact that the body would move slower, and would have more time for attraction to act. It appears, however, that such openings would not, generally speaking, last long. If the impact be more partial, that is, the coalesced mass of small ratio, it is easy to see that the tendency to rotation will be greater, and it is probable that the ends of the spindle will be thrown off, often coalescing with the retreating mass. The remaining mass will be acted on by the radial force of heat, and by the tangential centrifugal force. It can be shewn that in the case where only a small ratio is struck off, the attractive force of the mass is enormously less than the repulsive force. The heat motion may be shewn to be chiefly pressure at first, but finally it will be almost wholly direct radial molecular motion. It is certain, under these circumstances, that after a time a ring will be formed which will, in almost all cases, go on increasing in diameter, and ultimately be dissipated into space; sometimes, however, the principle of selective escape, due to chemical compositions, which I explained in my first letter, would cause a portion to be condensed at the centre; there would then result an annular nebula with condensed centre. It is also easy to shew that, at the extremity of the axis of such a mass, nebulous matter would often be found. In many cases where coalescence was considerable, and the original temperature before impact high, it may be shown that the centrifugal force would not be sufficient to form a ring, but a hollow sphere would then result, and a planetary nebula; be formed. Let selective escape have left a nucleus, and we have a nebulous star. In cases where the impact of the two bodies was oblique, or the bodies very unequal in mass, the coalesced part would have a high proper motion in space, and a conical or cometary nebula must result. It is easy to see that the extremely unequal escape of matter at the extremities of the spindle, together with the returning bodies, in many cases broken into many pieces, would produce the display of stars so often accompanying nebula. I need not refer to the fact that both the attraction of the nebulous matter and the resistance offered by it to the stars would generally tend to make both occupy the same field in the telescopes, I have thus glanced at the possible genesis of most of the varieties of nebulae, and it is seen how easily partial impact explains them. The more fully the matter is discussed, the more consistent the results appear; but the space I have allotted myself for this letter is exhausted. In a future letter I hope to shew that the evidences accumulating seem most unmistakeably to point to the tremendous conclusion that our own galaxy, and with it almost everything luminous in the sky, has been developed by the partial impact of two large bodies in space. The explanation of the irregular nebulae of the milky way, and the enormous aggregation of nebulae at its poles, I shall reserve for a future letter.

December 1st, 1878.

## No. 5.

# On the Age of the Sun's Heat.

Mr. Crol's hypothesis in "Climate and Time," of the possible development of the heat of the sun by the impact and complete coalescence of two bodies, having a very high velocity in space, is open to two objections.

First, considering the sparse distribution of masses in space, the probability of a collision largely depends on their mutual attractions bringing bodies together. With such an enormous proper motion, the effect of this attraction would be so much lessened as to render a collision in the highest degree improbable. Secondly, it assumes an original proper motion of at least thirty times the energy of that possessed by the average star.

There is, however, another hypothesis—that of *partial* impact, which I have already shewn to be of such probability with bodies having an original proper motion, as to be almost a "vera causa," and which I have also shewn possesses considerable powers in producing many well known cosmical phenomena. The partial impact of two bodies offers an intermediate position between complete collision on the one hand, and mere mutual disturbance on the other. It is the general case of collision, of which complete coalescence is the extreme case. The *temperature*, which may be developed in a case of partial coalescence, is quite independent of the mass of the sun (nebula) produced, nor will original proper motion of necessity materially influence the result as regards temperature. In all cases of partial impact we have the two escaping bodies and the parts of both which come into collision and coalesce. Proper motion is of importance in causing the escape of the two bodies, which the increased attraction of the coalesced mass tends to prevent.

The temperature of a sun struck off from two larger bodies will depend upon—1st, the original temperature; secondly, the velocity during impact of those parts which come into collision; and thirdly, the chemical composition. The velocity will depend, 1st, upon the original proper motion; 2ndly, upon the mass of

the two bodies; 3rdly, upon the distance of the centre of the two bodies at impact; and 4thly, it will be influenced by the amount of distortion produced by attraction, But it will be quite independent of the mass of the sun produced.

There is thus no limit to the amount of heat a sun may possess at birth, but there is a limit in view of its possible continuance, for, as I have shewn in my letters on temporary stars, the temperature of the coalesced mass may be great enough to project every particle of it entirely into space. The possible temperature of a permanent sun has thus a limit. What this limit is, it is difficult to say, for radiation and chemical composition will influence the probable escape of the molecules of a mixed gaseous mass. One thing, however appears certain, that as far as the possibility of the amount of heat that might be generated is concerned, it is practically without limit. The question of the escape of the coalesced bodies, and their peculiarities, I will describe in another letter.

December 31st, 1878.

## No. 6.

# On Variable Stars.

The great number of these stars and their peculiar action seems to point to some definite cause at work in the galaxy producing them. Partial impact appears quite competent to explain the chief variety of these phenomena. I have already shown that, taking into consideration the large proper motion of the stars, that nearly all cosmical collisions will be cases of partial impact, and that generally after the collision three bodies will be produced. A middle intensely heated body, formed by the coalescence of those parts of the two colliding bodies which lie in each other's path. (The molar motion of this mass will be generally inconsiderable, and it may form a temporary star, a nebulae, or a solar system, according to the varying conditions of the impact.) Secondly, the two retreating masses from which the middle part has been struck off. These may be either gaseous, liquid, or solid. If either liquid or solid, it appears almost certain that variable stars must be formed. Let us try and imagine one of these gigantic retreating bodies. The high velocity attained at impact will quickly diminish, both from the attraction of the other retreating body, and also from that of the coalesced mass, and in a few years its motion will probably be less than that of its original proper motion. In the work of cutting off the piece, I have elsewhere demonstrated, would scarcely tell in producing a lessened velocity. The original spheroidal mass would have been stupendously distorted during impact. (I have shown elsewhere that if it were as hard as adamant it would scarcely modify the amount of the distortion that would be produced by attraction in such large bodies as we are considering.) After impact a large piece would be cut out of one side, but as soon as the bodies were free from each other, their own stupendous attraction would render them spheroidal again. But, although it has regained its shape, the two sides of the mass must be at extremely different temperatures. There are many causes at work which would produce this result:—1st. The work of sheering; secondly, the enormous amount of molar motion destroyed in the entangled parts of the other retreating body, chiefly, perhaps, its gaseous atmosphere; thirdly, the exposure of its more highly-heated interior; fourthly, by the distortion and restoration of sphericity, which would also be chiefly on that side, Thus is produced a *generally* slowly revolving body, one side of which might be almost or quite non-luminous, and the other side an actual sun—in other words, a variable star. With gaseous and liquid convection and diffusion of such a tremendous nature as this condition of things would set up, such a state would appear to be a most fugitive one; but this is not really the case; let us take a body say twenty times the size of our sun; let us suppose the fiery lake to be equal to the sun. Let us suppose the body to be liquid with a tremendous atmosphere, what must happen? A stupendous uprush from the boiling molten mass, convection currents carrying the heated gas over the entire globe. But as the heated gas rises, it does work, is cooled, and the matter is precipitated back again as metallic rain, so that the amount of heat carried over to the other parts of the body by this cause is comparatively small. But there is liquid connection at work, tending to restore equilibrium of temperature? Not necessarily, for convection is produced by difference of density, and this may be due to either chemical composition or to the same element at different temperatures. In such a body it is extremely probable that these two forces are tending to neutralise each other. Several reasons have been urged for supposing the centres of a globe to be composed of the more dense elements; hence when these are exposed in a variable star the two forces will quickly tend to equilibrium. There is thus only conduction and diffusion left. In such a body as we have been discussing, hundreds of years

would not be too large a unit in which to talk of the period necessary to attain moderately uniform temperature. Most of the variable stars are of this character. The variable stars which are the most abnormal are Mira Algol and Eta Argus. The first is invisible two-thirds of the year, gradually becomes very bright, stays so a few days, gradually becomes dark again, and disappears. Clearly a revolving black body with a molten lake would explain it exactly. All the peculiarities of Algol is explained by assuming a large dark body with a bright body revolving around it, which occasionally suffers eclipse by passing partly behind. Eta Argus appears to have a rotation of its own, which, produces a variable star, and, in addition to this, has revolving around it another body which comes into contact with it at each revolution, so developing intense heat. But it is useless to go into details, as partial impact is too wide and the number of variables too great to do more than merely glance at its action in these letters.

NOTE.—Now we have found to many variable stars to be in pairs, we require to know the proper motion of the constituents of those pairs of variables, which are too distant to be orbitally connected. Of course, this theory requires that generally they should be directed outward. When this proper motion is accurately known, we shall be able to ascertain their approximate age; Chinese and other records may then be searched to ascertain if any temporary star occurred at about that data in that part of the heavens. Of course, the angular proper motion across the line of sight is all that is required for this purpose. The time so obtained would have to be reduced by the greater initial velocity after impact. Astronomers might also see if a email star or nebula lies between these pairs of variables; also look for another variable near the isolated variables.

January 1st, 1879.

## No. 7.

# On Binary and Multiple Stars.

The many thousands of stars which are revolving around each other in space supply a good reason for suspecting that they have originated in some commonly-acting cause, but as yet no general solution has been given to this important problem. Partial impact appears to offer at least one completely satisfactory solution. There are several arguments tending to show that if there are dark suns they may very probably have a greater proper motion than the luminous stare; therefore impact, approaching in its character to complete impact, is more likely in the case of bright stars than with dark bodies, for the reason of greater bulk due to heat and the smaller proper motions, allowing attractions to be more effectual. After impact this introduces two reasons why the two escaping pieces should return again from space. (1) The great mass of the coalesced body will develop a more effectual attraction, and (2) from the small proper motion, the independent kinetic energy upon which its escape depends will be very email. Thus partial collisions between luminous stars seem to offer many reasons why double stars should be developed. A typical case will suffice: supposing two stars, having a small proper motion in space, are brought within each other's attraction; after a long period they collide, a largo part of each coalesces, a new star is born, and the parts of the two stars not in each other's paths pass on in space; but the increased attraction due to the great mass of the coalesced piece causes their return. We now have a nebula and two variable stars; but, as these variable stars must return, it is possible that at the return there may be a fresh impact, resulting in one of those erratic variables which are so puzzling, but if the orbit is long, this is not likely, as the coalescence puts several forces in action which tend to convert the very eccentric orbits into circular ones. (1) The resistance of the gas itself. (2) Meeting the outgoing gas which selective escape would be sure to dissipate. (3) The lessened attractions on return due to the same actions. (4) The body in its forward motion will also have a rotation on its axis; the different frictions on its two sides so developed will carry the body outward. These forces, and several others, such as external pressure during impact, increased attraction at first escape, &c., all tend to render the orbit more circular: therefore, otter a few impacts, the bodies would certainly not strike. Generally not at all after the first. We have thus double stars of extremely eccentric orbits and with nebula between. This nebulous matter may be disposed of in several ways, it may be collected by the two bodies in their rotation and thus become more luminous, and finally settle down into a pair of binary stars. The nebulous mass may aggregate into one or more stars revolving around these two bodies. If this were the case, it should sometimes happen that the brightest star may have the smallest mass. A determination of the orbits of some of the multiple stars might prove if this is the case. This is the most probable origin of the multiple stars, but there is still another probability. In the impact of two approximately equal solid bodies, it is

reasonable to suppose that the spindle-shaped mass, produced by the coalesced parts, should divide in several large masses before the establishing of a uniform nebula, thus producing double or multiple nebulas which would settle down into stars of corresponding number; or even this may happen, and one or both of the two retreating bodies may return, In fact it does not seem possible that there could be any variety of multiple stars which partial impact is not competent to explain. In my next letter I shall attempt to show how the solar system may have originated by partial impact. The more detailed discussion of the mode in which eccentric motions may become almost circular, may help those to whom the mere statements of this hypothesis may appear difficult.

January 1st, 1879.

## No. 8.

# On the Origin of the Solar System.

I have already shewn that the rotations and the enormous heat of the solar system may be due to partial impact, in this letter I shall attempt to shew that the planets may have originated at the birth of the sun, and not subsequently by the release of zones and their subsequent condensation as supposed by Laplace. I shall attempt, in a future letter, to show that that hypothesis appears inconsistent with the present energy of the rotation of the sun, and on several other dynamical grounds, as well as with the molecular theory of gases. As far as the subject has been discussed, there does not appear to be a single motion in the whole solar system inconsistent with the hypothesis of partial impact, and those very points which tell most against the zone hypothesis, are some of the strongest points in favour of the present hypothesis. Of course, in a short letter I can only give the faint outlines of such a wide subject. I am of opinion that the balance of evidence at present tells in favour of our solar system having been formed by the impact of two very large bodies of unequal sizes; that the coalesced part did not form a large ratio of the whole, and that the velocity was such that a considerable proportion of the material struck off the small body probably escaped into space, and in all probability neither of the larger pieces of the original bodies returned again but also escaped into space. I have already shown that a long spindle shaped mass, with an axis of rotation at right angles to its length, will be generally produced as the middle body, resulting from a case of partial impact. The ends of this mass will generally have resultant motion and be thrown off, often passing completely away from the attractive influence of the general mass; but some of the pieces would frequently return again. It is certain that these masses would be in advance of the gas. At first, the orbits of these bodies would be extraordinarily eccentric. On passing away on their first journey they would be in advance of the expelled gas, but would meet it on returning. As the motion of this gas would be directly outward the energy of its motion would act in a direction exactly opposed to gravitation, the path of the planets would thus be rendered straighter, and the perihelion distance would be increased; also the resistance of the gas would be greatest at perihelion, and this would lessen aphelion distance. Thus both of these forces tend to render the orbit more circular. Again, on each of its orbits the attraction of gravitation would be greater on its outward journey than on its return, in consequence of the expelled matter passing outside its orbit into space. This fact would both tend to render the orbit more circular and neutralise the action of the gaseous resistance in causing the body to approach the sun. It is a well-known fact that if a projectile revolves on an axis at right angles to the line of motion, there is a tendency to move in a curve. In the case of the planets this action would tend to straighten the curve, and, at it would not act until the return of the planet, as the planet would be in advance of the gas, it would tend to increase the perihelion's distance. All these facts, therefore, tend to render the orbits more circular, but not as an average result to considerably alter their mean distance from the sun. The larger masses would suffer less resistance in proportion than the smaller ones, and the general result must be that, if all started at the same distance, the smaller bodies would be brought nearer the sun. It is easy to see that the centrifugal force, and the attraction of the nebulous mass, would cause all the planets to travel approximately in the plane of the ecliptic; also why the sun's equator so nearly approaches it, and generally why the rotations of the planets on their axes should be in the same directions. On the other hand, the pressure due to heat, the extreme want of symmetry of such a case of partial impact, combined with the original motion of rotation of the colliding bodies (if they had any), must all tell in the ultimate resultant motion, both orbital and axial. Almost certainly these forces would produce slightly inclined orbital planes, with inclination of polar axes to these planes, and may, as an extreme case, produce a retrograde motion. It is also easy to see that the enormous

atmosphere of those early days would effectually clear the bodies of all but very large masses of cosmical dust. This fact seems to suggest that the production of the asteroids and of Saturn's ring were secondary phenomena, having probably been produced when the nebulous matter had shrunk within their respective orbits. I shall probably discuss their origin in a future letter.

January 2nd, 1879.

## No. 9.

# On the Origin of Comets and Meteors.

The extreme velocity of many comets and meteors is such that it is impossible the motion could have been developed by our own solar system. These bodies are consequently outside visitants passing through our system in hyperbolic orbits, and at other times travelling independently through space, swayed by this or that star, but owing allegiance to no cosmical body. In some bodies the velocity is so great, as for instance in the star 1830 Groom bridge, that probably they are even independent of the visible universe. It is also probable from the inclination of their planes, from the great eccentricity of their orbits, and the various direction of their motions, that all, even the periodic comets and meteors, may have originally been visitants to the solar system, with but a small original independent velocity, which has been destroyed either by the retarding influence of a planet approaching their path, or by the retarding action of the cosmical matter, the existence of which the zodiacal light and corona render probable. As it has been shewn that meteoric bodies and comets must be numbered by millions; some process by which bodies, with independent velocities, may be produced, must be at work in space. I shall attempt to shew that partial impact may certainly have an action in this direction, There are several ways in which this hypothesis shews these bodies may have been produced. I shall in this letter only describe one. I have already explained that in the partial impact of two bodies, generally three masses will be produced. The parts of each that are in each other's line of motion would coalesce and form one body, which I have shewn possesses many peculiar kinematic and kinetic properties, both molar and molecular, It also possesses enormous energy proportional to its mass, and will in most cases throw off many pieces, and sometimes, when of a very small ratio compared to the original masses they will dissipate entirely into space. In this particular discussion it will not be necessary to speak of the two independent bodies, as it is certain their motion will be finally smaller than it was originally. But with the central body it is quite different; some parts of this body may have a velocity many times as fast as its own attractive force could give them. These parts may clearly become independent wanderers. Nor will the retreating masses exercise any great attraction on the central mass, as each of them will be pulling it in opposite directions. Under any circumstances their attraction will be exercised at great disadvantages as regards direction and distance, and will be partially opposite, under any circumstances. In fact a careful inspection of the case will shew physicists that the retreating bodies may in many cases be tending to increase the final velocity of the escaping pieces of the central mass, during all the time that this attraction is sufficiently powerful to have any appreciable effect, I have discussed some of the molecular possibilities of these masses in a paper read before the Philosophical Institute of Canterbury. I shall in future letters have to discuss others, but it will readily be seen that these bodies may be either solid, liquid, or gaseous, dependent on the constitution, the velocity, and the original temperatures of the two attracting masses. It is clear that in any small mass of the coalesced body they want of balance of the momentum of its several parts will be nearly a constant quantity, and it will consequently tend to give a parallel direction to those escaping fragments, which would be aided by their own attraction in space. This may be one cause for the meteoric trains. I have thus shewn, I hope, with sufficient clearness, the general idea of one of the many explanations partial impact appears to furnish for the development of high independent velocities in small bodies.

January 28th, 1879.

## No. 10

# On the Origin of the Asteroids.

The hypothesis of the origin of the solar systems I had the honour to send you, seems to demand that the production of the asteroids and of Saturn's rings should have been subsequent events to the formation of the solar system. I have consequently investigated these systems, and I will now give a short account of what appears to me to be a possible explanation. It is well known that Olbers, who discovered several of these planets, supposed that they had been produced by the explosion of a planet. He also argued that, if so, all the parts should pass through one common spot in their several orbits, and be searched the heavens on this principle, and persuaded Harding to search also; and he actually discovered Juno in looking at the intersection of the two orbits of Ceres and Pallas. Subsequently, however, many more were found, and several of these departed altogether from this law. The idea was then given up; especially as, on the other hand, it was conceived impossible that any force in nature could produce such an explosion. I shall attempt to shew that probably Olbers was right in his original suggestions, but altogether wrong in his idea about the common point in the orbit. Of course, an instantaneous explosion would produce such a result at first, but the altered eccentricity of the orbits of the several pieces, due to the powerful attractions of the larger planets, would soon displace them from the common point. But from the great distance, about 90,000,000 of miles, which exists between the greatest perhelions and least aphelions of these bodies and from other causes, it is generally considered absolutely impossible that these bodies could have been formed from a planet. If we look upon a cosmical explosion as an instantaneous phenomenon, it appears that this conclusion may be sound.

I shall attempt to show: (1st) that the explosion of a planet is not such a very unlikely event; (2ndly) that as such an explosion will require definite durations for its completion, and from other causes, the usual ideas about these orbits require modifications. That, therefore, the asteroids may very possibly be parts of a planet, notwithstanding the very cogent arguments to the contrary brought forward in a recent article, which appeared in the "Cornhill Magazine," called "A Ring of Worlds."

Actual observation shows that there are bodies travelling in space with a high independent velocity, and reasoning based on the hypothesis of "partial impact," renders it probable that these bodies exist in very considerable numbers. Arguing on principles of energy, it may be shown that a body, having a mass about one-hundredth that of the earth, and moving with the velocity of about one hundred miles a second, would possess sufficient energy to blow the earth into fragments if it struck it fairly. Supposing such a body to strike a planet it would penetrate into its mass until its momentum was destroyed. The heat developed would make it and the material in its path into gas at a pressure of tens of thousands of atmospheres. This pressure would have to overcome the inertia of the mass, which of course it would do slowly, and would follow up the mass as it travelled. The larger the striking mass the greater would be the volume of gas produced; and, as the velocity would not then be required to be so great, the pressure might be smaller and would act for a longer period. It is not improbable that the pressure may act for some days. Again, it is reasonable to suppose that the impact would be eccentric. In such a case it is clear that rotation would be developed, and this rotation would also tend to alter the orbits. It is most important to remember that not until the pressure has completely ceased to act, and the mutual attractions of the various pieces have become too small by distance, to influence the result, will the directions and velocity of the motions of the fragments becomes portion of established orbits. Generally those bodies which were most retarded and most accelerated would have the most eccentric orbits, and clearly any perturbation which tended to render these orbits more circular would increase the distance of these orbits.

With respect to the velocity necessary to be given to a particle in order for it to leave the original body, it is clear that, if the pressure were sufficient to commence motion, both the lessened attraction and acquired motion would enable a lessened pressure to continue the motions, and, consequently, until the pressure ceased, the velocity need never have been enough to take them from effective attraction, and then, as they would be so far from the centre, the final radial velocity might be very small. In fact it is only necessary that the energy of the explosion should be equal to the total energy of gravitation of such a mass to effect the disruption. It is extremely probable, also, that for some time a mass of spray would be travelling approximately in the old orbit of the planet and, although very rare, it would be of considerable extent. This would tell in Jupiter's selective action, in the production of the ring spaces. The existence of these spaces renders it certain that the explosion must have occurred millions of years ago.

Every other fact in connection with these bodies points to the conclusion that they have been so formed. Most strikingly the great inclinations of many of their orbital planes, which exactly agrees with this hypothesis, but appears unaccountable on any other theory. Having thus attempted to clear up the apparent objections offered by the asteroids to this new hypothesis of the origin of the solar system, I shall in my next letter attempt to shew its application to the origin of the visible universe.

## No. 11.

# On the Origin of the Visible Universe.

That the visible universe is not a mere chance distribution is evident to the naked eye. But the probabilities of a definite order increases enormously with telescopic observation. Undoubtedly it consists roughly of a ring or disk of stars, which are so arranged on the celestial sphere that a great circle almost exactly divides it. Within this disk, Herschel tells us, there are roughly eighteen million stars, visible with his telescope. In the rest of the heavens there are two millions. Procter tells us this zone covers one-tenth of the celestial sphere, and shows that this great number is due more to distribution than to extension. How enormous thus is the aggregation of stars in the milky way. Again, Procter shows us that at the two poles of this ring, and covering a large arc, there are enormous aggregations of nebulae, and that there are two almost completely clear zones on each side of the milky way. Again, in the same work, Procter uses a chart prepared by Sidney Waters showing star clusters and nebulae. A large number of these clusters are arranged in a narrow zone which is even more strikingly approximate to a great circle of the sphere than is the milky way itself, and the two great circles are identical. Again, almost all the temporary and variable stars have been seen in the milky way. The revelations of the spectroscope, and the analyses of all the meteorites which have been examined, demonstrate that the whole stellar universe is identical in composition. These are the broader generalisations, and to me they are so striking as to render it almost a certainty that the visible universe is a system of some kind having a common origin.

An hypothesis, which appears to account for such a system as our universe has been shown to be, is that it has been produced by the indirect collision of two stupendous bodies in space—bodies which probably rotated, and which carried with them a large number of smaller masses rotating around them in all directions. The collision was probably one in which the ratio coming into impact was not a very small fraction of the total mass. We have thus three masses to consider, which may be considered in two sections:—1st. The escaping pieces; and 2ndly, the coalesced mass. Unless we assume a stupendous independent velocity, it is certain that these escaping pieces will not pass away from the general attraction, The temperature of these bodies will not be very much increased by the collision, at least nothing compared to that developed in the coalesced part. It is extremely likely that they would break up into many pieces. Generally these non colliding parts will have a higher velocity than any other part, certainly they will at first. Secondly, of the coalesced parts. In a portion of these the momentum will be balanced, and here, of course, all motion will be converted into heat. This portion will be the hottest, and will tend to occupy the centre of the mass. In all parts where the momentum is not balanced, a residual motion tending to rotation will be left. I have already shown how at first such a mass tends to take a spindle shape, and the whole of the material tends to occupy the plane which contains the line of mean direction of motion of the bodies at impact, and also the line joining their centres of gravity. This will be the ecliptic of the milky way. By following all the motions and attractions that the ends of this spindle are subject to, it will not be difficult for physicists to see how such stars as 1830 Groombridge may have been formed, of course, not at the origin of this galaxy, but at the birth of other systems. Doubtless, from various causes, already discussed in former letters, a very large number of fragments will completely escape; but the chief part will remain in the system, probably forming the star cluster, star dust, and some of the stars of the milky way. But the still hotter parts at the centre of the entire mass, where the molar motion is more completely destroyed, will develop into an enormous nebula having a strong rotary motion, producing a lenticular nebula in which the circumference is, of course, cooler than the axial part, it having more residual molar motion of rotation. The general molecular velocity of the whole, were it uniform, would doubtless be sufficient to take the whole from the centre, but the molecular action, which I have called "selective escape," would probably cause a large central body to remain; the remainder would form a hollow spheroid, which would probably separate into a ring, and would follow the stars, and into two saucer shaped masses which would be carried by their own radial molecular velocity away to the poles, tending slowly from many causes to aggregate into groups. But it is not improbable that with great telespectroscopic power it may be found that the whole of the poles of the milky way may be found to be nebular. It will not be difficult to any physicist who may have read my paper on temporary and variable stars to see why most of these stars are in the milky way, nor why the space about our sun appears to be somewhat sparsely spread, nor why all the stars have an apparently undefined proper motion.

It would tell much in favour of this hypothesis if, when the actual proper motions of a number of the stars are known (both the spectroscopic and angular component), if the resultant of these motions were distinctly more in the plane of the milky way than at right angles to it; for clearly, if this disc or ring were formed by aggregation towards this plane, it appears certain that most of these motions would be at right angles to it. In Procter's map of these motions, in the northern part of the milky way, the motion distinctly appears to be in the plane of the ring, but of course this does not give the spectroscopic resultant, Again it does not seem difficult to see why groups of stars have a common direction in space, nor why stars appear in streams at slight angles to the milky way, as the whole of these conclusions seem to follow readily as general deductions from partial impact.

In my next letter I propose to discuss the available energy, in such a case of impact as I have described. This letter is longer than I desired, but I need not say that the full discussion of this question needs a volume. I have simply hinted at the mode of discussing it.

February 1st, 1879.

## No. 12.

# On the Origin of the Visible Universe, Available Energy, &c.

Were the galaxy formed in the manner suggested in my last letter, there would be five sources of available energy. (1) The bodies' independent motion before commencing effective attraction. (2) Their energy of rotation, and that of the bodies rotating around them, (3) The heat in the bodies themselves, (4) The potential energy, due to the volume of the bodies; in other words, due to the fact that, if they were to do more work, they would be smaller; and lastly, the molar kinetic energy developed by the mutual attraction of two bodies. This last source is of course generally much greater than any of the others. It is probable that the sum of these energies is generally less than would be sufficient to diffuse the whole materials equally throughout space at absolute zero. It is only possible that it may be greater when the original proper motion forms a large part of the total energy. Except in this case, the following reasoning seems satisfactory:—1st. Suppose the two large bodies to have been formed by the aggregation of particles, it is clear that the heat developed by the compression and impact must have been radiating all the time, and thus in all probability a considerable ratio of the heat has been thus disposed of. It is certainly so, if the masses have attained to any great density, and generally it does not appear reasonable, on several grounds, to suppose that the other causes can compensate for this loss.

The amount of potential energy lost by the impact of two spheres coalescing to a sphere of the volume of one, will be about equal to the potential energy lost by the formation of the two spheres themselves from diffused gas. Therefore, it is reasonable to suppose that this, with the other energies, will probably, on an average, be a large fraction, generally considerably over three-fourths of the total energy, sometimes a very large ratio. I have shewn that a case of partial impact tends to develop a lenticular mass. Although the outer parts may frequently have a position approximately at maximum potential, yet it must be remembered that considerable work must be done upon such a mass to render it spherical; in other words, there is more potential energy in a sphere of uniformly diffused matter than in a lenticular equal mass of the same diameter. Again, in the case of a mass consisting of distinct bodies, there is less potential energy than in a similar mass of diffused gas, namely, that due to the lessened potential energy of these bodies. On the other hand, if these bodies be heated, it is evident they contain more energy than if they were cool, but very exceptionally, as previously shewn, as much as diffused matter. Thus, without assuming a large proper motion, it is evident that the impact of two large bodies in space could certainly, on the grounds of energy, develop a system such as our galaxy. It thus appears that, both kinematically and kinetically, it is possible that the milky way and the nebulous matter, at its poles, may have been formed by the impact of two bodies. It is not necessary to suppose the whole visible universe to have been formed at once in this manner; it is probable that some of the stars and systems may have been here before, and some like 1830 Groom bridge has visited since, and probably such masses as the nebulae may have been formed by subsequent impacts of the larger masses. I hope in future papers to discuss some considerations as to these masses and the larger nebulae, also to deal with the more systematic want of uniformity found in the milky way and in the stars of that zone; also the possibilities of nebular aggregation,



and other matters connected with the visible universe. But I wish in this letter to point out one conclusion that forces itself upon the mind in considering this theory, namely, the relation it bears to the extent of the visible universe. If this speculation represents the truth, there must be an inconceivable number of small bodies which have been cooled by radiation, and which are travelling through space. These, in their journeys, must be constantly meeting others, and their gravitating energy being small compared to their kinetic energy, impacts would shatter them into dust. Thus the whole of space is possibly dusty from this cause, and as a sufficient thickness of the lightest fog becomes impenetrable to light, so would this dust. It is well known that Struvé never gave up the idea of extinction of light by distance, and this speculation was based on distinct numerical data in connection with the number of stars visible in the telescope. Struvé supposed the light to be extinguished by mere distance, but here is a "vera causa" which renders the conclusion probable. Thus, according to this idea, we see no distant universe.

This is also Proctor's opinion, based on what appears to be indisputable evidence; but although all distant space (all that probably more distant than a few hundred years of the motion of light; is utterly cut off from sight, it is not so from our imagination. If the galaxy proves itself, on final examination, to be undoubtedly the result of a single impact, then, on the evidence this fact supplies, our ideas of the extension of matter in space must be indefinitely increased. For what right have we to suppose our Gallactic system to be the largest in space, any more than our useful earth to be the largest of orbs. In short, in the face of these extensions of our ideas, nothing less than an infinity of space, with endless variety of systems and moving bodies, appears to satisfy the mind. I hope to shew in my next letter that all evidence seems also to point to a possible extension of the present order of things, both backwards and forwards, through an eternity of duration.

February 1st, 1879.

## No. 13.

# The Stability of the Cosmos.

In the last letter I sent you I stated that I should attempt to show that the cosmos was probably stable. What I mean by this expression is that, although our earth may doubtless fall into the sun, and the sun and most of the visible stars may aggregate together; and may, as an extreme possibility, become cold, yet other systems and galaxies will be born in other regions of space. In other words, were a being to travel through infinite space for an eternity, he would practically find all space alike. He would find some parts bare, others plentifully filled. He would occasionally see galaxies born, and others at all ages; but the whole cosmos would be immortal.

Hitherto I have not interfered with any well received theories, but in this I am at issue with the theory of dissipation of energy and all the recent speculations of mathematical physicists on cosmogony, in whose eyes the final state of the cosmos is that of uniform heat and one great body. As the conclusion of physicists is clearly the conclusion which ordinary reasoning leads to, in order to prove the stability of the cosmos, one has to shew that these theories are not absolutely necessary consequences, and to do this it appears necessary to show that the following five possibilities exist:—1st. That none of the radiation into space is necessarily lost. 2nd. That cold bodies may be produced at lower temperature than any other existing body, or that the bodies of the lowest temperature may be able to convert some of their heat into other form of energy. 3rd. That a process may exist for the sub-division of bodies to compensate for aggregations by gravity. 4th. That some process may be at work to fill again those parts of space which have been drained by gravitation. 5th. That it is possible to convert heat, the lowest forms of energy, completely into potential energy the highest form, or generally that the whole scheme may be like a steam-engine regulated by a differential governor, in which all irregularities of any kind whatever tend to equilibrium. My letters on partial impact really contains the solution of all these problems; but as they are not very obvious, and as a number of speculations on molecular physics (such as possible fourth state of matter), which may interest your readers, should these letters escape the waste paper basket, spring directly from these solutions, I propose, in other letters, to discuss them more fully. I must state, however, that the entire reasoning is extremely lengthy, it will be necessary therefore to assume the easier points, and in these letters the whole must be a mere sketch,—one, however, which I think will contain all the essentials of the demonstrations.

February 28th, 1879.

## No. 14.

# On the Recovery of Radiant Energy.

In my last letter I stated a number of problems which needed solution before the great problem of the stability of the cosmos could be considered solved, and stated I believed that "partial impact" offered a solution of all these propositions. I will first give a sketch of how all radiant energy may be collected so as to be rendered available to carry on the duties of concentrated energy. In a former letter I have shown that it is possible that very distant light may be extinguished by the myriads of particles of cosmical dust, which, if we accept the conclusion of partial impact, must exist in free space, and which the millions of meteoric systems of our own solar system render probable. It is clear that if distant light be extinguished, on the other hand all radiation from the sun must fall upon these bodies, and be collected again. That this is really the case is rendered probable from the fact that recent physical experiments prove the radiation from "free space" to the earth to be equivalent to more than 200deg. F. above absolute zero, whilst the total light is only equal to an excessively small fraction, heat must consequently be radiated by dark bodies, unless we conceive that the short waves are stopped, an extremely unlikely suggestion. It is, therefore, probable that all radiation falls upon bodies in space. When these bodies come into impact this heat will clearly exalt the final temperature, and will thus be rendered available. But the coldest of these bodies must in this way be heated by radiation, and as it cannot again radiate its heat to colder bodies, as they do not exist, there is a tendency for all cold matter in the universe to get hotter unless we can show that bodies can lose heat in some manner not usually contemplated. I shall attempt to show how this may happen

# *On the Development of Cold Bodies and the Cooling of Bodies.*

I have already shown it to be probable that in the partial impact of very large bodies a proportion of the gas will be dissipated into space, sometimes in very considerable proportion. Suppose the gas to have escaped the effective attraction of our system, it has still the attraction of the galaxy, and it is probable that a very large ratio of the particles will have their molecular motion almost completely stopped, before beginning their return journey. We have thus particles of gas almost at rest, and I need not say that all speculations on the dynamical theory of gases suppose that a gas at rest is at absolute zero. It is certain that all radiation from gas that we are acquainted with, is not produced by the molecular velocity. The definite rate of radiant vibration proves it to be due to an internal pendular motion of the parts of the molecule itself. It is, therefore, almost certain that these cold molecules would not be heated by radiation. In fact, without fresh impacts it appears that the radiant vibrations are of very short duration. Thus, suppose a body of small mass were travelling slowly through an atmosphere of such a gas, it might collect it up, and produce a body much cooler than the original body. Again, suppose such slowly-moving molecules were to impinge upon a small body at a moderate temperature, the particle would acquire the temperature of the body, it would thus have a considerable velocity given it. The increased velocity would take the particle away again from the body, and would carry off some of its heat. This particle may then pass away to positions of still higher potential, and again come to rest, or it may travel until it comes into impact with another body. The velocity it acquired from the comparatively cool body will tell in its final impact, and exalt the temperature. I have already shown that hydrogen probably fills space, and it is doubtless this element and the lighter element helium that do this important work of keeping the smaller cosmical dust of the universe cool, and permitting it to act as an absorbing curtain to pick up lost radiant heat. This method of preventing the escape of radiant energy may appear very hypothetical, but my next letter, which will be devoted to the development of potential energy, will, I hope, show it to be much more effectual than would appear on a superficial view of the case.

March 1St, 1879.

## No. 15.

# Stability of the Cosmos.

## On the Development of Potential Energy.

There can be no doubt that generally, with moving bodies (if we except bodies in orbits), as we descend in the scale of velocity, the numbers of such bodies increase. This is easily shewn to be the case, there are three causes acting together to produce this result. Suppose a particle proceeding outwards from a central mass to the limits of effective attraction, when near the mass its velocity is high, its velocity being high it quickly passes from great attraction; but attraction varies inversely as the square of the distance, therefore, from this cause, at small distances attraction diminishes quickly, and at great distances slowly. Therefore the time a particle occupies any high velocity is incomparably shorter than the time it occupies a low velocity; in fact, taking all the free particles, it is probable that the numbers having any given velocity is about inversely proportionate to the square of the velocity, except at both ends of the series. Thus the number of free particles of gas, which is at extremely low velocity, is doubtless very large indeed; probably fully sufficient for the purpose of rendering bodies capable of absorbing the lowest order of radiation, thus shewing that the dissipation of energy is not a necessary result. There are some extremely interesting speculations as to the state of those substances, whose free particles are below the temperature of liquid or even the solid state. What is this physical state? I shall probably discuss this most interesting question in a future letter. There are many puzzling points about it. Thus then we see that generally small bodies will be moving slowly, and also that the higher the potential of space, or position of least attraction, the slower the particles will generally be moving. I will put this statement in another way. Let us suppose a portion of space which has been drained of matter by gravitation, it is clear that here attraction will be least or potential highest. Therefore particles approaching this space will do more work than in moving in any other direction. They will therefore move more slowly. Again suppose all particles to have a motion without any order, it is evident that in any place where the bodies move slowly, they will tend to accumulate, as going at *walking* pace past any spot tends to block the road, so that with particles travelling equally in every direction, in those positions in space where they move slowest, they will be in increasing numbers. Thus, although gravitation tends to aggregations, we have in the slower movements of bodies, at high potential, a means of filling the drained parts of space, and a constant tendency to an equilibrium of matter. I have already shown how partial impacts tends to separate large masses into smaller ones, and also how the principles of selective escape—tends in all considerable impacts to render a large number of molecules free from the attractive influence of the general mass, I have also shewn how, in the case of very partial impacts—of very large bodies—the heat may absolutely dissipate every molecule of the coalesced part, and so convert all the heat into potential energy, so that altogether it appears there is a roughly compensating fiction going on throughout space. Gravity aggregates, velocity divides, gravity drains spaces, slowly travelling bodies tend to fill these spaces. Radiant heat warms the matters of space, gas near zero cools these bodies, and in turn converts this energy into potential energy or available heat. So it is thus possible that the cosmos flows on in an ever varying, ever constant, rhythmic stream, without evidence of a beginning, or promise of an end, infinite and immortal.

Thus ends the series of letters, Since the earlier ones were written, the evidence that has accumulated on many of the points appear to suffice for an absolute demonstration; but I shall wait for discussion before renewing them, when I hope, with greater space, to give more logical proofs of the propositions I have offered.

March 1st, 1879.

Other papers on the same subject, read before the Philosophical Institute of Canterbury, New Zealand:—

- On Temporary and Variable Stars, July 4th, 1878.
- On the Origin of the Solar System, &c., August 1st, 1878.
- On the Origin of the Visible Universe, February 13th, 1879.
- On the General Problem of Stellar Collision, March 13th, 1879.
- Presidential Address on the Genesis of Worlds and Systems, April 3rd, 1879.

Printed at the "Press" Office, Cashel Street, Christchurch, New Zealand.  
Letters in Reply to the London Times; Commerce, Christianity, and Civilization, *Versus* British Free Trade.

By H. C. Carey.

"Oh wad some power the giftie gie us  
To see oursel's as others see us!

It wad frae monio a blunder free us  
And foolish notion."—BURNS.

Philadelphia: Collins, Printer, 705 Jayne Street. 1876.

The first four of these letters were sent to a friend in London, in the hope of thus securing their appearance in the *Times*. Replying to this suggestion, he paid, in effect, that that paper, in common with nearly all other English journals, was so hopelessly given over to the advocacy of free-trade doctrines as to make it wholly useless to offer them for publication. This will account to American readers *for* the delay that has attended their publication here.

## Letters to the London Times.

### Letter First.

*To the Editor of the Times:—*

A FRIEND abroad having kindly sent me your paper of 22d ult., I find therein the words "ignorance and imbecility," "folly and iniquity," unhesitatingly applied to persons holding, in regard to a purely scientific question now much discussed, opinions differing from your own; and myself specially selected for introduction to your numerous readers as the "redoubtable champion in reference to whom such expressions may most properly be used. Believing, Mr. Editor, that in all this you have made a serious mistake, and that it has resulted from a steady contemplation of one side of the shield to an entire neglect of the other, I propose as briefly as may be possible to present this latter, in the hope of satisfying you that on this important question men may perhaps differ from you without forfeiting their claim to be possessed of sense, and entitled to be treated as almost, even if not quite, equal with yourself in their right to be spoken of, and to, as gentlemen.

The passages in which these words occur are here given, as follows:—

*"Yet as to the cardinal doctrine of English political economy, which is held in this country as an unquestionable scientific truth, to question which must indicate ignorance or imbecility, our kinsmen and fellow subjects of the Dominion are evidently heretical. It is not the French population alone or chiefly which is protectionist. Some of the leading advocates for the artificial fostering of 'home industry,' are of British origin, and the interests which are to benefit by the proposed legislation are principally directed by men of the same race. Even Englishmen and Scotchmen who have grown up in our Free Trade pale, and have been taught to believe that the exploded doctrine could not be honestly held by an intelligent person, find excuses for a reconsideration of their opinions when they settle in the new country. Their argument, or, at least, their assertion, is that there is some essential difference between a new country and an old one, between a large country and a small one, between a thinly-populated country and one where the population is dense as in England. Free Trade is never attacked in principle; it is always assumed as the ideal to which the economy of a State should tend; but the friends of Protection are always ready with some exceptional circumstances which make the application of the theoretically perfect system impracticable in their own community. The late Mr. Carey, of Philadelphia, the redoubtable champion of the protective system in the United States, labored to prove that Free Trade was unsuited to the present condition of his country, but that, if the Americans would only establish a stringent system of imposts upon foreign manufactures, and persevere in it long enough, they would call into being an industrial power which would enable them in duo time to burst upon the world with a Free Trade policy, and overwhelm all creation with their goods. This theory, repeated in hundreds of magazines and newspapers, and forming the staple of endless orations, has affected the economical policy of the Union up to the present time, and is held by multitudes even of those whose private interests suffer by it. To make the country independent of the foreigner, capable of producing everything for itself, and self-sufficient even if shut off from the rest of the world by a powerful enemy, is a principle of government gravely avowed by*

*persons who on other matters judge and speak with intelligence. . . . Therefore, as a financial policy, pure and simple, as the means of present relief, as the direct path to prosperity, the Canadian Board of Trade recommends Protection. It is not that indirect taxation is the easiest of application in practice; it is that in a large country and scattered population customs duties are the only means of reaching the mass of those who should contribute to the State's necessities; it is protection for itself that we find maintained as an economical doctrine on opposite sides of the globe, by vigorous communities of British origin, after we have been maintaining its folly and iniquity for thirty years."*

Waiving for the moment any comment upon the views thus presented, I ask you to look with me to that fountain-head, or well-spring, of economic science, the *Wealth of Nations*, a work that has stood a century's test, and stands now so far ahead of those of its writer's countrymen who claim him as their chief while discarding his most essential principles as to warrant the belief that he will be remembered when they and their works will have been long forgotten. Why should this be so? For the reason, that in his high appreciation, manifested throughout his admirable work, of the superior advantage, material, mental, and moral, of a domestic commerce over foreign trade, he struck the keynote of a sound social science. Exchanges performed twice or thrice a year were in his eye far more profitable than those which could be but once performed. Exchanges with neighboring nations he regarded as far preferable to those with communities more distant. A *fortiori*, ex-changes performed from week to week, from day to day, from hour to hour, from minute to minute, must be still more advantageous; and so, in his view, they were. To the end that such exchanges might become possible, it was essential that there should be that diversification of employments to the exposition of whose advantages so much of his work was given. With every step in that direction producers and consumers were, as he saw, more nearly brought together; production and consumption followed more closely on each other; labor became more and more economized; the various members of society became more and more enabled to find the places for which they had been intended; labor of all kinds became more and more productive, with hourly increase of rapidity in the societary circulation and corresponding development of all those faculties, mental and moral, by which the human animal is distinguished from the brute. Such, Mr. Editor, although not precisely so expressed, were the ideas Adam Smith sought to impress upon his countrymen; and such, exactly, are those which, as humble follower of a man who, in my belief, is entitled to stand side by side with Shakspeare as greatest of all the human productions of the British soil, I have urged not only on my own countrymen but upon the people of all the nations of the earth. What there is therein to warrant an attack like to that above reproduced, I leave you to determine for yourself.

The British policy of Smith's day was in direct opposition to all his teachings. The colonist Briton was allowed to make no exchanges with his neighbors, of wool for cloth or hats, of iron for nails or bolts, of hides for shoes or straps, except through the medium of British ships, British traders, and British shops. Most righteously was this regarded by our great author as "a manifest violation of the most sacred rights of mankind;" and as tending to make, of the great community of which he was a part, a mere "nation of shopkeepers," amassing fortune by means of a policy as injurious to their victims as in the end it must prove destructive to themselves. Against that policy it was that Smith raised his voice when crying aloud for freedom of trade. With what results, however? Has there in the century that since has passed been any single case in which Britain has voluntarily abandoned the system which for so long a period had had for its object that of making of herself the "workshop of the world"? Foreign tariffs and a consequent growth of competition for the sale of manufactured goods, opened the eyes of Mr. Huskisson half a century since, and twenty years later those of Sir Robert Peel. But for American and German resistance the Navigation Laws might, and probably would, still remain on the statute book of Britain. In the interest of free trade a reciprocity treaty, so called, was obtained by Canada from us, and the measure was hailed with great delight by all such gentlemen as now constitute the Cobden Club. When, however, shortly afterward, the various British possessions of this Western hemisphere sought to establish among themselves a similar free trade measure, the Privy Council refused permission, on the ground that such measures were not in accordance with the Imperial policy. Reciprocity had been regarded as sauce for the goose, but could not be accepted as sauce for the gander. It may, as I think, be doubted if any single measure can be shown as having been adopted by Britain, except as conducive to maintenance of the system denounced by her great economist as utterly unworthy of the great nation of which he was a part.

Years after Mr. Huskisson had become in part convinced of the necessity for abandoning some of the various modes of taxation of other nations that had till then been practised, an eminent member of parliament described in the words that follow the real objects of men who were the loudest in their expressions of free trade admiration:—

*"It was idle for us to endeavor to persuade other nations to join with us in adopting the principles of what was called free trade. Other nations knew, as well as the noble lord opposite, and those who acted with him, that what we meant by "free trade" was nothing more nor less than, by means of the great advantages we*

*enjoyed, to get a monopoly of all their markets for our manufactures, and to prevent them, one and all, from ever becoming manufacturing nations. When the system of reciprocity and free trade had been proposed to a French ambassador, his remark was, that the plan was excellent in theory, but, to make it fair in practice, it would be necessary to defer the attempt to put it in execution for half a century, until France should be on the same footing with Great Britain in marine, in manufactures, in capital, and the many other peculiar advantages which it now enjoyed. The policy France acted on was that of encouraging its native manufactures, and it was a wise policy; because, if it were freely to admit our manufactures, it would speedily be reduced to the rank of an agricultural nation, and therefore a poor nation, as all must be that depend exclusively upon agriculture. America acted, too, upon the same principle with France. America legislated for futurity—legislated for an increasing population. America, too, was prospering under this system."*

How the monopoly system thus described has since been carried into practical effect is shown in the following passage from a Report made to Parliament by Mr. Tremeneere:—

*"The laboring classes generally in the manufacturing districts of the kingdom, and especially in the iron and coal districts, are very little aware of the extent to which they are often indebted for their being employed at all to the immense losses which their employers voluntarily incur in bad times, in order to destroy foreign competition, and to gain and keep possession of foreign markets. Authentic instances are well known of employers having in such times, carried on their works at a loss amounting in the aggregate to £300,000 or £400,000 in the course of three or four years. If the efforts of those who encourage the combinations to restrict the amount of labor and to produce strikes were to be successful for any length of time, the great accumulations of capital could no longer be made which enable a few of the most wealthy capitalists to overwhelm all foreign competition in times of great depression, and thus to clear the way for the whole trade to step in when prices revive, and to carry a great business before foreign capital can again accumulate to such an extent as to be able to establish a competition in prices with any chance of success. The large capitals of this country are the great instruments of warfare against the competing capitals of foreign countries, and are the most essential instruments now remaining by which our manufacturing supremacy can be maintained; the other elements—cheap labor, abundance of raw materials, means of communications, and skilled labor—being rapidly in process of being equalized."*

Here is "warfare." By whom, and on whom? By the very men whose policy was denounced by Adam Smith. Upon people of distant lands who see and know that what they need is that diversification of employments regarded by him as so essential to that increase of mental, moral, and material force of which we speak as evidence of growing civilization. It is a "warfare" for prevention of any growth of that domestic commerce which marks the decline of barbarism. Such being the case, and that such it is cannot be denied, where would Adam Smith now stand were he member of any of the communities upon which this war was being made? Assuredly on the side of resistance, that resistance taking the form of protection to the farmer in his efforts at bringing to his side the consumer of his products, thereby enabling him to exchange both services and products with little intervention of trader or transporter, and thus freeing himself from the necessity now imposed upon the purely agricultural nations of the earth for limiting their exchanges to those made yearly or half yearly and held in so slight regard by Smith.

In another letter, I propose, Mr. Editor, to exhibit the working of the two systems in an old and a new country, meanwhile remaining,

Yours respectfully,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

Feb. 15, 1876.

## Letter Second.

IN assuming, Mr. Editor, as you seem to do, that I regard protection as especially necessary for new countries, you are-much in error. The societal laws are applicable to all countries alike, the great object to be accomplished being the promotion of that domestic commerce held in so great regard by the illustrious founder of a real economic science. In the days of the later Stuarts, when the men of the Rhine were enabled to boast that they bought of the stupid Englishmen whole hides for sixpence and paid for them in tails at a shilling,

Britain stood as much in need of protection as we do now. So, too, was it half a century since when German men exported wool and rags and took their pay in cloth and paper, paying at the British custom house a heavy tax for the privilege of making exchanges among themselves through the medium of British ships and shops. So, again, was it less than a century since in the now most prosperous and independent of the manufacturing countries of the world, as will here be shown.—Almost unceasingly at war abroad or at home; brought repeatedly by political and religious dissensions to the verge of ruin; governed by priests and prostitutes in the names of worthless kings—France, on the day of the assembling of the States General, in 1789, had made so little progress in the industrial arts that her markets were crowded with British wares; that her workshops were closed; that her workmen were perishing for want of food; and that the French school of art had almost entirely disappeared. The Few were magnificent—more so, perhaps, than any others in Europe. Of the Many a large majority were in a state closely akin to serfage, and ignorant at most beyond conception.

The Revolution, however, now coming, the people did for them-selves what their masters had refused to do; re-establishing the system of Colbert, the greatest statesman the world has yet seen, and making protection the law of the land. Since then, consuls and kings, emperors and presidents, have flitted across the stage; constitutions almost by the dozen have been adopted; the country has been thrice occupied by foreign armies, and thrice has it been compelled to pay the cost of invasion and occupation; but throughout all these changes it has held to protection as the sheet-anchor of the ship of State. With what result? With that of placing France in the lead of the world in reference to all that is beautiful in industrial and pictorial art. With that of making her more independent, commercially, than any other country of the world. Why is this? For the reason that she enables her artisans to pass over the heads of other nations, scattering everywhere the seeds of that love of the beautiful in which consists a real civilization, and everywhere stimulating while defying competition; Britain, meanwhile, seeking everywhere to stifle competition by means of cheap labor, shoddy cloth, cinder iron, and cottons that, as recently certified to by British merchants in China, lose a third of their weight on their first immersion in the tub.

But a few months since Monsieur Michel Chevalier gave to his English friends an eulogium upon this shoddy system, saying, however, not a word as to the fact, that the tariff for which he claims the credit is the most intelligently, and the most effectively, protective of any in the world; not a word to show how perfectly it had been made to accord with the views presented in his then, as I think, latest work, and which read as follows:—

*"Every nation owes it to itself to seek the establishment of diversification in the pursuits of its people, as Germany and England have already done in regard to cottons and woollens, and as France herself has done in reference to so many and so widely different departments of industry, this being not an abuse of power on the part of the government. On the contrary, it is the accomplishment of a positive duty which requires it so to act at each epoch in the progress of a nation as to favor the taking possession of all the branches of industry whose acquisition is authorized by the nature of things."*

Prior to the date of the Cobden treaty, 1860, the regime of France, for almost seventy years, had been that of prohibition so nearly absolute as almost to preclude the importation of foreign manufactures of any description whatsoever. Prior to 1861, that of this country had for a like period of time, with two brief and brilliant exceptions, been that of revenue, and almost free-trade, tariffs dictated by subjects of the cotton king holding a full belief in the morality of human slavery, and in a sort of right divine to buy and sell their fellow-men. We have thus two contemporaneous systems differing from each other as light docs from darkness, and may here with some advantage study their working as regards the great question now before us, that of civilization. The last four years prior to 1861 were in this country so much disturbed by reason of the great free-trade crisis of 1857 that, desiring to give every advantage to free-trade theorists, I prefer to throw them out, taking for comparison the year 1856, one in which the world at large was rejoicing in the receipt of hundreds of millions of gold from California and Australia; and when, if ever, our Southern States must have been growing rich and strong by means of the policy of which they so long had been the ardent advocates.

In that year the domestic exports of France amounted to \$340,000, 000, having far more than trebled in twenty-five years; doing this, too, under a system that, as we now are told, must have destroyed the power to maintain any foreign commerce whatsoever. Of those exports, \$140,000,000 consisted of textile fabrics weighing 20,000 tons, the equivalent of 100,000 bales of cotton, and sufficient, perhaps, to load some five and twenty of the ships that, as I think, were then in use. The charge for freight was, as may readily be seen, quite insignificant, and for the reason that the chief articles of value were skill and taste, \$100,000,090 of which would not balance a single cotton bale. Arrived out, the goods were all finished and ready for consumption; and, as a consequence of these great facts, there were no people retaining for themselves so large a proportion of the ultimate prices of their products as did those of France.

At that date two hundred and fifty years had elapsed since the first settlement of Virginia, and the whole country south of the Potomac, the Ohio, and the Missouri, had then been taken possession of by men of the

English race, the total population having grown to almost a dozen millions. The territory so occupied contained, as I believe, more cultivable land, more coal, and more metallic ores, than the whole of Europe; and it abounded in rivers calculated for facilitating the passage of labor and its products from point to point. What now had become, in 1856, the contribution of this wonderful territory, embracing a full half of the Union, to the commerce of the world? Let us see! The cotton exported amounted to 3,000,000 bales. To this may now be added 100,000 hogsheads of tobacco, the total money value of the exports of this vast territory having been almost precisely \$140,000,000—barely sufficient to pay for the cargoes of five-and-twenty ships, of a joint burden of 20,000 tons, laden with the beautiful fabrics of France.

For the carriage to market of this cotton and tobacco how many ships were required? Thousands! How many seamen? Tens of thousands! Who paid them? The planters! Who paid the charges on the cotton until it reached its final consumer? The planter, whose share of the two, three, or five dollars a pound paid for his, cotton by his customers in Brazil, Australia, or California, amounted to but a single dime. It may, as I think, be safely asserted that of all people claiming to rank as civilized there have been none who have retained for themselves so small a portion of the ultimate prices of their products as have those who have been accustomed to supply raw cotton to Britain and to France.

The first of all taxes is that of transportation, preceding as it does even the demands of government. Of this the Frenchman pays almost literally none, the commodities, taste and skill, which mainly he exports, being to be classed among the imponderables. The planter, on the contrary, gives nine-tenths of the ultimate prices of his products as his portion of this terrific tax, doing so for the reason that he is always exporting, in the forms of cotton and tobacco, the weighty food of mere brute labor, and the most valuable portions of the soil upon which that labor had been expended.

Throughout the world, as here among ourselves, the exporters of raw produce pay all the taxes incident to a separation of consumers from producers, the manufacturing nations profiting by their collection. Hence it is that while the former tend from year to year to become more dependent, the latter tend equally to become more independent, thus furnishing conclusive evidence of growing civilization.

The protected Frenchman, freed from the most oppressive of all taxes, grows in love of the beautiful, in love of freedom, in that love of his native land by which he is everywhere so much distinguished—each and every stage of progress marking growth of real civilization.

The unprotected men of the South, on the contrary, have been so heavily taxed on the road to their ultimate market as to have produced a constantly growing need for abandoning their exhausted lands, and a corresponding growth of belief in human slavery, which is but another word for barbarism.

Since the date above referred to, France and the South have passed through very destructive wars, but how widely different is their present condition; the one being more prosperous than ever before, the other remaining now so much impoverished as to excite the sympathy even of those who had most execrated the men and measures to which the rebellion had been due.

Such, Mr. Editor, have been the results of thorough protection on one side of the ocean and an absence of protection on the other. Choose between them!

In another letter I shall submit to your consideration a comparative view of the present commercial position of France and Britain, meanwhile remaining,

Yours, respectfully,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

Feb. 17, 1876.

## Letter Third.

THE strong man, Mr. Editor, self-reliant, moves boldly forward, careless of the comments of those around him, and confident in his power for self-defence. His feeble rival, full of doubts and fears, watches anxiously, hoping to maintain his position yet hesitating as regards his power so to do. In which of these men may we find the prototype of France commercially considered In which that of Britain? Let us see!

In the sixty years that have passed since the close of the great war, France has, as I believe, never once attempted to interfere in our affairs; nor, so far as I can recollect, have the French people sought in any manner



to influence our legislation. She and they have been content to allow us to determine for ourselves our commercial arrangements, confident that, whatsoever might be their form, French skill and taste would so far triumph over such obstacles as might be raised as to enable France to participate in supplying the great market the Union now presents.

Widely different from this, British interference has been persistent throughout this whole period, increasing in its force as the danger to British interests became more clearly obvious. On one occasion, some five and twenty years since, your then minister had the bad taste, if not even the impertinence, to send to our State Department a lecture on the folly of protection, accompanied by a strong remonstrance against increase in the duties on British iron. Of the course that has been since pursued some idea may be formed after a study of the exhibit, made in a document herewith sent, of the discreditable proceedings of the Canadian Commissioner in reference to that, so-called, Reciprocity Treaty whose adoption he then was urging; these things having been done under the eye, and, as we have every reason to believe, with the sanction of the minister under whose roof the commissioner was then residing. The corruption then and there practised may be taken as the type of the whole British action in this country; agents being sent out to lecture on the advantages of free trade, journalistic correspondents being purchased; Cobden Club publications being gratuitously distributed; and our domestic affairs being in every possible manner interfered with; with simply the effect of proving that there reigns abroad great fear that the Union may speedily achieve an industrial independence and thus emancipate itself from the system described more than a century since by Joshua Gee when assuring his countrymen that more than three-fourths of the products of these colonies were absorbed by British traders, and that the share allowed to the colonists scarcely sufficed to purchase clothing for their families and themselves.

Turn now, Mr. Editor, to your own journal of the 25th ult., and re-read the inquiry there made as to "what possible outlet we can have for our produce in the event of such an important purchaser being lost to us permanently;" following this up by study of your answer to the effect, that "the high tariff so long maintained by the United States has at length brought her producing powers up to her requirements," and that, therefore, "we cannot but greatly fear that the crisis of depression is by no means past, and it is not improbable that the list of works that have to be closed for want of orders will be augmented, and many more workmen be thrown out of employment before the year is out." Turn next to your report of the Address of the President of the Sheffield Chamber of Commerce, and find him admitting that although "they had argued during the term of the free trade agitation that protected industries failed, that the quality deteriorated, and the enterprising manufacturers began to stagnate, that did not seem to apply to American manufacturers;" the general result at which the speaker had arrived being precisely that which you yourself had just before suggested, to wit, that the American market had been lost, and had been so because of a protective tariff such as you have now denounced.

Turn further, if you please, to your report, a part of which is here below given, of the proceedings of a meeting of the Manchester Chamber of Commerce, now but a fortnight old, and mark, first, the alarm excited by the recent and rapid growth of the cotton manufacture of India; and, second, the admission there made that the duty, trivial as it is, is "a great grievance to Manchester," paid, as it is here admitted to be, by the British producer, and Not by the Hindoo consumer:—

*"Mr. W. E. Taylor, Enfield, strongly condemned the Indian import duties upon cottons, and attributed the delay in their abolition to the influence of Lord North-brook, with respect to whom he said that, whatever the causes of his retirement, they would hail the consequences with satisfaction.*

*"Mr. J. A. Bremner also supported the resolution, and especially commended the action of the Chamber with respect to the cotton import duties. He said that the £750,000 raised by means of these duties in India fell upon 80,000 employers and work people in Lancashire, its average incidence being at the rate of £10 per head."*

Had these gentlemen been talking in those Washington committee rooms which their representatives so constantly, and so impudently, invade, or through our public journals, they would have insisted that it was the poor consumer who paid the duty, but here, among themselves, they admit what they and we know to be the fact, that it is they who pay and they who are to be benefited by its abolition.

Look next to the Cobden Club, a body of English gentlemen, and see it, as we are now assured may be done, in defiance of your own denunciation of the document as unworthy of credit, scattering broadcast throughout Italy a paper by one of its members who claims to be recognized as an American, every page carrying with it evidence of that gross misstatement in reference to the working of the protective policy in this country, throughout the last dozen years, which had led the *Times* to its repudiation.

Allow me now, Mr. Editor, to ask if there can be better evidence of weakness than that which is above exhibited? Strong men can always afford to speak the truth. Weak ones only find themselves compelled to resort to falsehood.

Turn back a few months and study for yourself the facts connected with the urgent request made to M. Chevalier when last in England, to the effect that he should urge upon his government some relaxation of that

protection of the sugar manufacture by aid of which French refiners were driving those of Britain out of their own markets; continental beet growers meanwhile threatening annihilation of the cane growers of Britain's tropical possessions. Turn next to a file of the *Pall Mall Gazette* and study the exhibit there made, but few weeks since, of the trepidation caused by the suggestion that Austria had determined upon the adoption of specific duties, thereby putting your shoddy cloth and cinder iron upon a level with the more honest products of Germany and of France. Turn to the *Economist*, the *Manchester Guardian*, and other journals, and see how great had been the alarm excited by the statement that Italy was surely bent upon "a complete return to the protectionist system." Look next to the joy that has been since expressed on receiving an assurance from the Commissioner that what was being sought was merely increase of revenue without reference to protection. Had Signor Luzzati been further interrogated the rapturous feeling would, however, have been greatly modified by his assurance to the effect that his government had arrived at the conclusions, that for the suppression of brigandage it was indispensable that employment should be found for the Italian people; that for attaining this result it was needed that employments should be diversified; and that, to that end, there should be such an increase of duties as would at one and the same time give both revenue and protection.

Look further in what direction we may, we meet with evidences of a nervous feeling of apprehension singularly corroborative of the views of the great father of economic science when cautioning his fellow citizens against the dangers and difficulties that must inevitably result from an almost entire dependence on the foreign trade.

Referring now to one of the many reports which British ministers are required to make, each and all proving the existence of great anxiety as to the future, allow me to ask your attention to that of Mr. Phipps, your representative in Madrid, in which he so clearly shows how almost marvellous has been the growth of the foreign commerce of Spain consequent upon the adoption, some thirty years since, of a protective system by aid of which an import of cotton, dye-stuffs, and other raw materials, had been substituted for that of cloth and other manufactures. That done, Mr. Editor, mark the astonishment, if not even the horror, he expresses at the rapid growth of the protective feeling; at the action of the government in refusing reduction of existing duties; and especially at the "short-sighted and suicidal" measures now likely to be adopted with a view to bringing about those harmonious relations between agriculture and manufactures which were held by Adam Smith in such high regard.

Passing northward and eastward mark if you please, the alarm that has been caused by reason of the belief that Russian road making must lead to absorption of the trade of Central Asia by Russian manufacturers.

Study then the causes of the destructive and useless war of the Crimea, followed, as it has been, by almost endless negotiations in regard to Turkey and to Egypt and its canal, all tending to prove an anxiety in reference to the commercial future from which France seems so almost entirely exempt.

Proposing in my next to call your attention to the comparative movements of France and Britain, I remain, etc.,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

Feb. 18, 1876.

## Letter Fourth.

THEM change of Mr. Huskisson's opinions in regard to protection followed so closely on large increase in the duties on foreign iron and other commodities, that it was, as I think, but six years later in date. Four years still later came the French Revolution of 1830, and by that time the slight changes which had followed his conversion may be supposed to have begun to produce the effect desired. Taking that year, then, as the starting point of a comparison of the working of protection in France, and free trade in Britain, we obtain results which will now be given, as follows:—

In that year the French domestic exports amounted, in round numbers, to \$100,000,000, or little more than \$3 per head of the population. Thirty years later, at the date of the Cobden treaty, under a prohibitive system, they had grown to \$400,000,000, or about \$11 per head. Since the close of the German war their growth, under a highly protective one, in millions of dollars, has been as follows:—

The population for 1872, Alsace and Lorraine having passed to Germany, was in round numbers 30,000,000, and an export of 800,000,000 gives \$22 per head, or seven times more than that of 1830. Seeing

this wonderful upward and onward progress in face of the general depression that now prevails, an English journalist has recently told his readers that France seemed to bear "a charmed life." He failed, however, to say to them that the charm would be found in the fact that for eighty years the French policy had looked steadily in the direction of development of that domestic commerce which now constitutes the foundation of her great and rapidly growing foreign commerce. Scarcely knowing it, France has been a consistent disciple of Adam Smith.

The declared value of "British produce and manufactures" exported in 1830, was, in round numbers, \$190,000,000, or about \$8 per head; being almost thrice that of France. That of the last five years has been, as here given in millions of dollars:— these last figures giving about \$34 per head of the population; or but about 50 per cent, in excess of the exports of France. It thus appears that under a thoroughly protective system the foreign commerce of this latter has grown with such rapidity that whereas in 1830 it stood to that of Britain as little more than 1 to 3; it now stands as 2 to 3.

Were even this apparent difference a real one, the change would still be most extraordinary, in view of the facts, that, whereas France, in losing her Rhine provinces, had lost more than she had gained in Algeria or elsewhere, Britain had not only added in India, Australia, South Africa, and other of her dependencies, more than 100,000,000 to her population, but had so subjugated the hundreds of millions of Japan, China, and other Eastern States, as to have compelled them to add largely to the markets for her products which she had before controlled.

That it is not, however, a real difference will now be shown, as follows:—

The farmer who has sold his crops has at his command, for any and every purpose, the whole amount they had produced. His neighbor, the shopkeeper, having sold a similar amount, has only his profits, having at his command but a tenth or an eighth of the amount of sales. That the two men thus described are the prototypes of France and Britain will now be shown, as follows:—

At the first of the periods above referred to, both France and Britain sold mainly the produce of their own land, and so it still continues with the former; the foreign raw material entering into her domestic exports not exceeding, probably, an eighth of their gross amount. At that date Britain bought her cotton, but she not only sold her own flax and her own wool, but with the products of her soil she fed the people employed in converting them into the fabrics required in distant markets. Now, all is different. Nearly, if not quite, every pound of raw material—silk, flax, hemp, jute, wool, cotton—entering into the composition of the textiles exported has been brought from distant lands, to be paid for to foreign farmers and planters, and Not, as in France, to her own people. So, too, with the wheat, the cheese, the eggs, the poultry, and other food consumed by the men who work up such materials. Seeing all this, Mr. Editor, may we not assume that a full half of what is given to the world as exports of "British produce and manufactures," is really but a re-export of the products of other lands whose people claim the proceeds, minus the enormous charges made for the work of manufacture and exchange Can it then safely be asserted that the real domestic export of Britain exceeds, if indeed it equals, that of France? It certainly seems to me that it cannot.

The policies of the two countries and their results having been so widely different, we may now look to the changes that, under their influence, have been brought about in the condition, material and moral, of their respective populations.

At the opening of the French Revolution the condition of a large portion of the people of France, as has been already stated, was nearly akin to that of serfdom. To-day we have the assurance of your countryman Mr. Thornton, made after a very thorough examination of the subject, that their condition compares advantageously with that of those of the most favored countries of the world; and that to all appearance the prosperity now so generally evident must continue and increase. So much for a system that, in harmony with the ideas of Adam Smith, has looked to development of the domestic commerce, and has been carried into effect in despite of a warlike policy that has not only annihilated millions of men and thousands of millions of property, but has also thrice subjected the country to invasions, and thrice to heavy taxation for the maintenance of foreign armies quartered upon it. The first Napoleon has told us that it was the empty belly that caused revolutions. May it not then be that to the general prosperity indicated not only by Mr. Thornton but by a thousand important facts, may be attributed the extraordinary quietude of the whole French people while waiting throughout the last four years for institution of a government?

Looking now back in British history, we find the people of Ireland to have been prospering by aid of a legislative independence which had been then secured; Scotland to have exhibited tens of thousands of tenants holding, as they supposed, their lands under titles as secure as were those of the great landholders under whom they held: England exhibiting hundreds of thousands of men living on lands of their own, and giving annually to the nation tens of thousands of youths capable of serving, with advantage to their country and to themselves, in the forum or the field, in the workshop or on the farm; and presenting as fine and intelligent a body of men as had ever been exhibited by any nation of the world. "What now has become of these men? In Ireland, says Thackeray, they have "starved by millions." In Scotland they have been dispossessed to make way for sheep

and deer. In England they have been replaced by farm laborers who have before them, says an Edinburgh reviewer, "no future but the poorhouse;" and who exhibit in the present, as but now described by Mr. Cliffe Leslie, a general sad-ness and stupidity, an absence of intelligence and of energy, that can with difficulty be paralleled in any nation whatsoever, however barbarous.

This is taken from a quotation in the *Journal des Economists* for last month. The original I have not seen. Such has been the result of a century of wars for trade; of "warfare" upon all the nations of the world for preventing growth of that domestic commerce whose advantages the illustrious author of the *Wealth of Nations* so greatly desired to impress upon his countrymen.

The French people furnish to the outer world their own products to the amount of \$700,000,000, the proceeds being so distributed among themselves that the little egg-producing farmer, equally with the great mining capitalist, obtains the share to which he may justly be deemed entitled. As a consequence of this the foundations of the system become from day to day more wide and deep, the societary machine taking daily more and more the stable form of a true pyramid.

The bankers and traders of Britain, on the contrary, pass annually through their hands property that counts by thousands of millions, retaining for themselves so large a share of the *profits* that but little remains for those unfortunate laborers who now represent that admirable body of small proprietors who in the days of Adam Smith furnished the youths of whose achievements Britain now so justly boasts. As a consequence of all this the machine takes daily more and more the form of an inverted pyramid upon whose future calculation can with difficulty be made.

Compare now, Mr. Editor, the two pictures that have been presented, and determine for yourself if men should not be allowed to differ from you in opinion without exposing themselves to the charges of "imbecility and ignorance."

Turning our eyes now to this western side of the Atlantic, allow me to submit to your consideration some important facts, as follows:—

The cotton here converted into cloth in this last year has amounted to no less than 600,000,000 pounds. Of the cloth produced the ex- port was small, and so was the import of foreign cottons, the balance either way being unimportant. The consumption by our own 43 millions of people may therefore be taken at 600 millions, giving 14 pounds, or an average of probably 50 yards, for every man, woman, and child in the Union; that, too, in a time of serious commercial crisis. So much, Mr. Editor, for bringing consumers and producers into near connection with each other.

The quantity of cotton simultaneously worked up in Britain for the supply of her own 33 millions of people, and for the thousand million's of the world at large, was but little more than double the quantity here actually consumed, say 1224 millions of pounds; the power of consumption being everywhere limited by reason of the enormous taxes required to be paid on the road between Carolina, Brazil, and other cotton producing countries on One hand, arid the various cotton consuming countries on the other.

Of all tests of the growth of wealth and civilization the most certain is that which is found in the power of a people for the production and consumption of iron. Subjecting the Union to this test we obtain the following results, to wit:—

The capacity of now existing furnaces is that of five and a half millions of tons, or 280 pounds per head.

Of mineral oils our contribution to the commerce of the world counts almost, even if not quite, by thousands of millions of gallons, little, if any, of which would ever have come to the light but for close proximity of the machine shops of Pittsburg, Cincinnati, and Cleveland. Those shops are as much the offsprings of protection as is the cotton trade of Russia, or of the New England States.

Allow me now, Mr. Editor, to call your attention to an article of your own this day received, in which are given figures representing the trade of Britain with the nations that more or less protect their various industries, proving conclusively, as you there have said, "that the countries which set the greatest opposition to our iron industry are those from which we purchase most largely;" a state of things which you regard as greatly to be deplored. Does this not, however, prove that the countries which, in accordance with the advice of Adam Smith, look most carefully to the promotion of their domestic commerce are precisely those which find themselves enabled to contribute most to the commerce of the world at large?

For an answer to this question look to the report of your minister in Spain above referred to. For farther answer look to the figures here below given representing our domestic exports, and satisfy yourself that it is precisely as we make our own iron, and our own cottons and woollens, we are enabled to become larger customers to the various non-manufacturing nations of the earth.

In the fourteen free trade years ending in 1860 their amount was \$3,400,000,000. In the fourteen years of protection that have just now closed it was \$6,600,000,000. The last three free trade years gave a total of \$920,000,000. The last three of the protectionist years give \$1,985,000,000, being more than 100 per cent, increase accompanied by a growth of population not probably exceeding 40 per cent.

Seeing how fully both American and French facts tend to prove the accuracy of the idea you have now propounded, to the effect that it is the countries which "set the greatest opposition" to your iron industries that find themselves enabled to furnish you most largely with the things you need, may you, Mr. Editor, not find in this important fact some reason for revising the opinions you have "for thirty years" so freely expressed in regard to the "folly and iniquity" of the system advocated by those who, like myself, hold to a firm belief in the teachings of that greatest of economists, the illustrious author of the *Wealth of Nations*?

Respectfully submitting this question to your careful consideration, I remain

Your obedient servant,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

Feb. 22, 1876.

## Letter Fifth.

HAVING thus, for the present at least, disposed of the material side of the question now before us, I have here to ask your attention to the moral one, as follows:—

Early in the free-trade crusade it was announced in Parliament that the smuggler was to be regarded as "the great reformer of the age," and from that hour to the present all the aid in the power of that body to give him has been rendered; Gibraltar, Malta, Nova Scotia, Canada, and other possessions, having been chiefly valued for the facilities they have afforded for setting at defiance the laws of nations with which Britain has professed to be at peace. It is, however, to a larger field, that of Eastern Asia, Mr. Editor, that I now invite your attention, to the end that you may be enabled fully to appreciate the manner in which the "great reformer" has done and is now doing his appointed work.

Prior to the close of the last century, the Chinese government had been accustomed to regard opium as a mere medicine whose use was beneficial rather than otherwise. Eminent and observing men, however, having remarked a steady increase in its consumption and very injurious consequences thence resulting, the matter was brought to the emperor's notice, with the effect of inducing him, in the first year of the present century, to issue a proclamation absolutely forbidding its import, and ordering the infliction of heavy penalties upon such as might be led to act in violation on the law. Nevertheless, despite every effort at its enforcement, smuggling steadily increased until, as early as 1824, it had attained a value of \$8,000,000.

Nine years later, in 1833, the East India Company's charter was renewed, an express understanding having first been arrived at that opium smuggling should not in any manner be interfered with, the home government thus making itself responsible for all the infamies attendant upon a trade since described by the editor of the *Friend of India* as follows:—

*"All the iniquities of bribery, fraud, perjury, and violence, which are inseparably connected with smuggling, are practised; and, occasionally, bloody collisions occur between them and the native authorities. Sometimes, with a perfect understanding on both sides, a sham light is got up between the smugglers and mandarins, in order to display greater vigilance and activity, thereby deceiving the government agents."*

Thus sanctioned by the royal head of the English Church, and by those of its illustrious members who then filled high positions in his government, the trade moved forward with great rapidity, the export of 1837 amounting to 40,000 chests and making a demand on China for no less than \$25,000,000, or thrice that made but thirteen years before. Alarmed at this, the emperor's councillors were urgent with him to sanction domestic cultivation of the poppy and thus stop a demand that was draining the country of all the silver at its command. To this his answer was given in the memorable words that follow, to wit: "It is true," said he, ". I cannot prevent the introduction of the flowing poison; gain-seeking and corrupt men will, for profit and sensuality, defeat my wishes; But Nothing Will Induce Me to Derive a Revenue from the Vice and Misery of My People."

So much for a *barbarian* sovereign for the conversion of whose unenlightened subjects to the pure doctrines of Christianity so much anxiety is felt by many of those eminent Britons whose votes have invariably been given in behalf of the "great reformer of the age," wheresoever found; whether on the shores of the China seas or on those of these United States.

The five and thirty years which since have followed, present the facts that follow, to wit:—

1st. An earnest effort at suppression of the trade by means of seizure and confiscation of all the opium that

had been introduced in violation of the law. 2d. A bombardment of Canton attended with great destruction of property and life, followed by a treaty by which the poor Chinese were required to pay \$21,000,000 for having been so long compelled to submit to the humiliation of being plundered and maltreated by the "great reformer;" and further, to cede Hong Kong, at the mouth of the Canton River, to the end that it might be used as a smuggling depot throughout the future. 3d. The war of 1857, so entirely unprovoked on the part of the Chinese government or people, that it has never yet, as I think, found a defender even in the English press; closing, however, with a treaty by the terms of which the Chinese government, despite of all remonstrance, was compelled to legitimize an annual introduction, counting by millions of pounds, of a commodity that in Britain itself was treated as a poison whose sale was to be subjected to close restriction, and to whose exclusion from Japan the British government had itself agreed.

Bad as was all this, it was scarcely worse than the injury and insult resulting from the fact, that the empire was in a great degree thrown open to the incursions of British agents and travellers, "manifesting," said Sir Frederick Bruce in a dispatch to Earl Russell, "an insolence and disregard to Chinese feelings," greatly exceeding even that which is so usual with those of them who travel in other countries. Confirming this, Lord Elgin tells his readers that he had seldom in the East "heard a sentence which was reconcilable with the hypothesis that Christianity had come into the world, Detestation, contempt, ferocity, and vengeance," as he continues, "whether Chinamen or Indians be the object."

Unceasing outrages provoking on the part of the poor Chinaman occasional resistance, we find this but three years later, in 1860, made the occasion of another war in which the rapid growth of civilization was manifested in the burning of the wonderful summer palace, and the distribution of its treasures, as loot, among the captors.

The treaty of Tientsin provided for its own revision at a future date; which arrived in 1869. On that occasion the Chinese government was urgent for such increase of duty upon opium as would repress its consumption, and to this the British minister consented; but the home government, with Mr. Gladstone at its head, refused its assent, and the duty remained unchanged.

Most anxious, the Chinese commissioners, with Prince Kung at their head, addressed to the minister a communication so affecting in its appeals for mercy to be granted to a great people now becoming financially and morally demoralized by use of a poison the cost of which to the ultimate consumers can scarcely be less than \$200,000,000, that I am induced to ask your attention to a portion of it here given, as follows:—

*"From Tsungli Yamen to Sir R. Alcock, July, 1869. The writers have, on several occasions, when conversing with his excellency the British Minister, referred to the opium trade as being prejudicial to the general interests of commerce. The object of the treaties between our respective countries was to secure perpetual peace., but if effective steps cannot be taken to remove an accumulating sense of injury from the minds of men, it is to be feared that no policy can obviate sources of future trouble. \* \* \* If it be desired to remove the very root, and to stop the evil at its source, nothing will be effective but a prohibition to be enforced alike by both parties. Again, the Chinese merchant supplies your country with his goodly tea and silk, conferring thereby a benefit upon her, but the English merchant empisons China with pestilent opium. Such conduct is unrighteous: Who can justify it? What wonder if officials and people say that England is wilfully working out China's ruin, and has no real friendly feeling for her? The wealth and generosity of England is spoken of by all. She is anxious to prevent and anticipate all injury to her commercial interest. How is it then she can hesitate to remove an acknowledged evil? Indeed it cannot be that England still holds to this evil business, earning the hatred of the officials and people of China, and making herself a reproach among the nations, because she would lose a little revenue were she to forbid the cultivation of the poppy! The writers hope that his excellency will memorialize his government to give orders in India and elsewhere to substitute the cultivation of cereals or cotton. Were both nations to rigorously prohibit the growth of the poppy, both the traffic in and the consumption of opium might alike be put an end to. To do away with so great an evil would be a great virtue on England's part; she would strengthen friendly relations, and make herself illustrious. How delightful to have so great an act transmitted to after ages! This matter is injurious to commercial interests in no ordinary degree. If his excellency the British Minister cannot, before it is too late, arrange a plan for a joint prohibition (of the traffic), then no matter with what devotedness the writers may plead, they may be unable to cause the people to put aside all ill feeling, and so strengthen friendly relations as to place them forever beyond fear of disturbance. Day and night, therefore, the writers give to this matter most earnest thought, and overpowering is the distress which it occasions them. Having thus presumed to unbosom themselves, they would be honored by his excellency's reply."*

Compare, now, I pray you, Mr. Editor, the conduct of these *barbarians*, willing to surrender a revenue of \$8,000,000 derivable from the import of opium, or, indeed, to make almost any other sacrifice in the interests of humanity, with that of those *Christian gentlemen* of her majesty's council who, with a certificate in their hand from the minister just then returned from China, of his belief in the absolute good faith and sincerity of the

Chinese authorities, declined to make any answer whatsoever to this solemn appeal in behalf of civilization.

Almost simultaneously with the determination thus manifested to force a great nation onward in the course of ruin, that same administration was to the last degree urgent in its desire for a commission by aid of which it should be enabled to obtain, at almost any sacrifice, discharge from claims for injuries inflicted upon the American people at a time when it was supposed that, like the Chinese, they were so weak as to be wholly unable to make resistance; and to the end of obtaining such discharge an eminent diplomatist was sent across the Atlantic with assurance of his advance to a mar-quisate in the event of success in his negotiations. Simultaneously, too, that same administration looked on quietly while the Russian emperor reduced to rags that treaty of Paris by means of which he was meant to be trammel led in his movements toward further power in southern Europe and Asia.

Having studied these facts, Mr. Editor, you may, perhaps, now allow me to ask the question as to what would be your own opinion of an able-bodied man, in all the vigor of life, whom you had seen day by day, week by week, trampling, on one older than himself, and so feeble in body and mind as to be wholly unable to make resistance?

Still, further, what would be your opinion of him when you saw him almost simultaneously "booing and booing" to all the men stronger than himself by whom he chanced to be surrounded? My own opinion I cannot here venture to express. What it is, you may, as; I think, very readily imagine.

How the atrocious policy thus described is viewed "by some of the right-thinking among your own fellow citizens, is shown, Mr. Editor, in the following passage from the *Fortnightly Review*:—

*"Mr. Gladstone, in speaking of the opium war with China, once remarked that 'justice was on the side of the Pagan.' Never was this more true than at the present time, when a Pagan government, in spite of domestic anarchy, of the paralyzing influence of official corruption, and of the perpetual menace of foreign intervention, yet nobly endeavors to exert what remains of its shattered authority on the side of virtue and the good order of the State. On the other hand, I know of nothing more ignoble than the heartless indifference with which the failure of these patriotic efforts is regarded by so-called civilized nations, or the immoral cynicism with which English statesmen not only excuse but justify our share in entailing the greatest of calamities on one-third of the human race. If it were possible for us to escape from the responsibility which must ever attach itself to the authors of the first Chinese War; if we could prove that, in forcing the legalization of the opium trade by the treaty of Tientsin, we yielded to iron necessity; if, moreover, we could demonstrate that our duty to India compelled us to prefer the temporary exigencies of revenue to the lasting interests of morality—it would still be incumbent on us to face the fact that our position is at once shameful and humiliating. But when we know that the direct responsibility of every act that has led to the degradation and rapid decline of the Chinese Empire lies at our own door, and that the policy which has borne these evil fruits is still being, in a great measure, carried out by the concurrent action of Anglo-Indian administrators and British statesmen, the ignominy demands some fortitude for us to bear it. We, however, do bear it; and, at the same time, lose no opportunity of ministering to our self-love by pretending that wherever English commerce extends, or English influence penetrates, both confer untold benefits upon the less favored nations of the world."*

So much for the present, and now for the future. That, Mr. Editor, you may clearly understand what is the prospect as regards action in India, I submit for your consideration a passage from the *Contemporary Review*, for the last month, which reads as follows:—

*"The motives of our Indian Government, and its policy with regard to opium, are patent and unmistakable. For the purpose of maintaining and increasing our opium revenue, the government has carefully studied the Chinese market; it has sent messengers to China to find out how the trade might best be advanced. With this view it has been proposed to direct a special inquiry as to the possibility of extending the cultivation of opium in the districts of the northwestern provinces; for this purpose our consuls in the Chinese ports regularly report on the condition and prospects of the opium trade, and for this purpose the Times, in February of last year, called attention to the propriety of appointing a commission of inquiry to ascertain the probable results of Chinese competition with our opium trade. For this purpose it can hardly be doubted the Indian Government are anxious to open up the trade route through Burmah, and so to pour a fresh stream of poison direct on the western provinces of China. It stands confessed that, like prudent people, we take care of our eight million a year; but whilst we do so and maintain pressure upon China, we cannot deny that we are the lineal successors of those who waged the Opium War."*

Having most seriously demoralized the hundreds of millions of people who could be reached by means of the rivers of the east, it is now, as we see, proposed to perform a work of perhaps similar extent by means of roads in the west, and to the end of facilitating the movement, the home government would seem to be preparing for another war upon a people whose defencelessness has been so fully proved; Lord Derby having, in October last, told the people of Liverpool that, "for years past it has seemed probable to careful observers that some collision of this kind would take place. It has come at last, and we must do our best to bring it to good

account, and make it the means of putting our relations on a better footing in future." Treading on worms whose teeth have been proved incapable! of biting, would seem, Mr. Editor, to be a very profitable amusement. That it is not a very unusual one on the part of your *Christian* government is shown in an article of your own *Fortnightly Review*, entitled, "How England makes and keeps treaties," from which I take a passage, now recommended to your careful consideration, and which reads as follows:—

*"In the same way and at the same time, we have" everywhere obtained that our goods shall be imported into all these countries at duties of either three or five per cent. We are continuing to apply to Eastern nations this double system of tariffs, and jurisdiction of goods and judges. To attain those ends, we use all sorts of means, from courteous invitation to bombardments. We prefer to employ mere eloquence, because it is cheap and easy: but if talking fails we follow it up by gunboats, and, in that convincing way, we induce hesitating 'barbarians' not only to accept our two unvarying conditions, but also to pay the cost of the expedition by which their consent to these conditions was extorted from them. We tried patience and polite proposals with Tunis, Tripoli, and Morocco. China was so unwilling to listen to our advice, so blind to the striking merits of our opium and our consuls, that we were obliged, with great regret, to resort to gentle force with her. Japan presents the most curious example of the series; it is made up of ignorance circumvented, and of indignation frightened. Indeed, if we had space for it, the story of the Japan treaties would be worth telling, because it is a very special one, because it is the newest triumph of our justice abroad, and because it may be taken as indicative of our present 'manner,' as painters say."*

The "story" of Japan, so well "worth telling," is this:—

A dozen years since that country concluded treaties with Great Britain, France, and other European powers, closely resembling that with Turkey, and those with other Eastern nations, by means of which they have been so largely barbarized, and so generally ruined. Unused to treaty making, however, the Japanese authorities wisely inserted provisions by means of which it was supposed to be secured that those now made were to be replaced by others at the close of the first decade. That time arrived some four years since, and down to the last hour it was supposed that new treaties would be made. Not so, however, Britain at once asserting that there could be no "revision," except with the consent of both parties, and that until such consent should have been obtained the original treaty must remain in force. From that time the Japanese government has stood in the position of being compelled to submit to all the provisions of a treaty whose maintenance cannot fail to result in utter ruin; or, on the other hand, risk being involved in war with a nation that has always in the Eastern seas more vessels of war than would be required to close at once all that great domestic Commerce now carried on by means of boats and ships between the various towns and cities, islands and provinces of the empire. Here, as usual in all cases in which Britain is interested, the question is one of might and not of right.

Such, Mr. Editor, is the system Against which I have counselled, not only for my own country but for all the countries of the world, that resistance which takes the form of protection to the farmer in his efforts at bringing consumers to his side. Were you a Japanese, would you not do the same? Were Adam Smith an American, would he not be a protectionist? Being a Briton, would he not say to his fellow citizens that all their wars were those of mere "shop-keepers;" all idea of either Christianity or civilization being made to give way to desire for the "almighty dollar," however great the "folly and iniquity" attendant upon its acquisition? Would he not thus exhibit himself to the world as one of that class of thinkers which you have just now stigmatized as composed of ignoramuses and imbeciles? Assuredly he would.

In another letter I propose to furnish an exhibit of the results obtained in India, meanwhile remaining

Yours respectfully,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

March 17, 1876.

## Letter Sixth.

"IN the time of its native princes," says Mr. Campbell in his "Modern India," India was a "paying country," and that such was the fact is absolutely certain. Their number was great and their mode of living luxurious beyond anything then known in Europe; but their people, profitably employed, were probably in the enjoyment of an amount of comfort fully equal to what could have been then exhibited by any of the communities of the



West. Now, however, when that great country has for more than a century, Mr. Editor, been subjected to an exclusive British control, we find a picture widely different; the princes and their, magnificence having disappeared, and their palaces being occupied by mere clerks chiefly employed in gathering up the proceeds of a most oppressive taxation to be thence transmitted to that "city of palaces," Calcutta, where sits enthroned a representative of Her Majesty the Queen and Empress seriously engaged in contemplation of the unpleasant fact, that if he would avoid public bankruptcy he must still further misuse the power to poison and demoralize the hundreds of millions of Chinese people to whom he stands even now indebted for almost a fourth of the revenue he controls, the actual amount thence derived being in the close neighborhood of \$50,000,000. The change thus exhibited is the saddest that history anywhere records. To what has it been due? Let us see!

Local action, local combination, local expenditure of the proceeds, of taxation, domestic commerce, exhibit themselves conspicuously throughout Indian history down to the commencement of the present century. If the cultivator contributed too large a portion of his grain, it was at least consumed in a neighboring market, and nothing went from off the land. Manufactures, too, were widely spread, and thus was made demand for the labor not required in agriculture. "On the coast of Coromandel," said Orme,

Historical Fragments, London, 1805, p. 400.

"and in the province of Bengal, when at some distance from a high road or principal town, it is difficult to find a village in which every man, woman, and child is not employed in making a piece of cloth. At present," he continues, "much the greatest part of whole provinces are employed in this single manufacture." Its progress, as he said, included "no less than a description of the lives, of half the inhabitants of Hindostan."

While employment was thus locally subdivided and neighbor was thus enabled to exchange with neighbor, exchanges between the producers of food, or of salt, in one part of the country, and the producers of cotton and manufacturers of cloth in others, tended to the production of commerce with more distant men—whether within, or without, the limits of India itself. Bengal was celebrated for the finest muslins, the consumption of which at Delhi, and in Northern India generally, was large; the Coromandel coast being equally celebrated for the best chintzes and calicoes—leaving to Western India the manufacture of strong and inferior goods of every kind. Under these circumstances, it is no matter of surprise that the country was rich, and that its people, though often overtaxed, and sometimes plundered by invading armies, were prosperous in a high degree.

The foundation having thus been laid in a great domestic commerce, that with the world at large was great; so great that exchange was then in favor of India with all the nations of the earth. Watt and Arkwright had then however, given to Britain those means of underworking the world which have been since so unscrupulously used; and the monopoly thereof had been established by means of prohibition of the export not only of machinery itself, but of all the artisans by whom machines might possibly be made. To this was now, 1813, added the imposition of heavy duties on the import of India cottons, coupled with a prohibition of duties of any kind on English cottons imported into India. We have thus presented to us a course of proceeding the "folly and iniquity" of which are without, precedent in the world's history; yet was it carried into so full effect that when Bishop Heber, a dozen or more years later, had occasion to visit the site of that great city of Dacca, which had been accustomed to supply the courts of Asia and of Europe with tissues so delicate as to be likened to "woven air," he found it a mass of jungle given up to the tiger and the elephant; as in fact was more or less the case with all other of the manufacturing cities of what had till recently been regarded as greatest of the empires of the world. As a consequence of this unhappy state of affairs, there went up soon after to the Sovereign, the Parliament, and the people of Britain, a memorial so sad as worthy to be placed now side by side with that of Prince Kung and his fellow councillors; its simple prayer being that, as British subjects, they might be placed on equal footing with other Britons, paying duties as they paid, neither more nor less. Then, as now, however, they appealed to hearts of stone—traders' hearts—their modest prayer receiving no attention whatsoever, and the work of annihilation going steadily forward until the cotton manufacture had disappeared throughout all that great region of country extending from "Bombay to Bokhara, from Smyrna to Samarcand," with "a ruin," said Sir Robert Peel, "without parallel in the annals of commerce."

The demand for labor now so far disappeared that Mr. Chapman in his "Commerce and Cotton in India," an ardent admirer of the system to which that effect had been due, was led, some five and twenty years since, to speak to his British fellow citizens in the words that follow:—

*"A great part of the time of the laboring population in India is spent in idleness. I don't say this to blame them in the smallest degree. Without the means of exporting heavy and crude surplus agricultural produce, and with scanty means, whether of capital, science, or manual skill, for elaborating on the spot articles fitted to induce a higher state of enjoyment and of industry in the mass of the people, they have really no inducement to exertion beyond that which is necessary to gratify their present and very limited wishes: those wishes are unnaturally low, inasmuch as they do not afford the needful stimulus to the exercise requisite to intellectual and moral improvement; and it is obvious that there is no remedy for this but extended intercourse. Meanwhile, probably the half of the human time and energy of India runs to mere waste. Surely, we need not wonder at the*

*poverty of the country."*

With the decline thus exhibited in the domestic commerce there came, of course, increase of difficulty in obtaining the means required for carrying on the government; and, as necessary consequence, a taxation so searching as to embrace not only all the instruments required for household uses, but also those, however small and insignificant, required for any purpose of manufacture; the land tax, meanwhile, being so increased as, according to your fellow-country-man Mr. John Bright, to take from the wretched laborer front 70 to 80 per cent, of the yield of land subjected to a cultivation of the most exhaustive kind. Add to this a rate of interest that for these miserable people ranged between 30 and 60 per cent, per annum, and you will, as I think, see, Mr. Editor, that the causes of the rebellion of '57 lay somewhat deeper than in the requirement of the government that sepoys should bite off cartridge ends that had been dipped in grease. Had there existed no better reason than this the close of that rebellion would not have been marked by those cold-blooded murders by which it now stands so much distinguished. Of all men there are none so bitter as the disappointed trader, and the Indian government had thus far been simply a representation of that "nation of shopkeepers" whose advent upon the stage was so greatly deprecated by Adam Smith.

With the close of that rebellion we reach the termination of the existence of the East India Company as a territorial power, and the commencement of that British Indian empire of which her majesty the queen is hereafter to be styled the empress. From that time forward the people of India were, as might have been supposed, to be regarded as fellow subjects with the men of Britain, liable to performance of the same duties, and equally entitled to claim respect for rights. Eighteen years having now already passed since such change in their political condition had been made, we may here inquire into the changes in their material and moral condition that have been brought about, as follows:—

The territory of the empire equals that of all Europe, Russia excepted; and its population now numbers two hundred and forty millions, being more than that of all Europe, like exception being made. Of this vast area a large proportion, probably half, belongs to the State as land proprietor, the revenue thence resulting being the rent that throughout Europe accrues to the proprietor subject to claims of the State in the form of tax. That rent now but little exceeds \$100,000,000, giving an average of twenty cents per acre from 500,000,000 acres; and yet the charge, as has been shown, frequently much exceeds fifty per cent of the gross produce, and rarely falls below it. What, under such circumstances, is the condition of the poor agriculturist? What can be his power to contribute to the commerce of the world by making demand for the products of other lands I leave it to you. Mr. Editor, to determine.

Unable to obtain further contributions from the land, the government finds itself perpetually in need, and hence it has been that a writer in one of your public journals, some four years since, felt himself warranted in thus furnishing description of the movement:—

*"In the last ten years the salt tax, already most oppressive, has been five times increased; a heavy income tax has been imposed, and taxes on feasts and marriages have been proposed; two and a quarter millions of people have died of famine; the debt, including guarantees of badly constructed and expensive railroads, has grown to nearly \$500,000,000, the sole reliance for payment of Interest thereon being now found in the continued maintenance of the power to poison the Chinese people with the produce of Indian opium fields."*

Salt being a prime necessity of life, and the income derived from its consumption being in the neighborhood of \$30,000,000, or almost a third of that derived from the land, I have now to ask your attention to the tax thereon, and its effects, as follows:—

To a great extent the manufacture is a monopoly in the hands of government, requiring for its maintenance, as we are told, an army of thirteen thousand men. What additional supplies are required might readily be obtained from provinces on the coast, and mainly from Orissa; but, as if to prevent development of such industry, the salt there produced is, on free trade principles, equally taxed with that brought from England as ballast for ships coming to load with rice, jute, cotton, and other rude products, and paying, probably, as freight less than would be required for carriage of the home product to the markets of the provinces north and east of the Hoogly. As a consequence, these latter are so well supplied with foreign salt that, at times, the domestic manufacture is entirely suspended; poor people who see it then wasting almost at their doors being required to pay for what they need at so high a price that the fish in which their rivers so much abound is merely dried in the sun to be thereafter eaten in a half putrid state. The cost of manufacture is 16 cents per cwt. The tax is 104 cents, and it is said, therefore, to be not unusual to give for a pound of salt no less than nine pounds of rice; thus reversing the order of things here observed, where the *protected* salt manufacturer is accustomed to give several pounds of salt for a pound of flour.

The combined revenue derived from salt, one of the most pressing needs of India, and from opium, the great enemy of China, varies little from \$76,000,000; or three-fourths as much as the rents derivable from a territory more extensive than France, Belgium, Germany, Spain, and Italy combined, occupied by a people who would gladly work were they allowed so to do. Why is this? For the reason that every step taken by the

government has tended to the suppression of that domestic commerce in whose absence there can arrive no such thing as a real agriculture. It may be said, however, that railroads have been constructed, and that public aid had been given in that direction. When, however, you, Mr. Editor, shall have carefully studied the facts, you will see that these are merely intended as aids to the foreign trade, enabling cotton to reach the ports on the way to Manchester, and British goods to make their way more readily to the interior, to the further destruction of the little domestic commerce that yet remains.

What now, under this admirable "free trade" system, has become the contribution of this vast country and its amiable and well-disposed people to the great commerce of the world? Of cotton received last year in Britain, to be there spun and woven and then to be returned to India, the quantity was 251,000,000 pounds, the equivalent of little more than half a million of American bales. Outside of cotton and of the opium forced upon China, the total annual export, consisting of rice, jute, tea, coffee, and other rude products of the soil, scarcely exceeds \$120,000,000, or fifty cents per head of the total population. Such is the grand result at which we have arrived at the close of a period of nearly twenty years, throughout the whole of which the road to a great international commerce for a grand Indian empire was, as the world has been assured, to be found in the direction indicated by the British free-trade system!

What now, Mr. Editor, becomes of the revenues thus extorted from the poor salt consumers of India, the degraded opium consumers of China, and the wretched laborers on the land of India? For answer to this question, I present an extract from Mr. Torrens's recent work, "Empire in Asia," which reads as follows:—

*"Nineteen-twentieths of our taxes are annually, monthly, it might almost be said' daily, respent among us; while of the revenues of India a large portion is exported hither to furnish us with extra means of comfort and of luxury. The manure is thus continually withdrawn from Eastern fields to enrich the island gardens of the West'. It has been Variously estimated that; irrespective of interest on debt, six, seven, and even eight million a year are drawn from India, to be spent by English-men either there or at home. The process of exhaustion may be slow, but it is sure. .... We have laid the people and princes of India under tribute, and after a century of varied experiments, the only limit of exaction seems to be the physical capacity of the yield"*

Why the yield is so very light, may readily be understood by those who study on the 'shores of the great Indian rivers, and especially on those of the Mahanadi as shown in Hunter's "Orissa," the waste of animal food; the waste of vegetable food in the Pun- jaub and other provinces of the North; the waste of life from frequent and destructive famines; the universal waste of labor consequent upon an absence of demand therefor; and then look to the fact that all this poverty and waste are consequent upon the pursuit of a policy which imposes upon these poor people a necessity for sending the cotton crop tens of thousands of miles in search of the little spindle by aid of which it is made to undergo the first and simplest process of manufacture; to wit, its conversion into yarn. Under such circumstances need we wonder at the poverty which enforces continuance of the infamous opium traffic?

Sir Thomas Munro, than whom there is no higher authority, thus described, half a century since, the people of this great country:—

*"I do not exactly know what is meant by civilizing the people of India. In the theory and practice of good government they may be deficient; but if a good system of agriculture—if unrivalled manufactures—if a capacity to produce what convenience or luxury demands—if the establishment of schools for reading and writing—if the general practice of kindness and hospitality—and, above ail, if a scrupulous respect and delicacy towards the female sex, are among the points that denote a civilized people, then the Hindoos are not inferior in civilization to the people of Europe."*

Recently Mr. Torrens has described the *barbarians* of India, the treatment of whoso descendants at the hands of British travellers and traders has been so well exhibited by Lord Elgin, in the words that follow:—

*"The governments of Southern Asia, when we began to meddle in their affairs, were strangers to the system of penal laws, which were then among the cherished institutions of our own and nearly every other European State. While no Catholic in Ireland could inherit freehold, command a regiment, or sit on the judicial bench; while in France the Huguenot weaver was driven into exile beyond sea; and while in Sweden none but Lutherans could sit as jurors; and in Spain no heretic was permitted Christian burial—Sunis and Sheahs, Mahrattas and Sikhs, competed freely for distinction and profit in almost every city and camp of Hindustan. The tide of war ebbed and flowed as in Christian lands, leaving its desolating traces more or less deeply marked upon village homesteads or dilapidated towers. But mosque and temple stood unscathed where they had stood before, monuments of architectural taste and piety, unsurpassed for beauty and richness of decoration in any country of the world." ... "Though the supreme governments were nominally absolute, there existed in the chieftains, priesthood, courts of justice, the municipal system, and above all, in the tenant-right to land, numerous and powerful barriers in the way of its abuse." . . . "Property was as carefully protected by the laws as in Europe, and their infringement sometimes cost a prince his throne Or life."*

It is the hundred millions of an admirable people thus described that have been so sacrificed at the

Manchester altar as to have produced a need for three wars having for their sole object, the raising of revenue by means that are rapidly bringing about a demoralization of the hundreds of millions of Chinese people. May I not be permitted to object to this, leaving you, Mr. Editor, to determine on which side lie the "folly and iniquity" that have been charged?

May I not be permitted to ask you if the "free trade" proceedings of the last twenty years have tended to promote the growth of commerce; to increase the admiration of poor Hindoos for the teachings of the Christian church; or to advance the cause of civilization?

Respectfully soliciting a reply to these questions, I am,

Yours respectfully,

H. C. Carey.

March 20, 1876.

## Letter Seventh.

STUDENTS of Roman history, Mr. Editor, are accustomed to regard proconsular administration as the perfection of all that is discreditable and destructive in the way of government; yet is the little finger of British traders in India more oppressive and more ruinous than were the hands and arms of Verres and Fonteius as exercised in Sicily and Gaul. That these latter largely robbed the subject peoples is very certain; equally so, however, is it that, unlike to what has so steadily been done in India, they never struck at the sources of production. Happily for the provincials the Senate sought dominion, and not a mere monopoly of trade and manufacture. Nowhere do we find it following up rebellion, thus provoked, by measures so mercilessly vindictive as those which followed suppression of that Indian one of '57. Among its members there were many who had "itching palms," but nowhere does it stand recorded that they had invoked the aid of law for compelling subject nations to deal with them for pins and needles, cloth and iron. Nowhere does the government present itself as allied with smugglers for forcing, despite all opposition, supplies of poison on a neighboring and friendly nation, thus making itself from hour to hour more dependent on a trade debasing to its subjects and destined in the end to prove a cause of their utter ruin.

What the Hindoo is now, servile as the men of the so-long-protected Japanese people are independent, he has been made. What he may become, and how he may be led to act, is shown in the assassination of the late Viceroy, Lord Mayo, whose latest expression in regard to dangers to be apprehended in the future is here given, as follows:—

*"A feeling of discontent and dissatisfaction exists among every class, both European and native, on account of the constant increase of taxation which has for years been going on. My belief is that the continuance of that feeling is a political danger, the magnitude of which can hardly be over-estimated; and any sentiment of dissatisfaction which may exist among disbanded soldiers of the native army is as nothing in comparison with the state of general discontent to which I have referred. . . . We can never depend for a moment on the continuance of general tranquillity; but I believe that the present state of public feeling, as regards taxation, is more likely to lead to disturbance and discontent, and be to us a source of greater danger, than the partial reduction which we propose in the native army can ever occasion. Of the two evils I choose the lesser."*

The danger to be apprehended, as here is shown, is that resulting from a constantly increasing burthen of taxation resulting from an absence of domestic commerce, and a constantly increasing necessity for exporting the soil in the form of cotton, jute, and other raw materials, returning nothing to the land. What, how-ever, in this respect, Mr. Editor, is to be the course of things in the days to come? For answer to this question turn, if you please, to a quite recent article of your own, and find therein a recommendation to the poor Hindoos to accept, as a great "boon" to themselves, permission to assume the payment of \$4,000,000 of taxes now paid, as admitted by the men of Manchester themselves, by traders who have been deluging the markets of India with cottons that cannot stand a single washing, in the hope thereby to crush out a native manufacture that, under the stimulus of a protective duty of only 6 per cent., is now advancing with such rapidity that the capital invested therein had grown in the eighteen months ending in November last from twenty-two millions of rupees to almost forty millions. Turn next to another article but few days later in date, expressing extreme anxiety in relation to the constantly diminishing value of that silver coin which now constitutes the solo currency of India; and showing that, to the end of maintaining the salaries of officials and the revenues of British creditors it may become necessary, in violation of all existing contracts, to substitute gold for silver in payment of rent and taxes, thereby compelling the already impoverished cultivator to use a metal to which, as money, he has

hitherto been an almost entire stranger; that, too, at a time when the demand therefor increases from day to day, with corresponding decrease in the supply derived from Australia and from our Pacific States, and as steady increase in the power of the money lender to demand payment for its use.

Less than twenty years since, alarmed at the idea of a deluge of gold, attended with constant decrease in its value as compared with silver, M. Chevalier, as anxious then in relation to government and other creditors as you, Mr. Editor, now are, proposed a de-monetization of the nobler metal, and in this idea he was supported, as I think, by Mr. Cobden. Had their anticipations been realized, and had their suggestions been carried into practical effect, silver would have been steadily growing in price, enabling the Indian government to pay with four or five ounces as much interest as it now pays with six. Would that, however, have led to any such movement toward diminution of rents, as is now proposed in reference to their increase? Not at all, and for the reason that, as we here are told by M. De Tocqueville—

*"In the eyes of the English, that which is most useful to England is always the cause of justice. The man or the government which serves the interests of England has all sorts of good qualities; he who hurts those interests, all sorts of defects; so that it would seem that the criterion of what is right, or noble, or just, is to be found in the degree of favor or opposition to English interests."*

That, in face of Lord Mayo's serious admonition, any such measure of confiscation, or, indeed, any one of increased taxation, will be adopted, can hardly be believed; and you yourself, Mr Editor, seem to regard it as being doubtful in high degree. Something, however, *must* be done if the credit of the government is to be maintained. What shall it be? Where shall we look? To the one and only source that, as you yourself so clearly see, can be at all relied upon, to wit, A Further Development of the Infamous Opium Trade; that being the point at which the Head of the British Church, her ministers, Parliament, and bench of bishops, have arrived at the close of almost twenty years of imperial and free-trade government of the hundreds of millions of people of whom the population of her majesty's Indian empire now consists; and who, before the invasion of your countrymen, constituted one of the most highly civilized and self-supporting nations of the world.

Loud and frequent, Mr. Editor, have been the commendations by your journal of the admirable conduct of the government, and of Sir Bartle Frere, in endeavoring wholly to suppress the little remaining slave trade of Eastern Africa. Singularly enough, however, it has rarely, if even ever, called attention to the fact that there had been developed in Eastern Asia, and by Englishmen, a slave trade such as is here below described:—

*"Between the intoxication of ardent spirits and that of opium," says a writer in the Chinese Repository, "there is but one point more of difference deserving of particular attention, and that is the tenfold force with which every argument against the former applies to the latter. There is no slavery on earth to be compared with the bondage into which opium casts its victim. There is scarcely one known instance of escape from its toils, when once they have fairly enveloped a man. The fact is far too notorious to be questioned for one moment, that there is in opium, when once indulged in, a fatal fascination which needs almost superhuman powers of self-denial, and also capacity for the endurance of pain to overcome. The operation of opium is, on this account, far more deadly by many degrees than its less tyrannous rival.*

*"It is the after or secondary effects of this drug which have such a destructive influence on the constitution. Its continued use destroys the natural appetite—deranges the digestive organs—impedes the circulation, and vitiates the quality of the blood—depresses the spirits, and gradually weakens the power of the involuntary nerves as well as the volitions of the mind; thereby taking away the powers of free agency, and converting the man into the brute. How expressive the remark once made by a distinguished mandarin: It is not the man that eats the opium, but it is opium that eats the man."*

Might it not be well that the British people should free themselves from the beam that obstructs their own sense of vision before undertaking to remove the mote that dims the sight of, the Sultan of Zanzibar?

How this horrible traffic, Mr. Editor, affects the progress of Christianity in the East is shown, says a writer in the *Contemporary Review* herein before referred to, by the fact that sixteen missionaries writing in Canton and belonging to different nations and denominations, concurred in the spring of last year (1875) in stating that

*"The fact that people of Christian nations engage in the traffic, and especially that Great Britain to a large extent supplies the China market with opium, is constantly urged as a plausible and patent objection to Christianity."*

Even more emphatic was the language used by the Bishop of Victoria (Hong Kong)—

*"I have been again and again stopped while preaching, with the question, 'Are you an Englishman? Is not that the country that opium comes from Go back and stop it, and then we will talk about Christianity.'"*

That the christianizing and civilizing effects of the system thus maintained by the heads of the Protestant Episcopal Church of England are not limited to China is, Mr. Editor, proved by an English missionary in Rangoon who states the humiliating fact, that before the English came to Burmah drunkenness and opium smoking were almost unknown, but that those evils have now spread so rapidly that a great part of the revenue of the government is derived therefrom.

From an Eastern proverb, Mr. Editor, we learn that "curses like young chickens always come home to roost." For evidence that the truth of this is proved among yourselves, and that the "curse" inflicted upon China by the British people and their government has now really arrived at home, allow me to ask your attention to the facts here given as to the growing intemperance among the people by whom you yourself are surrounded, readers of the *Times* and others, as follows:—

Consumption of intoxicating liquors in the United Kingdom—

The population in this period increased 7 ½ per cent.

The first of these years was one of great prosperity, American free trade making large demand for the products of British furnaces and mills. The second was one of still continued depression resulting from the great financial crisis of 1866. None of the increased consumption of liquor can, therefore, be traced to excitement in the demand for labor, or to increase of money wages. All the facts connected with the consumption of commodities other than liquor tend, on the contrary, so far as they have come to my knowledge to prove a diminution of consumptive power.

Seeking, Mr. Editor, to understand the causes of the growing demoralization thus exhibited, you need, as I think, do little more than turn to the new *Doomsday Booh*, there to find that by aid of taxes levied upon the people of the world at large 12,000 persons have been enabled to centre in themselves the ownership of thirty out of the thirty-four millions of acres of English land in any manner susceptible of improvement. Add to this the fact that half of Scotland is owned by about twenty persons; thereafter finding in wretched agricultural laborers the descendants of the small proprietors, and the cottagers, of the days of Adam Smith and Arthur Young, and you will find but little difficulty in understanding why such things are. The more that land is monopolized the greater is the tendency toward division of its occupants into two great classes—the very poor and the very rich—slaves on one hand and masters on the other. So was it in Rome. So has it been in our Southern States. So is it now in India. How it is in Britain is clearly shown in the following passages descriptive of the extremes of society, from one of the most respectable of English journals:—

*"It is coming rapidly to this—that a first-class leader of society with a first-class fortune, to be 'on a level with his position,' wants, or chooses to think he wants, a house in London, a house on the river, two palaces at least in the country, a shooting-box in the Highlands, a hotel in Paris as costly as his London house, a villa at Como; a floor in Rome, an establishment in Cairo or Constantinople, a yacht, a theatre, and a racing stud, and then thinks that life is as monotonous as it was when 'in his cool hall, with haggard eyes, the Roman noble lay.'"—Spectator.*

*"Children of both sexes and of all ages, from five up to sixteen, are, in fact, sold by the wretched laborers to the gang-masters at so much per head per week, generally, we are bound to add, out of the direst poverty. The ganger, having collected his children, takes them away to his job, forcing them to walk, or, if needful, to carry each other, for distances, which often involve of themselves great cruelty. Five miles out and five back is thought nothing of, in addition to almost continuous labor for at least ten hours a day . . . The laborers in many English parishes are coarse enough, but among these poor wretches civilization disappears. . . The single amusement is obscene talk, which becomes so shocking that the very laborers are revolted, and declare they would sooner turn out of the road than meet the gangs returning. All the offices of nature, say twenty witnesses, are performed in public by both sexes, without the faintest effort at concealment. Boys and girls of all ages bathe together stark naked, and the most infamous actions are boasted of with a shamelessness rarely found among savages."—Ibid.*

When, Mr. Editor, you shall have given full consideration to the several facts that thus far have been presented, you will, as I think, be led to the conclusion, that, in ascribing to those who, in common with Adam Smith, believe in the advantage of domestic commerce as compared with foreign trade an entire monopoly of economical "ignorance and imbecility, folly and iniquity," you have made a mistake so serious as to warrant careful reconsideration of the whole subject matter. The more thoroughly that shall be given, the more must you be led to appreciate the importance of looking inward and seeing "ourselves as others see us;" the more, as I think, must you be led to the conclusion that in the views here below presented by the great political philosopher of the age there is so large an amount of truth as should make it imperative on the part of every right-minded Englishman to review the past with a desire to amend proceedings in the future.

"The Indian mutiny and the Crimean war show the little sympathy for England abroad.... I venture to affirm that the whole Continent, though it detested the cruelties of your enemies, did not wish you to triumph. Much of this is, without doubt, to be attributed to the evil passions which make men always desire the fall of the prosperous and the strong. But much belongs to a less dishonorable cause—to the conviction of all nations that England considers them only with reference to her own greatness; that she has less sympathy than any other modern nation; that she never notices what passes among foreigners, what they think, feel, suffer, or do, but with relation to the use which England can make of their actions, their sufferings, their feelings, or their thoughts; and that when she seems to care most for them, she really cares only for herself. All this is

exaggerated, but not without truth."—De Tocqueville, *Correspondence and Conversations with N. W. Senior*, London, 1872.

Since the date of the letter from which this passage has been taken, little less than twenty years have passed. Have they in their course exhibited any improvement in the modes of thought among your countrymen? Have these latter become less selfish than they before had been? For answer to this question allow me to refer you to your own comments, now not a fortnight old, upon Lord Salisbury's lame defence of his Indian policy, to the end that you may determine for yourself if they exhibit a single liberal or generous word in reference to the poor Chinamen; a single word calculated for bringing home to the minds of your readers perception of the fact that relief to Manchester could be looked for in but one direction, to wit, to the extension of a trade more disgraceful to the nation engaged therein than any other that stands recorded, the slave trade not excepted. The Africans imported into the British American possessions, insular and continental, numbered less than two and a half millions not a tithe as many as the Chinese who have already been enslaved and ruined by means of an enforced traffic whose long-continued maintenance must for all the future stand as evidence that, to this hour at least, Britain had had no national conscience whatsoever.

Begging you now to remark, Mr. Editor, that all the "folly and iniquity" thus exhibited comes as necessary consequence of a determination not to permit the people of India to participate with protected nations in the advantages resulting from growth of that domestic commerce so much admired by Adam Smith,

I remain yours, respectfully,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

March 25, 1876.

## Letter Eighth.

IN conclusion, Mr. Editor, allow me now to call your attention to some important facts that present themselves for consideration on a survey of the world at large, as follows:—

The Turkish Empire possesses in an abundance almost every natural advantage. Nevertheless, having been forced to submit to British free trade policy, her domestic commerce has disappeared, and she herself has become so utterly ruined that foreign governments are now preparing to administer on her estate, to the end that their own subjects may be enabled to obtain some portion of their claims.

India, forced to submit to a free trade policy, is now, for means with which to pay the mere interest on her debts, wholly dependent on her ability to extend the destructive and infamous opium trade.

Peru, the States of the La Plata, and other of the Spanish American States that have been mainly dependent upon Britain, are in a state of financial ruin.

Australia, self-governing and determined on the establishment of a domestic commerce, is now, on the contrary, so prosperous that immigration is rapidly taking the place of the emigration that had commenced.

Prussia, having, after many years of effort, established for Germany a perfectly free domestic commerce, finds herself now in the lead of one of the most powerful empires of the world.

France, always intelligently protective, is to-day commercially more independent than any other country of the world.

Prior to 1860 these United States, as has been shown, with two brief and brilliant exceptions, were subjected to an almost free trade system, as a consequence of which exchanges between the North and the South were effected through the port of Liverpool, which thus was constituted the great hub of American commerce. As a further consequence, all the main lines of road ran from west to east, the absence of domestic commerce making it quite impossible that north and south roads could profitably be made. The warp was there but the filling was not, and the more the former grew in size and strength, the greater became the tendency toward separation of those parts of the Union which believed in the freedom of man from those whose belief in the morality of human slavery became more and more confirmed as the necessity for abandoning their exhausted lands, and for transferring their slaves to those of newer States, became more imperative. Of all this the late rebellion was a necessary consequence, the offering thereby made on the free trade altar counting in lives by hundreds of thousands, and in treasure by thousands of millions.—Since 1860, the policy of the country has looked in a contrary direction, toward the establishment of domestic intercourse; as a consequence

of which northern and southern roads, by means of which the various parts of the Union are to be tied together, have now been made, with a growth of internal commerce that places the country fully on a par with any other nation of the world. So much, Mr. Editor, for having, although now for only fifteen years, conformed our policy to the teachings of that greatest of economists, Adam Smith.

Compare now, Mr. Editor, the contributions to the general commerce of the world made by those countries whose policy tends toward development of domestic commerce, with those made by communities subjected to the British free trade despotism, and then determine for yourself which are the parties to this discussion most justly chargeable with the "ignorance and imbecility" of which you have so freely spoken; and believe me,

Yours, respectfully,

Henry C. Carey.

PHILADELPHIA,

March 27, 1876.

## Postscript, April 17Th.

The *Fortnightly Review* for the current month furnishes a paper from Sir George Campbell, one of the highest Indian financial authorities, in which it is clearly shown, first, that the public expenditure has increased, still increases, and must continue so to do; and second, that trivial as is the rental derivable from a territory four-fifths as large and as populous as Europe, the government cannot, dare not, add to it. Why it is that such is the case is clearly shown in an article just now given in the *Contemporary Review*, from which we learn that throughout the Bombay Presidency lands are being everywhere abandoned because of inability on the part of the wretched cultivator to meet the demand for his share of the paltry amount of revenue that can be gathered. In the single province of Guzerat, justly styren the "Garden of India," little less than 8000 such cases, comprising more than 25,000 acres, occurred in the single year 1873; and this example seems to present a fair specimen of all Western India. Look where we may, there or elsewhere, we find evidence that in the absence of that domestic commerce which results from diversification of employments there can be no real agriculture; and, that in the absence of a healthful agricultural population, there can be no steadiness of government. That of India even now totters to its fall, and for the simple reason that the British free-trade policy has been steadily removing the foundation on which it had been built.

Southern California. Horticulturist. VOL. II No 2. Los Angeles, Cal., December, 1878.

## *The Foreclosure of the Mort-Gage.*

By Mrs. E. T. Corbett

Walk right in the sittin-room, Deacon; it's all in a muddle, you see,  
But I hadn't, no heart to right it, so I've just left everything be.  
Besides, I'm a-goin to-morrow—I calk'late to start with the dawn—  
And the house won't seem so home-like if it's all upsot and forlorn.  
I sent off the children this mornin'; they both on 'em begged to stay,  
But I thought 'twould be easier, mebbe, if I was alone to-day.  
For this was the very day, Deacon, jest twenty years ago,  
That Caleb and me moved in; so I couldn't forget it, you know.  
We was so busy and happy!—we'd been married a month before—  
And Caleb *would* clear the table and brush up the kitchen floor.  
He said I was tired, and he'd help me; but law! that was always his way—  
Always handy and helpful, and kind, to the very last day.  
Don't you remember, Deacon, the winter I broke my arm  
Why, Caleb skursely left me, not even to 'tend to the farm.



There night and mornin' I saw him, a-settin' so close to my bed,  
And I knew him in spite of the fever that made me so wild in my head,  
He never did nothing to grieve me, until he left me behind—  
Yes, I know, there's no use talkin', but somehow it eases my mind.  
And he sot such store by you, Deacon, I needn't tell you now,  
But unless he had your judgment, he never would buy a cow.  
Well, our cow is gone, and the horse, too—poor Caleb was fond of Jack,  
And I cried like a fool this mornin' when I looked at the empty rack.  
I hope he'll be kindly treated; 'twould worry poor Caleb so  
If them Joneses should whip the cretur—but I s'pose he ain't like to know.  
I've been thinkin' it over lately, that when Mary sickened and died,  
Her father's sperrit was broken, for she was all us his pride,  
He wasn't never so cheery; he'd smile, but the smile wa'n't bright,  
And he didn't care for his cattle, though once they'd ben his delight.  
The neighbors all said he was ailin', and they tried to hint it to me;  
They talked of a church-yard cough; but, oh! the blind are those who won't see.  
I never believed he was goin' till I saw him a-lyin' here dead—  
There, there! don't be anxious, Deacon; I havn't no tears to shed.  
I've tried to keep things together—I've been slavin' early and date—  
But I couldn't pay the interest nor git the farm work straight,  
So of course I've cone behindhand, and if the farm should sell  
For enough to pay the mortgage, I s'pose 'twill be doin' well.  
I've prayed aga'nst all hard feelin's, and to walk as a Christian ought,  
But it's hard to see Caleb's children turned out of the place he bought;  
And readin' that text in the Bible 'bout widows and orphans, you know.  
I can't think the folks will prosper who are willin' to see me go.  
But there, I'm keepin' you, Deacon, and it's nigh your time for tea.  
"Won't I come over?" No, thank you; I feel better alone, you see,  
Besides, I couldn't eat nothin'; whenever I've tried it to-day  
There's something here that chokes me. I'm narvous, I s'pose you'll say.  
"I've worked too hard?" No, I haven't.  
Why, it's work that keeps me strong;  
If I so there thinking I'm sartin my heart would break before long.  
No, not that I care about livin'. I'd rather be laid away  
In the place I've marked beside Caleb, to rest till the judgment-day,  
But there's the children to think of—that makes my dotty clear.  
And I'll try to foller it, Deacon, though I'm tired of this earthly speer.  
Good-bye, then. I shan't forgit you, nor all the kindness you've showed;  
'Twill help to cheer me to-morrow, as I go on my lonely road.  
For—What are you sayin', Deacon? I needn't—I needn't go?  
You've bought the mortgage, and I can stay? Stop! say it over slow.—  
Jest wait now—jest wait a minute—I'll take it in bime-by.  
That I can stay. Why, Deacon, I don't know what makes me cry!  
I haven't no words to thank you. Ef Caleb was only here,  
He'd sech a head for speakin', he'd make my feelin's clear.  
There's a picter in our old Bible of an angel from the skies,  
And though he has no great coat, and no spectacles on his eyes,  
He looked just like you Deacon, with your smile so good and trew,  
And whenever I see the picter, 'twill make me think of you.  
The children will be so happy! Why, Debby will 'most go wild;  
She fretted so much at leavin' her garding behind, poor child!  
And, law! I'm as glad as Debby, of only for jest one thing—  
Now I can tend the posies I planted there last Spring  
On Caleb's grave; he loved the flowers, and it seems as if he'll know  
They're a-bloomin' all around him while he's sleepm' there below.

THE little girl rattled it off as if she knew it by heart: "Why do ducks put their heads in the water? For divers reasons. Why do they take them out? For sundry purposes. Why do they put them in again? To liquidate their little bills. Why do they take them out again? To make a run on the banks."

THE quiet fellow in the corner who lets his rival do all the talking generally marries the girl.

## ***Malaga Raisins.***

A California Viniculturist Studying the Raisin—Growing Business—Resemblance of California to Spain.—Planting and Pruning the Vine—Varieties of Grapes—Gathering, Sorting, Drying and Preserving—Price of Labor, etc.

Correspondence of the S. F. Bulletin. MALAGA,

Sept, 12, 1878.

I have now spent some weeks among the growers and shippers of raisins, and will give you the result of my investigations. It is not usually an easy task to gain information in a foreign country, but I have been fortunate enough to make the acquaintance of one of the most prominent American merchants, W. C. Biven, who has done everything in his power to facilitate my investigations, giving me much valuable information in his line, also introducing me to planters and practical men, among them J. A. Marks, proprietor of the famous property La Perla—a thoroughly scientific and practical gentleman, who conducts his own place, and is conversant with all the details and practical points in raisin culture, and to whom I am much indebted for what I have learned. I must confess that my impression of the raisin district was not correct. I had always pictured to myself the Veja of Malaga, with its fertile land, the home of the raisin vineyard. This is not the case. A large portion of the moist, rich level land is in sugar cane and other crops, with only a few vineyards; on the higher and dryer portions, as well as the hill-sides, are the majority of the raisins produced.

## **California's Resemblance to Spain.**

Anyone familiar with California cannot but be struck with its resemblance to Spain—the same hot, sunburned country, the same red clay and slate and shale. This part is especially like the foot-hills of the Sierra Nevada. There are abrupt mountains wholly barren, then there are many little hills which slope off to the sea. These have soil enough in most cases to produce something. Where they are not rocky they are planted in olives and grapes. Many vineyards are on comparatively level ground on the higher portions of the veja. In the ravines and low flats between the hills, where the lands can be irrigated, lemons are grown, and make quite a profitable crop as they are early in market.

## **A Dry Season.**

This season, has been one of unusual drouth, no rain since April, and everything suffers. The vines have, most of them, lost their leaves; the lemons that have had but little irrigation are wilted, and will, if no rain falls, soon lose their crop. Everything looks dry and parched. They have had but slight rains for the four years past, which' makes the springs low.

## **The Vineyards.**

On the rich bottom lands there are a few vineyards. They are quite thirfty and produce good crops. They are irrigated in the month of May Of the character of the raisins produced I am not able to say with certainty. Some say they are good, and others that they shrivel after being packed, although at first they appear good. By far the greatest portion of the raisins are produced upon high, dry flats and steep hillsides, some of the vineyards extending down to the Mediterranean Sea. The soil, wherever I have been, is a strong rocky loam, sometimes red, sometimes more of a yellow cast, very full of stones; in some cases the whole surface was covered so that no soil could be seen. I have seen vines producing good crops on hillsides so steep that it is with difficulty that a person can pick the grapes. In the most thrifty vine-yards—those in Veja—the vines will equal many in

California, but those on dry land are very small. These vineyards are not planted in such regular rows as we find in California, but are often very much out of line. When a vine dies out it is the custom to layer in its place, and if it is a foot or so out of the row it is not noticed; it is not of so much importance as they work the ground wholly by hand, giving it two workings in the year.

## The Harvest—Pruning.

The harvest commences in dry seasons like this about the fifth of August, and continues about a month. Upon the richer land they are later. The reason of their being a month earlier than California I attribute to the climate being milder in the months of April and May, and the nights being warmer throughout the year. It may be that their maturity is hastened by the manner of planting. The crowns of the vines only are level with the surface, the dirt being drawn away from them and hilled up between the rows, leaving the vines in little hollows. The manner of pruning is like ours, by the short spur system, leaving from three to five spurs, which are cut back to *one eye*. Sometimes, when the vine is quite thrifty, a shoot is left some three feet long, but this is not considered good culture, and when vineyards are let out they have it understood that not more than one eye shall be left.

## Average Yield.

The average yield is from one to three pounds of grapes per vine upon the hill and dry plain vineyard. The irrigated vineyards upon the Veja produce more, but as they are limited, their product would not change the estimate materially. This low average will probably astonish some of our cultivators, but it is fully as great as any I have seen, either in France or Spain.

## Kind of Grapes.

The only grape they plant here is the Muscatella. No one would think of using any other for raisins. A few other varieties are still among the vineyards for eating, but no other raisin grape is countenanced. The Uva Larga I have seen and taken pains to inquire about, and find that, although cultivated in some places, it is not a favorite here, where the Muscatel can be produced. The price of raisins is unusually low, and the production of Muscatellas in excess of the demand, so that nothing but first-class raisins are wanted. The Uva Larga is smaller than the Muscatella, tender and transparent. The raisins look well, but shrivel more than the Muscatella. It has three good sized seeds, and is a very abundant bearer. I will now speak of the character of the grape known here as the Muscatella. I find no one who grows the 'Muscat of Alexandria, so that they cannot be compared upon the spot. It is above the average size of the Muscat of Alexandria as it is produced in California, although this is a year of unusual drouth, it is of a much more delicate character. The skin is thinner, and the seeds much smaller and more tender. It does not have so strong a musk flavor. That it is not the Muscat of Alexandria I think any one of experience will see directly.

The climate seems to be perfectly adapted to this grape. Their mode of culture, working all by hand, and the exceedingly small amount produced per vine, tends to the production of large fruit. I have bearing vines on my ranch at Stockton from a vineyard near Malaga. The grapes are not so delicate as those produced here, the skin is tougher and the seeds larger. Still they are superior to the Muscat of Alexandria. My vineyard is not favorable to the Muscat family, and I believe there are many places in California better adapted to their culture than the heavy soils of San Joaquin County.

Another point that I notice in these grapes, as well as in others, there is much difference in the size of the grapes upon the same bunch. Ours are much more uniform.

## Drying the Grapes.

Their mode of drying is in the sun upon platforms. Drying by artificial heat is not looked upon as a success. One or two parties who have late grapes finish up their crops in drying rooms. The platforms are built upon the sides of the hills, with an aspect to receive the full benefit of the sun. If the ground is level, which is not often the case, they build a back side wall of masonry and fill it with dirt. They dry wholly upon the ground, using no cement or anything but the earth. The platforms are divided into beds of about fifteen feet wide, between each

two beds is a path, and on the outside of them is a low wall of stone or brick about ten inches high; through the centre also is a row of bricks. They are to support the cover of boards. The beds are made so that no rain can get into them from the path.

The pitch or angle is from thirty to forty-five degrees, according to the hill. They must be steep enough to carry off the water. Sometimes they are built upon level ground. They then use canvass covers, stretched over the ridge pole. Sometimes corrugated iron is used, by having one side of a bed, say eight feet wide, made one foot higher than the other. Boards are mostly used upon the platform, where there is slope enough to carry off the water. They are a little longer than the width of the beds, say sixteen feet by one foot wide. They are lapped over each other from bottom to top. The iron covers are the best, and in the end, perhaps, the cheapest.

Some people will be surprised, as I was, to learn that they take no pre-caution to keep the dust from the grapes. They grow by the side of roads quite as dusty as we have. The platforms are not free from dust. Still, it does not seem to adhere to the raisin, but they say it preserves the bloom.

In building platforms I should be governed by the locality. If upon rolling land, where the inclination necessary can be had without much expense, I should build inclined platforms; but upon level land, where stones for back and side walls are expensive, I would build a level floor and cover with canvas or corrugated iron.

If it is necessary to hurry up the drying of the grapes, they are covered after three days; but if there is no hurry, the covers are not put on. By following their methods, I believe we can dry our grapes in the same time that they do here—that is, in fifteen days. I have found grapes under the board to be quite warm in the morning, but we must always remember that the nights are always warmer than in California.

Canvass covers do not hold the heat as well as boards, and upon level platforms the grapes are from two to three days longer in drying, but are found to be quite convenient in case of rain. Corrugated iron covers are much the best, and keep the heat in.

## The Climate.

The climate, during the month of August is not so dry as ours—I speak of the country east of the range. Although it seldom rains, and the dew is not heavy, the prevailing wind from the north is soft and balmy, containing a little moisture, but the east and south is very dry, shrivelling up the grapes. The south is especially a desiccating wind. Most of the raisins made in California are too dry. They should even be covered at midday. We are having quite a heavy rain, and many of the platforms have the remains of their crop on yet, but they are in no danger of injury.

## Gathering the Grapes—Sorting.

In gathering the crop the vines are gone over carefully, and only such bunches as are perfectly ripe are picked. They pick into round, flat baskets, only one tier high, and never upon each other. They are also careful not to touch the bunch in gathering. They carry them to the platform upon their heads. They are laid quite thickly upon the ground, with their best side down. Every grape-grower knows that one side of a bunch of grapes looks better than the other; the side which shows the most stem should be placed uppermost. The reason for this is that the best grapes being upon the ground do not receive the direct rays of the sun until almost cured, which makes them handsomer and preserves their bloom. After eight or ten days they are looked over, and all that are cured are cut out and the rest are laid again upon the ground, just as they were before, and not turned, as is supposed to be necessary by some. The process of curing lasts usually fifteen days. An experienced workman now takes them up, rejecting those that are not cured, and places them carefully upon a tray. They make two qualities, according to the color, which is quite unnecessary, as they assume the same color after being packed a short time.

## Classification.

They are taken to an assorting shed where each bunch is classified according to the average size of its grapes. They cut out all over and under" the size of the average bunch; each size is placed in separate trays. Some packers make five separate classes, some three, of the best. They are distinguished by the number of crowns. Then there is a poorer kind called Best London Layers—and one called Layers. They also have a seedless kind which is sifted out of the whole lot. The loose Muscatels are made in the classification as will be

explained. The No. 1, No. 2 and No. 3 are very fine, extra size and great care is taken in packing. They use a wooden frame of the size of the box and one inch or more high. The bottom of this is covered with very fine fruit, which are pressed down separately with the thumb, after which the sides are gone over in the same manner. The centre is next filled in, the whole is pressed down slightly with a board, and the layer put on, which is arranged with great care. They are not so dry as the balance of the box. The severe classification which they have undergone has diminished the number of grapes to five or six in a bunch. These are arranged in rows very regularly. After this is done each one is raised and a raisin is put under for a cushion, as they call it. The reason for this is they press out the upper raisin and make it look larger.

## **Curing, Pressing and Packing.**

The upper tier being not so well cured as the rest, they are put in the sun several days. After being fully cured they are pressed. The pressing injures some of the top layers, so they have to be replaced, and everyone has to be lifted and the cushion turned over. This gives them a fresh look. The papers are then put on and the forms put in the sun to heat, after which they are packed. The reason for packing warm is that they have a fine perfume on being opened, which they would not have if pressed cold. But little care is taken with layers, as they are a cheap kind. They are mostly used in the United States, but the demand for better kinds is growing. The loose Muscatels are the single grapes which are cut from the bunches, and are of the best quality. They pick the largest out for the first quality.

I have given the method of packing, not that I should wish any one to follow it. This can hardly be done as the price of labor is in California. It costs one day's labor to pack a box of either of the three best kinds. They are obliged to handle the fruit over so many times that it must injure it, and it is not very cleanly.

## **A Suggestion.**

The most economical way would be to make two classes of loose Muscatels, which are much sought for and really are cheap and good, as they have no stems, and have not been handled so much. If layers are in demand they could be easily made by putting in good whole bunches, but they are fast going out of fashion; perhaps that the new style of packing excludes most of the best fruit from them.

## **Prices of Labor.**

In the price of labor these people have a great advantage. The wages of the working man or woman are very low. I cannot see how they can get the necessaries of life, as provisions are very high.

The following has been given me by reliable parties: For digging in the winter, done with a hoe with a short handle with a long blade, very hard work, 30 cents per day without board. For picking the crop, 15 to 17 cents, and in some cases as high as 30 cents and board. I found only one man who paid the latter price. For packing—experienced men—30 cents and board. They do not live very high so that we can estimate the board at 15 cents per day. The foreman upon one of the largest places, where much responsibility is attached gets \$20 per month and house rent. He is considered a very fortunate man, as he is employed the year round. When we consider that these workmen do not get steady work, we can imagine them to be poorly off.

## **This Business Overdone.**

And now about the proprietors. The great demand for raisins stimulated the business so much that if these people are to be believed the raisin crop is much in excess of the real demand, and they are now selling for little if anything above cost of production. I am inclined to believe that they do not more than pay expenses, and very low interest. It must, however, be remembered that almost every branch of industry in all parts of the world is now suffering. People are economizing, and why should not a luxury like raisins suffer also?

## **An Apology.**

I must confess that I have not done this subject justice. It requires months instead of days, to learn the practical part of so great an industry as this, but I hope I have added a little to the knowledge already diffused,

and if I have cleared up some of the doubtful points, I am satisfied.

## **Plants from Europe.**

S. F. Bulletin.

W. B. West, of Stockton, whose letters from France and Spain to the *Bulletin* have been read with much interest by horticulturists, reached home a few days ago. On his travels through Spain, France and Italy, he has acquired a great deal of information, which he has not yet published concerning the cultivation of the orange, lemon, Olive, walnut, filbert, etc., and the production of raisins, figs and prunes, with the publication of which the fruit-grows of the State would no doubt be benefitted. He has brought back a stock of trees and vines of the most desirable varieties in each class for propagation, which will prove of great value to the fruit-growing interest.

Among the more important of his list may be mentioned the shipping grape of Almeria, known as the *Loja*. It is large, white, firm, pulpy variety, which keeps until April or May, and is shipped, packed in ground cork, in immense quantities to other parts of Europe and to the United States. As it is the only European grape that our shippers have to compete with in New York and other eastern markets, it is important that it should be grown here. Another good shipping grape, a large, white, firm-fleshed, Italian variety, from the vicinity of Naples, described in some French book as *Doigt de Donzelle* (damsel or maiden finger). The collection also includes the *Uva Larga*, which is used to some extent in Spain for raisins where the muscat will not thrive. It may prove of service in such localities on this coast, although it is capable of producing only a second class raisin.

Mr. West recognized an old acquaintance among the grapes in the markets of Valencia and Cartagena. This was unmistakably the well known Mission variety of California, and was the product of the vineyards in the vicinity of those cities. The grape known here as Flame Tokay he also found as a market variety in the towns on the eastern coast of Spain.

Of walnuts, he has secured several of the best, including the *Mayette*, a large nut of good quality, and very productive, which reproduces itself from seed. The *Tardif de la Saint Jean* (late *St. Johns*), so named from the fact that the flowers do not put forth until St. John's Day, thus escaping entirely the late spring frosts, which often blast the crop of other varieties, is very productive, and is highly recommended by several French writers. Other varieties embrace *Noix a Bijoux*, so named from the shell of the nut, which is of extraordinary size, being hinged together by jewelers as a receptacle for various trinkets, and the *Præparturiens*, which is remarkable for commencing to bear the third year from the seed. This is not, however, the first importation of the variety.

A stock of plants of the best Barcelona and Naples filberts was secured, including seven of the leading kinds, besides a quantity of Neapolitan chestnuts and cork oak acorns for planting.

The selection of fruit trees include, the best Spanish and Italian oranges from Seville and Sorrento, Malaga Lemons, and an assortment of the finest varieties of olives, both for pickling and for oil, besides a large quantity of ornamental trees and shrubs.

Our nurserymen, grape growers and orchardists are spending large sums of money to obtain everything of value that is adapted to this climate, and it will not be long before the California fruit grower will be able to select the most desirable plants of all civilized countries from the stocks grown at his own door.

## **"Eremocarpus."**

Fresno Expositor.

During last Summer we called attention to a plant growing on our plains, generally known as "turkey weed," which we thought might be valuable for its fiber. Our attention was first called to it by seeing in the Spring of the year great rolls of fiber of a strong quality lying on the plains, where the winds had collected it together. The notice which appeared in the *Expositor* was subsequently copied by the San Francisco press, and finally fell into the hands of Prof. Hilgard, of the State University, who sent to us for samples, these were duly forwarded, and a few days ago we received the following letter relative to it:

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, BERKELEY,

Nov. 4, 1877.

J. W. FERGUSON, ESQ.—Dear Sir: By some mischance I had mislaid your letter accompanying the textile plant you sent at my request, and while hunting for it the Los Angeles Fair came on, so I sent the samples of

prepared fiber, as well as a part of the plant itself to Mr. L. M. Holt, the Secretary, for exhibition, crediting you therewith in the name of your paper, albeit without your own name, but requesting Mr. H. to hand the samples over to you after the Fair. Having at last recovered your letter, I now report to you the result of my examination.

The name of the plant is "Eremocarpus;" it is a relation of the nettle on one hand, of the castor-bean on the other. I have heard it called "nettleweed," and it is a good name to give it. It grows about here, and in Sonoma, but is very much smaller in habit. I find that about one-half of the total weight of the dried plant is lost in stripping off the leaves and minor branches. This, as well as the subsequent operations in obtaining and cleaning the fiber, is rendered very unpleasant by the flying off of stinging hairs with which the whole plant is clothed, and which irritate the throat, nostrils and eyes in a very disagreeable manner. This trouble may possibly be obviated by longer water-rotting than I allowed my sample. It is slow to cure; even after ten days the stems did not separate quite readily from the fiber after drying, but as you will see, the fiber is very strong and very abundant, amounting to five per cent, of the total weight of the dried plant. Not having been sufficiently rotted, the present sample cannot fairly show what might be done by hackling and swinging in rendering it finer and more lustrous, but in view of the great strength and abundance of the fiber, and the ease with which the material may be obtained, the plant certainly deserves attention. The form of it which grows hereabouts is so dwarfed that it would be useless to attempt to work it for fiber; but someone in your region who is acquainted with the working of flax ought to give it a fair trial, or if you will send me a somewhat larger quantity in its season, I will work it over once more by the light of the experience acquired.

Very truly yours,

EUG. W. HILGARD.

The samples mentioned have not yet come to hand, but due notice will be given when they do, so that those who may feel an interest in the matter may examine them.

We regret to say that at the close of the Fair the samples of fiber mentioned above were lost and cannot be found. It is now in order for someone to see if the fiber can be worked to a profit.—ED. HORTICULTURIST.

## ***Good Culture Requisite.***

W. H. While In Country Gentleman.

Soils vary in different localities from a light sand to a compact clay, and require peculiar treatment in order to develop fully their capacity of production. No soil will support vegetation unless it contains the necessary elements which form the plants to be grown, and even then it will not support such vegetation unless the soil is in condition to impart freely those elements of nutrition; therefore we cultivate our soils. A soil may be filled with plant food and still be unproductive, owing to its mechanical condition being such that it cannot impart, or the plants cannot appropriate the plant food. Any soil, to demonstrate its full capacity for production, need to be finely pulverized to a good depth, and well mixed. No soil will show its full capacity by merely scratching its surface.

The laws which govern vegetation and growth are the same in every variety of soil, whatever the practices of farming and culture. The first requisite is always perfect seed, and as no plant can perfect itself without suitable soil, this would appear as the second essential. Any one of these essentials being deficient, vegetation and growth will be a partial or total failure. Such being the universal laws of plant growth, it will be readily seen what an important part intelligent, thorough culture bears in the production of good crops.

## ***Carp Culture in the Foothills.***

Foothills Tidings, October 19th.

Last year Rev. J. W. Brier, whose "Glen Farm" is out beyond Ophir Hill, three miles from Grass Valley, procured several carp from the original importer into California from Germany, and has since been a close student of their habits and growth, with a view to their general introduction throughout the foothills.

Though young fish when he obtained them, his original stock have already spawned once, and he has a fine school of young carp at this time. As they are said to spawn twice or thrice a year, Mr. Brier expects to be able to supply carp for stocking ponds all through this county a year from now.

He finds them peculiarly and specially adapted to culture in the small ponds or reservoirs, such as farmers must have all through this region for the storage of water for irrigating purposes, if only for their gardens. They are perfectly at home and grow rapidly with little or no feeding—though, of course, when ponds are fully

stocked they will require to be fed, but as they live on anything and everything, like the chicken or hog, the cost of feeding will be light.

Mr. Brier has made a computation, based upon experiments made the summer past, showing the comparative cost and profit of carp and hog-raising for the farm. He finds that 1,000 carp will live and grow finely upon what one hog will—in both cases from birth to two years old. At this age the carp will weigh 4,000 pounds the average lot, while the average porker will weigh 250 pounds. At present prices for the two articles here for food, the fish would bring \$1,000, the hog \$24. Though the prices per pound should become equal, through future production, the difference is wide enough in favor of the fish, and as we have before urged, every farmer in the foothills should stock a pond with carp as soon as they can be obtained.

As the United States Fish Commission did not introduce the carp from Germany till last year—the success of Mr. Poppe, of this State, having first called the attention of the Commission thereto—Mr. Brier will have a stock to supply those who wish to obtain them from as soon or sooner than they; and as the convenience and saving in cost to anyone in this country will be great, it is likely that the five or six thousand he will have for sale next year will be engaged in advance.

THE following interesting statistics furnished the press by the Bureau of Agriculture, illustrates the constant westward movement of the centers of grain production. The product of wheat per capita in New England has fallen between 1849 and 1877 from four-tenths of a bushel to three-tenths. In the same period, in the Southern and South Atlantic States, the per capita has risen from 2.37 bushels to 6.11 bushels, so that these States from buyers have become sellers of wheat. In the Ohio and trans-Mississippi States, in the same period, the per capita produced has increased from 12.05 bushels to 30.94, and in the Pacific States from 2.16 bushels to 27.49 bushels. The wheat crop of 1849 was 100,485,944 bushels, divided into equal volume by the line of 81 degrees west from Greenwich. In 1877 the crop was 365,094,800 bushels, and the center of production the meridian of 89 degrees 0 minutes west. In 1849 the corn product was 592,-071,104 bushels, and the central line the 85th degree west longitude. In 1877 the corn product was 1,342,-558,000 bushels, and the central 89 degrees six minutes. In twenty-eight years the movement westward has been—for wheat, eight degrees and six minutes, about 500 miles, or from the eastern line of Oregon near to the center of Illinois; for corn four degrees and six minutes, 250, miles, or from the eastern line of the counties in Indiana nearly to the longitude of Cairo.

THE RAISIN CROP.—A representative of the *San Francisco Journal of Commerce* while in Sacramento, gathered the following estimates of the present raisin crop in this State: "If the weather keeps clear a few weeks longer, the raisin crop will be the largest ever raised in this State. Deitz & Co., of Sacramento, give 100,000 boxes as the probable quantity, but more conservative estimates by M. T. Brewer & Co., of the same city, agree on 70,000 boxes, of which 20,000 boxes will be A No. 1, and about 30,000 fair quality. Blowers will make about 4,500 boxes, and Briggs about 10,000 boxes A No. 1. It will soon become unprofitable to import any but the very best Malaga raisins for this market." This is the end to be aimed at until even the "very best Malaga" will be of no account here.

AN OPINION OF THE BLUE GUM.—It is dawning upon the minds of many residents of our town that the blue gum, as a shade and ornamental tree is not a success. They are a first rate tree to plant in spots of waste or alkali land on a farm, but grow altogether too large for planting in gardens or near buildings, upon which they are liable to come down sometime with a terrific crash. For rapid growth we do not believe the blue gum has an equal, and therefore are especially adapted for cultivation in places where wood is difficult to obtain and expensive. Several parties in this town have cut down their blue gums to make room for other trees and shrubbery.—*Ventura Free Press*.

ALL men are not homeless, but some are home less than others.

## ***Orange and Lemon Products of the World.***

Agricultural Report—1877.

The statistics of the orange trade, both in this country and in Europe, bear out the statement that but few valuable fruits ever exceed the demand. The following table, showing the importations of oranges and lemons into the United States for the years named, and the consumption of the same, would seem to be sufficient proof of this:

The importations into Great Britain show that the trade and consumption in these fruits have more than doubled in that country during the past ten years. The following table is taken from official returns made by the British Government, and accurately indicate the increase in the trade:

In 1870 the official returns of Great Britain give the following named countries as those from which their supplies were received:

The importations of oranges and lemons into France, from Spain and Italy, have increased in the last few



years more than fourfold in quantity, and amount in value to more than 250,000 pounds sterling per annum.

From the Azores immense quantities of oranges are shipped to Great Britain and the United States, in the export of which 243 sailing vessels and 30 steamers are employed. This shows the importance of the trade to those islands. In 1876, 283,712 boxes of oranges were shipped from the Azores to Great Britain, and 6,798 boxes to the United States. A box may be said to contain three bushels of oranges.

It is said that in these islands the orange and lemon are cultivated with great care, and the branches and limbs are attended to so scientifically that they usually attain gigantic proportions. Single orange trees there have been known to produce 20,000 oranges at one crop.

The island of St. Michael ships to Great Britain and the United States over \$300,000 worth of oranges per annum.

The orange groves in the French colony of Algeria are extensive, and afford a profitable industry to the people. The fruit has acquired in the market a reputation for excellent flavor, and has a ready sale. About 15,000,000 of oranges are exported in an ordinary season.

The exports from Morocco are also extensive, reaching over 1,500,000 per annum.

Sicily exports large quantities of oranges and lemons. The greater part of the lemons received in the United States come from Sicily, which has heretofore almost entirely monopolized the industry of manufacturing the oil of lemon, of bergamot, and trade in orange flowers.

In New South Wales, orange and lemon culture are receiving much attention. In favorable situations these fruits attain great excellence. It is stated on authority of official reports, that one cultivator has realized as much as \$7,500 per annum from three acres of orange trees. The Mandarin orange has been introduced there, and is said to thrive well and produce better fruit at Sidney than it does at Canton. It is described as a very beautiful, dark, orange-colored fruit, with a highly-perfumed rind, scarcely thicker than brown paper, and not adhering to the pulp, which is exceedingly sweet, and of a different flavor from any other orange. The orange groves in this colony are comparatively new, and the trees young; but in some of the older orchards the trees have attained a height of thirty-five feet, the diameter from the extremities of the branches being thirty-three feet. From trees of this size 12,000 oranges are occasionally picked during the year. In the markets of Sidney, Melbourne, etc., these oranges bring 6*d.* a dozen wholesale, which would give £25, or \$125, as the value of the yield of a single tree. The Mandarin variety mentioned above, has here produced 4,100 oranges upon one tree during the season. To keep up the fertility of the soil of the orange groves guano is extensively used. This is spread around the tree on the surface of the land, and is then touched in with the hoe, which treatment of the soil has the effect of making the trees and the fruit beautifully clean.

In South Australia, the orange and lemon thrive well, and many persons are engaged in their cultivation. From official reports we learn that every year about £50,000 worth of oranges are exported from New South Wales and South Australia, to Victoria and other colonies.

One grove in the vicinity of Sydney, it is reported, soli in a year for exportation, 40,000 dozen oranges, leaving 20,000 for home consumption.

Italy carries on a large trade in oranges. The shipments to the United States have reached as many as 600,000 boxes per annum. Their exports to all countries, from the last official returns, were 94,230,000 kilogrammes of two and a half pounds.

The export of oranges and lemons forms an important branch of commerce in Spain. The United States receives many of these shipments.

The orange-peel is furnished by many of these countries in large quantities to Holland, France and Germany, where it is consumed in making liquors and syrups.

Several hundred tons of candied orange peel are said to be used in England alone.

Greece exports over 10,000,000 oranges every year.

About 8,000 cases of oranges are annually exported from Malaga.

In Central India there is a variety of the orange (*Citrus aurantium*) extensively cultivated, which produces two crops a year. To prevent exhaustion of the trees, however, only alternate fruiting is allowed. The bitter orange is of this variety. This furnishes from its flowers the Neroli oil, so delicious and costly as a scent. The high prices of the oil of orange, of citron and bergamot in the East, for purposes of perfumery, should attract attention here, and stimulate an industry in this particular.

From Cuba, Jamaica, Trinidad, and the Bahamas large importations of oranges are received in the United States, which, with other fruits, is the chief commerce of these islands.

Nassau, in New Providence, sends to the United States on an average about 7,594 barrels of oranges every year, and the islands of Abaco, Andros, and Eleuthera, together with New Providence—the Bahamas—a total of 10,000.

West Indian oranges are preferred in the markets, on account of their superior flavor, to those brought from Europe.

The orange trade between Tahiti and San Francisco has been very important and profitable, the production in Tahiti being about 11,200,000 oranges. This trade has declined, however, in consequence of the cultivation and production of this fruit in Southern California.

For nearly 500 miles along the coast of California the orange grows luxuriantly, and its cultivation is receiving deserved attention. Many of the orange trees in the southern parts of this State yield \$100 profit per annum. It is stated that there are over 1,400 lemon trees now in bearing in that State. Official statistics give 14,387 lemon trees and 50,-000 orange trees. San Francisco now receives more than half its supply from home productions. Its yearly requirements are reported to be over 12,000,000 oranges, of which 5,000,000 are received from Tahiti and Mexico.

The manufacture of the essential oils of orange and lemon is a considerable industry in some of the West India and Pacific islands.

In Martinique large quantities of orange wine are made, which finds a ready market in Russia and Turkey.

The Louisiana orange crop for 1870 is estimated to have been over 32,000,000 oranges, which would represent about 70,000 trees, worth over \$210,000.

The annual importation of oranges and lemons into the United States are over 200,000,000, amounting in value to about \$600,000.

An idea of the age which orange trees may attain is furnished by the history of the magnificent one in the orangery of the palace of Versailles, in France, known by the name of Grand Connetable or Grand Bourbon, which is now 451 years old. It grew from some slips of a bitter orange planted in a pot at the commencement of the fifteenth century by Eleanor of Castile, wife of Charles III., King of Navarre. The young plants which sprang from seeds were kept in the same tubs at Pampelunar until 1584. In 1799, more than two centuries after, they were removed to Versailles. The Grand Connetable, The Grand Connetable, which may be regarded as the senior of living orange trees, is still perfectly vigorous and does not exhibit any signs of decay.

## ***Hight of Our Mountain Peaks.***

Mr. A. W. Chase, of the United States Coast Survey, furnishes the *Anaheim Gazette* with the following elevations of the peaks of the Sierra Madre mountains, commencing at the western end of the range and taking only the most prominent elevations:

The two blue peaks behind the San Joaquin rancho, adjacent to Silverado, are: Eastern peak, 5,596 feet; Western, 5,700. The hights are from the level of the sea at mean high water, and were determined trigometrically, and the results can at present be regarded only as approximate on account of the refraction of the atmosphere. To test the relative value of the determination of mountain hights in the southern portion of California by trigonometry, and the measurement of zenith distances by barometrical measure ent and by leveling, Prof. Davidson will institute a series of comparisons sometime in the future, when San Antonio mountain will be leveled.

## ***Maxims for Young Men.***

Never be idle. When your hands are not usefully employed, attend to the cultivation of your mind.

Always speak the truth.

Keep good company or none at all.

Make few promises.

Live up to your engagements.

When you speak to a person, look him in the face.

Good company and excellent conversation are the very sinews of virtue.

Good character is above all things else.

Never listen to loose or idle conversation.

You had better be poisoned in your blood than in your principles.

Your character cannot be essentially injured except by your own acts.

Early in life secure a practical business education.

Do not make too great haste to be rich, if you would prosper.

Small and steady gains give competency with tranquility of mind.

Never play games of chance or make bets of any description.

Avoid temptation through the fear that you may not withstand it at last.

Drink no intoxicating liquors.

Never run in debt unless you see a way to get out again.  
Keep yourself innocent if you would be happy.

## California Fruits.

San Francisco Call.

A late number of the *New York Times* contains an article enumerating the different kinds of fruit which are offered for sale in that city, the places from which they come, and their retail prices. California is mentioned among the contributors as sending apples, grapes and pears, which are extolled for their excellence. California Tokay and Muscat grapes sell in New York' at \$1.25 per five-pound box. "Winter Nelis" pears, at from 30 to 75 cents per dozen. The price of California apples is not given. In our own markets the finest varieties of grapes retail at from 3 to 10 cents per pound, with other indigenous fruits at prices in proportion. Our fruit markets, just at this time, are something handsome to look upon, and the sojourner from a distance seeks them out, that he may feast his eyes, and, perhaps, his palate, also, on a spectacle such as can rarely be seen in any other country. Not the least among the objects to excite his surprise are strawberries and peaches, which can be still had, though it is the 17th day of November.

ORANGES BY THE WAYSIDE.—It is a pleasing and beautiful sight to ride through the streets of the residence portions of Sacramento at this time and witness the orange trees loaded with the golden fruit. There is no longer any doubt that Sacramento may have her orange groves as well as Los Angeles, and it is also certain that in one respect she has the advantage of her more southern sister. The oranges ripen in and about Sacramento about two weeks earlier than they do in Los Angeles. This fact will give our orange or-chards a great advantage in the markets and in their money value.—*Sacramento Record-Union*.

AGRICULTURAL fairs should be advanced schools for farmers, mechanics and artisans. They should go there to know how and what their neighbors are doing. Scan every new object, plan or device, and then go home and wrestle with intent thought to devise something better and finer for another year. This is the kind of opportunities fairs should furnish. And this is the lesson which should be improved, and in this way the world should be elevated. And a farmer or mechanic who does not view a fair in this light does not grasp the importance of such annual gala days.—*Iowa State Register*.

## Poultry.

### *Sitting Hens.*

As an incubator and mother, the natural hen stands at the head of the list. No artificial heat is or can be made equal to the warmth of the parent hen; no mother like the one nature has prepared by instinct to know and feel the wants of her tender off-spring, when rearing them in a primitive state. When prevented from following natural habits, and placed, as it were, under influences foreign to the furtherance of nature's established rules, we must imitate as nearly as possible the conditions that govern these creatures. There is a difference in breeds, and the different breeds should not be allowed to associate together, not only for the sake of keeping each one distinct and pure, but the habits of one greatly interfere with the other. For instance, the sitter usually drops a certain number of eggs and then commences to sit, while the non-sitters continue the production of eggs throughout the entire season.

Perhaps there are no sitters that excel the Light Brahmas, both for the purpose of incubation and afterwards as mothers. For this purpose a hen with a mild, quiet nature is required. This breed has no pugnaeous proclivities, and for this reason, where in-tended to be employed as sitters, should not be allowed to associate with those that do not sit. Most of the non-sitters are quarrelsome, and given to mischief in one way or another. No hen will be allowed to sit where the Brown Leghorns hold domain; they are spirited and quite decided in their ideas. The Brahmas are persistent sitters, and when once thoroughly settled down to the business, can be removed to any place or position desired. To accomplish the best results, the regular sitters should be allowed a separate apartment. A grave mistake is often made in allowing hens to sit where others may lay into their nests. The sitter is always obstinate in retaining the nest, and the layer is determined to deposit her egg therein, and in the dispute oftentimes the eggs are broken. Otherwise eggs are frequently broken in the nest by heavy-bodied fowls, and yet it is expedient to employ such in the rearing of very early chickens. Their animal heat is greater, and young birds must have this, and at the natural temperature. Whenever an egg is broken in a sitter's nest,

which often occurs by a mistake or accident of the hen in going off or on the nest, all the soiled eggs should be removed and washed in lukewarm water. Where choice eggs are to be incubated, it is better to remove the sitter to some quiet, retired place, with a subdued light, where she will be free from annoyance, and be undisturbed by other liens. Confine her for a day or two with indifferent or valueless eggs, until she becomes entirely accustomed to the new situation, which she will in a few days. A little watching is necessary when returning to the nest that she finds the right place.

The Brahmas are tractable in regard to the change, and, as a general thing are to be preferred before all others. When settled down to business, remove the poor eggs and give her good ones. The hen should be gentle, that she may be handled. Put the eggs under the hen one by one as she sits, and give them to her management. They may cost five dollars per dozen, but she will handle them as though they were worth but eighteen cents. If you have valuable eggs, be assured beforehand that you have a good hen—one that understands her business. After the third day (with eggs of the black breeds) the eggs may be candled without injury, if handled carefully, and the lion-impregnated ones selected. With the light varieties, a little longer time is required. If the eggs look dark, they are fertilized. It is better to remove all the clear eggs from the nest as soon as you are certain, that it may not be crowded.

Eggs may be fertilized and look dark, and yet only a small percentage may hatch. The chicks often die when fully formed, without breaking the shell. The writer knows this to be the case with nearly the whole of one hen's eggs. They were strong, largo chicks, but seldom came out of the shell alive. The shells were remarkably thick. It often occurs also that the chick will peep in the shell before it is broken. With a nervous, restless hen, this is destructive of young life, for in her movements to give relief she often crushes the shell and kills the chick. A mother that is hardened at this time against all such cries is to be desired, for, if left alone, the chick will generally need no assistance but a persistently sitting mother. C. B.

## ***Food for Fowls.***

A writer in the *New York Herald* says: "If hens are rightly cared for they should pay from 200 to 300 per cent, profit as layers. They must not be stinted as to space, nor too many kept together. If confined, allow at least a square rod to each fowl. Imitate as closely as possible the condition of the hen in summer, and supply by artificial means the wants which nature supplies in warm weather, and hens will lay in winter. Let the floor of the hen house be of dry earth, with a box of dirt and ashes for their sand bath. Keep their quarters clean by removing their droppings at least three times a week. Give free ventilation. Supposing your hens to be in good condition and healthy when they commence laying, give them the proper food to keep them so. Buckwheat and wheat are the best grains, although for variety other grain must be given. Give cooked food in various ways every day. Mush is excellent, as also fresh meat and scraps from the kitchen. Two or three times a week give fresh bones and ground bones, with gravel and broken oyster shells always within reach. Apples, cabbage, turnips and onions, raw or cooked, will be relished. The later in life a pullet commences to lay the longer she will continue to lay, and the greater will be the uniformity in the size of her eggs. A good Houdan hen will average from 100 to 150 egg a year; but to average that a flock must have care. Thick sour milk or buttermilk is an excellent article of diet through the heated season. The Houdans are very prolific, and will stand a great deal of cold, but they must be kept dry. The Plymouth Rocks are; almost constant layers, and bear confinement well. Their eggs are large and very even in size. Although their frame is not so large as the Brahmas, they are more plump and fatten readily.

HANDLING IMPROVED POULTUV.—One of the important principles in the breeding of improved poultry, and the principle will apply as well to the breeding of stock of any kind, is the absolute necessity that each individual should be absolutely without fear of those who care for them. Many clutches of eggs are ruined every year by inattention to this matter. The birds should be used to being handled, and should be taught to come freely to the breeder or the attendants at call. If birds are early taught this lesson, and are never allowed to be frightened, they will have no fear whatever of those about them, and will soon come to be as much attached to the attendants as the house dog. On the other hand, if allowed to be driven and goaded about they never forget it. If properly handled they will not only give uniform satisfaction while setting and rearing their flocks, but will also thrive better and fatten more kindly.

## ***PLANTS FROM HOT DRY, COUNTRIES.***

By W. A. Sanders.

In looking over the map of the Old World we see two extensive desert regions, that of Northern Africa and

that of Central Asia. And when we realize that the only drawback to our beautiful California, is a climate too dry to be perfectly adapted to many of the products of the moist climate of Europe, and the scarcely less moist climate of the Eastern States, it becomes a subject of interest, of *deep* interest, to learn how mankind live in the dry regions of the earth, and what the earth produces in those dry countries.

Notably among those products suited to very dry climates is the sorghum or broom-corn family. History does not reach back to the beginning of its culture.

## The Corn of Egypt,

spoken of in the beautiful story of "Joseph and his Brethren," in the old Bible, were varieties of this family, the brown and the white Dhoura, *sorghum dura* and *sorghum cernuum*, known in our State as the white and brown Egyptian corn. It is still the chief product of the dry region of Northern Africa. Baker, the great African traveler, in his "Travels in Africa," speaks of it as giving under favorable conditions the enormous yield of 500 bushels, 30,000 lbs., annually per acre. From my experience in the rich soil and the hot climate of our valley I believe such a yield possible. It has here yielded nearly half of that amount, and yet it was cut down by frost in midst of its growth, while in the climate of the region where Baker saw it, it would have gone on producing a crop every month for the remaining four months that would have made up the entire year.

## China Corn.

While these have been feeding for thousands of years the people of the dry regions of Africa and Arabia, the no less ancient, and, in agriculture, more skillful millions of the dry regions of Central and Northern China have been cultivating the same plant, and from their superior culture and selection of seed and grown in their shorter seasons it now comes to us as an improved and earlier, better-yielding variety. Botanists have given it the distinction of a separate variety under the name of *sorghum halapense*. Rev. A. Wylie, D. D., in his article on China in the new American Cyclopaedia, vol. iv, page 445, speaks of it under the name of "Millet," as the chief crop of the great plains of China; and from two years experience in raising it in California, I can positively assert that its growth here equals that of its native country. A hundred million people have eaten it to-day, will eat it all the days of their lives as their chief article of food.

## Sugar Canes.

While these varieties were being grown wholly for their enormous yield of nutritive grain, and yearly improved in this respect, there was another equal demand to be supplied, that was for sugar or its equivalent—syrup. Selection of seed through many years developed this quality in one variety, and this grown for that purpose, and improved by centuries of care and culture by the skillful Chinese, gives us the Chinese sugarcane of to-day, a plant very valuable for forage and for syrup and sugar production. A like want and a like prolonged effort among the half-civilized people of Nubia and Abyssinia resulted in producing the Imphee or African cane, the most luxuriant-growing and best sugar-producing, and best forage plant in our State at the present time. Perhaps, however, it will divide the forage merits with Amber cane, a hybrid between Imphee and Chinese sorghum. They both give an immense yield of sweet, tender, rapid-growing stalks and leaves, of which all kinds of stock are very fond, and which possess superior food qualities, while their enormous growth after the plants are permanently rooted, is almost independent of wet or drouth, not being affected by excess of either; and in our climate making succeeding growths year after year from the same roots.

## Broom Corns.

Our ancestors of Southern Europe being supplied with wheat, rice and other grains, and their demand for sugar being otherwise supplied, had no occasion to cultivate sorghum for either of these purposes. But they, too had an unsupplied want. They wanted materials for brooms and brushes, and a variety of sorghum containing long, tough fibers or straws connecting the seeds with the stalk, promised the desired article. Centuries of careful collection of seed and culture, with a view to this end, have given us the varieties of broom corn of the present day. Notable among which are the dwarf, which here on my rich land and with abundance of water grows only four feet in height. Also, the evergreen variety, which, for toughness, even fineness and weight of straw, surpasses all other kinds.

## Summary.

The nine here mentioned—three valuable for grain, three for sugar, syrup and forage, and three for broom

corn—are all that I have found of great value in over twenty sorghums which I have tested during the last dozen years. But studying their habits of growth and the products of the countries where they are grown, led me last year to import the seed of an allied plant from the East Indies—the *Penicillaria Spicata*—which I find is also cultivated in other parts of our country. Mr. Henderson, an old, reliable market-gardener, of New York City, raised an acre of it for feed during the past Summer. He publishes an account of it 011 page 420 of the *Agriculturist*. He says:

"The millet was sown in drills eighteen inches apart; eight quarts to the acre, on the 15th of May. \* \* The first cutting was made July 1st, 45 days after sowing; it was then seven feet high, covering the whole ground. The crop weighed green, 30 tons per acres; when dried; tons of hay per acre. After cutting, a second growth started and was cut August 15th, 45 days from time of the first cutting. Its hight was nine feet, weight fifty-five tons per acre, green; eight tons dried. The third crop started as rapidly as the second, but the cool September nights lessened is tropical luxuriance, so that this crop, which was cut on October 1st, only weighed ten tons green and one and one-half tons dried. \* \* The aggregate weight was ninety-five tons of green fodder in 135 days from time of sowing, and sixteen tons when dried to hay. \* \* There is little doebt that the Pearl Millet is equally as nutritious as corn fodder, which it resembles even more than it does any of the other millets. We found that all our horses and cattle ate it greedily, whether green or dry. \* \* Though our Northern seasons may be too short to mature the seeds, our experiments show what abundant crops may be expected. It presents a new feature in our agriculture and I feel sure that within ten years we shall wonder how we ever got on without it."

In *Moore's Rural New Yorker* of November 2d a full-page illustration is given of a bunch grown from a single seed. The editor says in describing it:

"Many of the stems were nearly the same hight, the highest being ten feet one inch. Three feet from the ground the circumference was thirteen feet nine inches. \* \* There were fifty-two stalks, the weight of which was forty-two and one-half pounds."

On my farm, here in Fresno, the growth has been more than three times as great as that above given by Mr. Henderson, but the period of growth was over one hundred days longer, and that, with our rich soil, hot climate and abundant irrigation, fully accounts for the difference in favor of California growth of this or any other plant exactly suited to our climate.

JOHN TORRY, late of Westminster, is now in the employ of Spear, Meade & Co., of San Francisco, and has re-moved to the city to take up his residence. Mr. Torry is traveling among the fruit growers of the Coast quite extensively, and we expect to hear from him occasionally.

## ***The Almond a Failure***

Much has been said about the profit of almond culture in California and Col. W. W. Hollister's almond orchard in Santa Barbara County has been cited as an instance of large profits. We have never been able to obtain definite data from which to advocate the planting of the almond, and have long doubted the advisability of doing so. We now learn on good authority that Colonel Hollister is thoroughly disgusted with his almond venture, and that he is digging up all his almond trees. His crops thus far have not paid running expenses to say nothing of interest on money invested and profit.

## ***An Explanation.***

The following letter explains itself: EDITOR HORTICULTURIST:—My attention is called to a clause on the last page of my lecture on "Orange and Lemon Culture," where the types make me say that the Co-operative Nursery have "the only stock of the varieties of the orange and lemon trees mentioned, budded direct from the original tree." The sentence should read, "The only large stock," etc. I make this correction in justice to other parties who have the same varieties. Of the Garey's Mediterranean Sweet Orange, we have 100,000 budded by actual count, and of Garey's Eureka Lemon, 20,000 to 25,000.

Yours truly,

T. A. GAREY.

THE *Pacific Land Journal* publishes a letter from J. H. Shields, descriptive of the late Fair, and publishes a cut of the Pavilion, but places the cut on the wrong page, in connection with an article descriptive of the S verado mines, with no word to indicate whether the building represented a first-class hotel or a club room for the mining magnates.

# Southern California

## Horticulturist

Los Angeles, Cal Dec 1878

L. M. Holt EDITOR

### ***Fruit Exhibition.***

The Horticultural Society, at its last meeting, instructed the Board of Directors to proceed to make arrangements for a Spring Fair for the display of Semi-Tropical fruits. The intentions of this exhibition are to afford an opportunity to make a critical examination and comparison of the various varieties of the citrus family of fruits, and not only compare varieties, but also compare fruits of the same variety from different localities. The State has progressed just far enough in this business to make a comparison that will be of great value to fruit growers. It is claimed by fruit growers in Central California that oranges raised in the Coast Range, also in the Sierra Nevada foot-hills are superior in quality to the Los Angeles orange. Perhaps such is the case, but who knows? The *Sacramento Record-Union*, in its issue of December 17, in referring to samples of oranges sent from the root-hills, says: "These oranges include various varieties of the thick and thin skinned, all deliciously fragrant, and equal in flavor to those in any portion of the State—rather more pleasant to the taste, in fact, than most of those grown this season in some of the southern counties." How does the editor of the *Record-Union* know that such is the case? We have no ripe oranges in Southern California as yet, and will not have for weeks. It is claimed that oranges in the upper country ripen earlier than they do in Southern California. Perhaps this is so, but there is fully as much money in late oranges as in early ones, and if Central California furnishes the early oranges, and Southern California the late oranges, it is much better than to have the fruit of both localities ripen at the same time.

It is quite common for up-country papers to make wild statements like the above. At the Fair next Spring let fruit from Central California be placed on exhibition, that this and other questions may be tested. The time for the Fruit Fair has not been set as yet, but probably sometime in March will be chosen.

### ***Riverside Meeting.***

The Horticultural Society will hold a special meeting at Riverside on the 12th and 13th of February, 1879, for discussion. A local committee have the matter of arrangements and programme in hand, and we will be greatly disappointed if we do not have one of the most profitable meetings of fruit growers at that time ever held in Southern California. It is desirable that the leading fruit growers of Los Angeles, San Diego, Santa Barbara and Ventura Counties be present. In connection with the meeting will be had an exhibition of Semi-Tropical fruits. A full programme will be given in the January number.

### ***Non-Irrigation.***

The attention of the reader is called to Dr O. H. Cougar's article in this issue relative to experiments I made in ascertaining the amount of moisture in the soil of his orchard, where there has been no irrigation. His trees look remarkably healthy and vigorous; the growth will compare favorably with that in irrigated orchards, and it is becoming an interesting question as to how little water can be used with profit in orchards in Southern California.

### ***San Diego Olives.***

WE are in receipt of several bottles of pickled olives from Frank A. Kim-ball, of National City, San Diego County. In the matter of size they are much smaller than the "Queen" olive of commerce, but in quality we have the word of several gentlemen whom we consider as experts, that they are in every way the equal, and many think superior to the imported article. One bottle of fruit, pickled when fully ripe, is considered superior to the others, although the keeping qualities may not prove so good. The following letter from J. De Barth Shorb, President of the Horticultural Society, will, we think, express the views of nearly everyone who has tested the samples:

EDITOR HORTICULTURIST:—I have given a very careful examination to the pickled olives prepared by Mr. Frank A. Kimball, of San Diego, and I have no hesitation in declaring them to be the best in every particular I have ever seen or eaten; they must commend themselves to all olive caters, and eventually supercede all others on the market. The good taste displayed in the bottles and labels are in perfect keeping with the superiority of the olives themselves. I would suggest to Mr. Kimball that year by year he pickles the olives a little riper until the tastes of our own people are cultivated up to that point where like those in the olive countries in Europe, they will only eat those olives that are matured, that have developed a large part of their oil, and not be like many of the French olives, entirely tasteless and insipid, without flavor or nutrition.

I presume his system of curing is somewhat similar to the one in use by the old California families, *i. e.* first subject them to a bath of ash ley for about 48 hours, and then put them in fresh water for ten days, changing the water every other day, when all the peculiar bitterness of the fruit should be extracted when they are put away in salt brine. Another process can be used which will cure the olives somewhat faster but rather impairs their appearance and would consequently affect their selling value. The olives are cut in two places to the stone before putting them in water to soak, which of course hastens the abstraction of the bitter principle. In using this process the ash ley is dispensed with entirely. The latter process has my endorsement for domestic uses only, and could not be successfully adopted for commercial purposes.

In looking on this sample of olives, forming as it does one of the most important interests of Southern California, I am more impressed than usual with the wonderful resources of this wonderfully favored land. I believe the time is not far distant when Southern California will supply all the pickled olives and olive oil used in America, and may together with our raisins and other dried fruit, supply a great portion of the European markets.

Wishing Mr. Kimball all possible success and trusting his efforts may induce others to embark in the business, I remain, yours respectfully,

J. DE BARTH SNORB.  
San Marino,  
Dec. 14th, 1878.

## ***Bursting of Oranges.***

O. N. Sanford, of El Cajon, San Diego, writes under date of November 18: "About a month ago I noticed a young orange tree which was bearing for its first crop a few oranges; the tree looked as though it needed water; I gave it a heavy irrigation; in about a week one of the oranges burst open and I came to the conclusion given by you in the October number of the HORTICULTURIST—that the bursting was caused by the water."

A Correspondent of the Colton *Semi-Tropic* writing from Riverside says that thousands of limes are going to waste at that place. The lime crop is very light this year, and with proper management ought to be marketed at a living price.

LARGE oranges are being noticed by our exchanges. Size can be compared much more readily than quality. The latter is of the most importance. The largest yet reported is a Navel orange,  $13 \frac{2}{3}$  inches in circumference, in C. W. Brown's orchard at Santa Ana. The *Times* is our authority.

L. H. TITUS has discovered a remedy for the red scale bug which is said to be effectual. A strong suds from the scrapings from a soap factory, with which is mixed a little blue vitriol, is thrown by a force pump in a spray through the tree.

ON FILE.—Communications from J. R. of Fresno, S. B., of San Buenaventura and J. H. S., of Los Angeles, are received too late for this issue. But will appear next month.

ELLWOOD COOPER, of Santa Barbara, has returned from an extended visit East.

WITH the December number of the *California Horticulturist*, published at San Francisco by J. H. Carmany & Co., comes the announcement that with the January number, Chas. H. Shinn, of Niles, Alameda County, whom our readers will recognize as an occasional correspondent, assumes editorial control. Mr. Shinn is an able and vigorous writer, and we welcome him to the new field of labor—a field, as all editors know, that is strewn with flowers and choice fruits, with neither thorns, brambles, Canada thistles, nuggets nor diamonds to mar his happiness. Brother Shinn, accept our condolence.

## ***Riverside.***

A recent visit to the valley which at present produces the premium raisins, was made with a view to making a thorough examination of the fruit belt, but a north wind and other causes so circumscribed our observations that we concluded to wait until after the February meeting before making further comment.



ANY subscriber having a complete file of Volume 1, of the HORTICULTURIST, in good condition, can leave the same at this office and get a bound volume by paying \$1.50.

ANY person having a March (1878) number of the HORTICULTURIST can sell it for 25 cents by sending the same to this office.

So prune your orchard from the very first that it will never be necessary to remove large limbs.

THE acreage of wheat in England is steadily on the decline, although the yield per acre is slowly on the increase.

J. C. WEINBERGER, of Napa County, has manufactured 1,500 gallons of grape syrup this season.

## **Results of Olive Culture.**

EDITOR HORTICULTURIST:—It is with no little satisfaction that I again write you, this time in regard to *results* obtained the present year from the olive trees reported on one year ago; for *results* demonstrate success or failure in any business or enterprise, whether it be production, transportation to a market, or sale of the commodity.

In the report referred to I noted the yield of a row of ten (10) trees grown from cuttings planted May 9, 1872, as averaging about six (6) gallons of fruit per tree, the best tree producing over twelve (12) gallons. These trees are now past six (6) years old, and I have just gathered the crop and find the average to be over twelve (12) gallons per tree, or more than double the yield of the previous year. The tree which gave twelve (12) gallons last year, gave twenty-two (22) this year.

In June I irrigated the trees thoroughly, in August partially, and again since picking the fruit. I pruned the small twigs from the main branches in the middle of six of the trees, making them look very *thin*, but resulting in an increase in quantity, and certainly in quality of fruit, over the trees which were not pruned.

There is no reason why any number of trees should not yield equally well, and I wish right here to impress on the minds of the readers of the HORTICULTURIST (I should have said, "your invaluable magazine,") what I believe to be a fact, viz: the olive tree, planted in soil adapted to its proper cultivation, is less liable to disease, requires less irrigation, is much easier managed, and will yield a larger return than the orange or lemon tree.

I do not expect this proposition to be endorsed now by anybody, but am contented to "wait and see;" and while I am about it I might as well make a further record which I think will be verified; olive trees three years from cuttings will pay all expenses of cultivation for that year, the fourth year a hundred and fifty dollars per acre, the fifth year three hundred dollars, and the sixth year five hundred dollars per acre. These figures result from the sale of the fruit just as taken from the trees at fifty cents per gallon; by preparing the fruit for market the net result will be nearly doubled.

I have tried the various recipes for pickling the olive for market, and will forward samples to be placed before the Society at its next meeting, and if satisfactory, will send you the one used in preparing samples sent.

Now for the reasons for the "faith that is within me." I believe the State of California pays a larger sum annually for the products of the olive tree imported from foreign countries, than for the combined products of the orange and lemon, including domestic as well as foreign production, and this, too, with consumption restricted by exorbitant prices, not only of the fruit prepared for the table, but for the oil; and who can determine what proportion of *this* is cotton seed or peanut oil?

Many persons insist that the fruit of an orange orchard, sold at ten dollars per thousand, or even less, will bring a larger net return than any other production from the same area.

My curiosity led me to an examination of the relative cost per thousand of the orange and olive. I first learned that the Queen (?) olive cost wholesale, per dozen bottles, six dollars, and the number of olives in each bottle varied between forty-seven (47) and sixty-three (63), or an average of fifty-five in each, or a fraction less than ten dollars per thousand, wholesale cost. These were much larger than our domestic or Mission olive.

Curiosity did not flag till I had selected and packed several bottles—duplicates of the foreign—with olives of my own production.

The average number in a dozen bottles was a hundred and ten (110). To bring the olive within the reach of all, suppose we sell them at \$3.50 per dozen, instead of \$6; every thousand olives then will bring \$250, and it takes but *a small tree to bear ten thousand olives*.

True, the "Queen" olive is larger than those now cultivated here, but I venture to say there is very little more *meat* on one of them than on a fair sized Mission olive; and besides, the domestic olive is nearly a *freestone*, the flesh readily separating from the pit, and for these reasons are much to be preferred.

When housekeepers consider that they pay about as much per dozen for imported olives as they do for oranges, and that they are about as much *pit* as *meat*, they will cast about to see if something just as good or better cannot be purchased at a less price.

It is evident that the Queen olive must remain a luxury to be indulged in only by those who are *able* to

gnaw a foreign production.

This fruit should not be a luxury, but a staple article of family consumption.

The people inhabiting the olive-producing portions of Europe rarely taste meat, the olive almost entirely supplying its place. As an article of wholesome diet their cultivation should be encouraged.

To-day I saw eleven (11) gallons of splendid olives picked from a tree only four (4) years old from the cutting. This tree is in my brother's (W. C. Kimball's) orchard.

By an article in the *Rural Press*, I observe that the "Cocus olio" has ceased to frighten Mr. Cooper, of Santa Barbara, indicated by pushing his investigations, and investments into the manufacture and introduction of pure oil. I thought so, and congratulate him on his conversion.

It may not be amiss to say that the orchard at Mission San Diego is now *worse* than neglected; and while examining it a few days ago I noticed quite a number of trees which had been killed this year.

An Italian firm in San Diego have bought all the olives they could, paying fifty cents per gallon, fresh from the trees. I think no prepared olives have been sold at less than a dollar per gallon, wholesale, this year, this being about one-third the price paid for the imported article.

I hope the Society may encourage the planting of the olive in all of our foot hill country; it will stand frost and snow. No poor man can afford to be without an olive orchard.

Very sincerely,

FRANK A. KIMBALL.

National City, Cal.,

Dec. 1, 1878.

WE have seen growing luxuriantly within half a mile, in Ventura county, the orange, the lemon, the lime, the citron, the fig, the pomegranate, the olive, the banana, the English walnut, the hard and soft-shelled almond, plums of the choicest kind, including' the French and Hungarian prune, the grape of every known variety almost, apples, pears, peaches, and the chestnut.—*Ventura Free Press*.

Growing luxuriantly is one thing, but growing profitably is another. Nearly all of the fruits and nuts named above will doubtless prove profitable in Ventura county. Will the *Free Press* please give some figures and facts to show how profitable almond, plum and prune orchards are in Ventura county. Thus far we have been unable to find any profit in either of them in Southern California, but hope to find localities where they will do well.

A CALIFORNIA paper chronicles corn in Yolo county fifteen feet high with ears growing nine feet from the ground. Ah! but corn which requires a step ladder to reach the ears is not the sort to produce big yields.—*Prairie Farmer*.

Yes, but on the contrary we have seen fields of corn in Los Angeles county when it became a necessity to go along and break down the stalks before husking, and yet the crop would yield from 75 to 100 bushels to the acre, and in some cases even more.

## ***Remedy for the Scale Bug.***

Kerosene, diluted with water, is receiving many endorsements as a sure destroyer of the scale bug. Anson Van Leuven, of Old San Bernardino, writes: "Take twenty-five parts of water to one of kerosene, use either with syringe or swab; two applications will be sufficient to effectually kill the scale." Mr. Van Leuven is a pioneer orange grower at Old San Bernardino, and lives in a section of country where the scale is not so prevalent as it is nearer the coast.

W. D. Frazee, lately of San Bernardino, but now of Downey City, writes us to the same effect, endorsing the application of kerosene, diluted as stated above.

SCALE BUG.—Last Spring we imported a number of orange trees from Los Angeles. When they arrived here they were badly covered with scale bug—an insect that infests the trees at Los Angeles severely. During the Summer the scale almost entirely disappeared from the orange trees, but during the last few weeks we were surprised to find them in abundance on the leaves of a couple of brown Smyrna fig trees, and on a couple of tritomas, or "Red-hot Pokers." Can some of the Los Angeles orange sharps inform us whether or not this is a common occurrence?—*Fresno Expositor*.

The scale bug infests everything almost. We have seen it on the orange, lemon, lime, peach, apple, apricot, almond, olive, and even blue gum. They are worse near the coast and scarcer in the interior valleys. They ought not to trouble trees to any extent in Fresno county. A little care there ought to keep trees comparatively free

from these pests.

## **Practical Tests.**

Estimate of Water and Temperatures Beneath the Surface and Surrounding the Roots of an Orange Tree.

Being unable to learn that anything in particular has ever been done to encourage experimental horticulture or agriculture in Southern California, and much less for the diffusion of practical knowledge, an indifference amounting to a culpable neglect, or considering those vital interests entirely subordinate to other and much less worthy objects, I trust that modern research and inquiry will not be regarded as innovations upon a well-settled and unapproachable system. Viewed from an impartial and present standpoint, no light seems to have radiated even from the liberally endowed agricultural department connected with the State University touching these important interests for which it was originally intended to promote; and it is not an exaggeration to state that these industries are languishing, even in this fairest and most fertile portion of the habitable globe, for the lack of a little well-directed effort which would afford most reliable data from which invaluable practical knowledge could be obtained. "The blind are still leading the blind." Horticultural interests here have remained practically in *statu quo* for the past half century. The old ruts are a little deeper if anything, for the original stimuli that created an interest to embark in the enterprise has long ago become exhausted, and comparative indifference and apathy is almost universal among those who have grown grey in the pioneer effort, assuming an air of wisdom and dignity which, if not absolutely unapproachable, is quite humiliating to observe. Men of thought and culture seem also to have been lulled into comparative indifference concerning the great value of discussing the vital questions connected with economic horticulture, or more particularly the branch of fruitgrowing, insomuch that now, when dire calamity in the form of types of diseases and uncontrollable pests of various kinds threaten with cyclonic rapacity the very existence of their former resources they are amazed and dumb, knowing of no power to stay the ravages of the merciless destroyer. The thought perhaps has never crossed their minds that soil and long years of improper treatment lies at the foundation of their present trouble. However, they do not hesitate to inquire into the best methods of securing and keeping the orange, but ignore all investigations into the proper soils to plant and the best treatment to produce a long-lived, healthy tree, and the perfection of its fruit. This is left for the present and future new-comer to discover, and the indications already point unmistakably to the belt of *mesa* flanking the base of the Sierra Madre as the future and natural home of the entire citrus family.

That something is radically wrong in the old time-honored methods of treating the orange and lemon trees of this and adjoining counties, with rare and singularly obscure exceptions, cannot well admit of doubt, and the question is now forced upon us, what is to be done? Have we, late arrivals, encouragement to emulate the practice of these grey-haired patriarchs around us? Bathing in the rich and delicious ethers distilled from the delicate orange blossoms until narcotized into the belief that all is well, while disease and death is insidiously working disaster and ruin everywhere? While we desire information, we cannot look upon the destruction of the old orange groves going on around us and ask no questions, but blindly follow. Experiments are somewhat expensive, but ignorance, bigotry and guess work are much more so. Experience is a good teacher, guided by reason, founded upon facts, but generations of experience resting upon hypothesis only, is not worthy of respect.

Recent investigations into the quality of soil, moisture and temperature at the different depths which the orange roots have already reached or may penetrate the soil in which they grow, has led me into this discussion at this time, and without pursuing this inexhaustible subject further I will submit the result of my recent experiments around and beneath a growing and vigorous orange tree that has not been irrigated but once in the past two years and that once last year.

On the 5th instant, at 2 P.M., I made an excavation 3x4 feet and six feet deep on the north side of one of my six-year-old orange trees, leaving the inner wall four feet from the trunk of the tree. My first sample of earth was the top most dust, temperature of air, 76° Fahr. Below is the result, going down to 5 ½ feet, the present limit of the fibrous roots at that distance from the radical or tap root.

Surface dust at 135° Fahr. yielded 12 5-12 lbs. water per ton troy of soil, or 18 lbs. to the cubic yard. Same sample at 212° gave off 32 10-12 lbs. of water per ton, or 49 lbs. per cubic yard. Now, the roots of this tree under consideration have reached a distance of over 8 feet in every direction from the trunk, which gives us 11 cubic yards of soil penetrated by its roots.

Second sample, one foot below surface, temperature of soil, 60° Fahr. gave off 125 lbs. of water per ton at 212° Fahr., or 188 lbs. per cubic yard.

Third sample, two feet below surface, temperature of soil in place, 54° Fahr. gave off 124 11-12 lbs. water per ton, at 212° Fahr., or 188 lbs. per cubic yard.

Fourth sample, 3 feet down, temperature of soil in place, 55° yielded 166 lbs. 8 oz. per ton at 212° or 250

lbs. per cubic yard.

Fifth sample, 4 feet deep, temperature of soil in place, 58° gave off 167 lbs. per ton, or 250 lbs. per cubic yard.

Sixth sample, 5 feet down, temperature of soil in place, 61° gave off 169 lbs. per ton, or 254 lbs. per cubic yard, at 212° Fahr.

It must be significant to all to note the difference in temperature of the soil at two and three feet below the surface, and that at four and five feet down, with a steady increase of moisture also.

Upon discovering this condition of things, a net of fibrous roots bathed in such rich, moist soil below the vicissitudes of surface temperatures, I no longer wondered why my trees kept up such a vigorous appearance and constant growth of new wood. The old method of blindly pouring on unmeasured streams of cold water every two or three weeks, and continued, could not but have worked irreparable injury and premature decay and death to all trees thus situated, and I venture the prediction that if an examination were made around and beneath the dead and dying trees in the old orchards, few if any vigorous roots would be found far below the surface. The orange tree is warm-blooded and *must* have warm, deep, mellow soil that its roots can penetrate, and such soil will gather water enough from the clouds, if kept in proper condition, to supply the natural wants of the tree during the interim of drouth nine seasons out of ten. The ground around my trees receives thorough surface cultivation once in four weeks and no oftener, as in my opinion, the soil needs rest and time for recuperation as well as organic substances. Many overwork their soil without doubt, as well as committing another error of over stimulating with fertilizers and water. The result of the examination as given above clearly demonstrates that roots of the orange tree will go down after the requisite moisture if permitted to do so, and moreover will supply the evaporation and other demands of the rapid-growing tree, while the surface roots are measurably off duty from any cause.

Neither the extreme heat nor its opposite cold affects these deep roots, and the percolation of the rain is so gradual that no sudden shock is experienced by the tree as in the case of sluicing on the water in the present artificial manner. The sap ceases to flow during the descent of any considerable quantity of water within a short interval, as all close observers will have noticed that if a tree is irrigated just as a new growth is putting out, it is checked at once, and will remain dormant from ten days to two weeks more or less, according to the season of the year, warmth of soil, temperature of air, etc. In short, solar heat has to again raise the temperature of the wet soil enclosing the roots to a degree compatible with conditions requisite to restore their deranged functions. The subject is so full of important details that will not admit of discussing in this already too lengthy article, I will simply consign my trees to the tender care of the clouds, capillary attraction, deep plowing, clean surface, and thorough cultivation until further developments, when, if of general interest, will report progress.

O. H. CONGAR.

Pasadena,

Dec. 10, 1878.

DON'T irrigate next to the tree, is the advice of Anson Van Leuven, of Old San Bernardino. This advice has been reiterated many times by our best orchardists, and yet probably nine trees out of ten in Los Angeles county get the water next to the tree during the hot days of summer very much to their disadvantage.

## ***Horticultural Society***

### **December Session.**

The regular monthly meeting of the Society was held at the Secretary's office on Saturday, December 14, 1878.

The question of holding a Spring Fair, for the exhibition of semi-tropical fruits, was discussed at length, and on motion of Dr. Congar, it was decided to hold such a Fair at such time as the Board of Directors should fix, after a correspondence with fruitgrowers to ascertain their wishes, but not earlier than the 12th of March.

L. M. Holt offered a revised code of By-Laws for the consideration of the Society, which were referred to a committee of seventeen, with instructions to report to the January meeting. The committee consists of the members of the Board of Directors—J. de Barth Shorb, H. K. W. Bent, L. M. Holt, T. C. Severance, Dr. O. H. Congar, Gen. J. H. Shields and T. A. Garey; also the following members appointed by the Chair: Jas. Campbell of Pasadena, I. W. Lord, A. H. Denker, C. B. Woodhead, M. Thomas, A. N. Hamilton, C. H. Richardson, D. M. Berry, M. H. Kimball and Geo. Gephart, of Los Angeles.

Following is the code of By-Laws referred to the committee:

### **Article I.**

This Society is an incorporation known as the Southern California Horticultural Society.

## **Article II.**

Its principal place of business shall be in the city of Los Angeles.

## **Article III.**

It shall be the object of this Society to collect and distribute information in regard to horticulture, agriculture and pomology; to hold exhibitions and award premiums for the best productions; to discuss the varieties of fruits and other products best adapted to its district, and the best methods of cultivating and propagating the same, and to seek the best markets for the fruits and other products when raised.

## **Article IV.**

- The Society shall consist of first, active members, who, being either life or annual members, shall be entitled to all the privileges of the Society; and second, honorary members, who shall have the same privileges as the active members, but no vote in the transaction of the business of the Society.
- Any person can become an annual member of this Society by paying into the Treasury the sum of five dollars.
- Any person can become a life member of the Society by paying into the Treasury the sum of fifty dollars.
- Whenever any sum of money is mentioned in these By-Laws, it is understood that United States currency, gold or silver coin shall be meant.
- Persons eminent as horticulturists, whether residents of California or not, can be constituted' honorary members of the Society by a unanimous vote of the members present at any regular meeting. Honorary members are entitled to all the privileges of active members, except voting, but have to pay no fees.
- Old members of the Society desiring to renew membership during the year 1879, will be entitled to a credit on renewal of membership, for any amount they may have paid the Society for dues of that year.

## **Article V.**

- The officers of the Society shall be a President, six Vice Presidents, a Secretary, Treasurer, and a board of seven Directors.
- The President shall preside at all meetings of the Society and Board of Directors, preserve order and vote only in case of a tie. He shall sign all warrants on the Treasury and all certificates of membership, and shall have a general supervision of the affairs of the Society, and shall see that all officers of the Society perform their duties faithfully and legally.
- The first Vice President shall be elected from Los Angeles county; the second Vice President, from San Bernardino county; the third Vice President from Santa Barbara county; the fourth Vice President from San Diego county; the fifth Vice President from Ventura county, and the sixth Vice President from Kern county. In the absence of the President at any meeting of the Society, the first Vice President present on the list shall fill the President's chair, and for the time being, shall exercise all his powers and prerogatives.
- The Secretary shall keep a record of the proceedings of the Society and of the Board of Directors; collect all dues and other funds coming to the Society, and pay them over to the Treasurer as received, taking his receipt for the same, and shall attend to all the correspondence of the Society.
- The Treasurer shall take charge of all funds belonging to the Society, and shall disburse the same by order of the Directors made through the President and Secretary.
- It shall be the duty of the Board of Directors to have a general supervision and control of the business affairs of the Society under direction of these By-Laws, and the legally expressed will of the Society, made at any regular or special session.

## **Article VI.**

- The annual election of the officers of the Society and the Board of Directors, shall take place on the second Thursday of March of each year. The election shall be by ballot, and all officers voted for shall be on one ticket, viz: a President, a Vice President, a Secretary, a Treasurer—all of whom shall be ex-officio members of the Board of Directors, and three Directors. In voting for the three Directors cumulative voting shall be allowed, as provided for in the corporation laws of the State of California.
- The polls shall be open from 9 o'clock A.M. to 3 o'clock P. M., during which time any person who has been a member of the Society for ten days, and none others shall be allowed to vote.
- The Board of Directors shall appoint a Clerk and two Judges of Election, whose duty it shall be to take

charge of the election, register all voters, see that none but members vote, and count the votes and make returns to the Board of Directors, who shall hold a meeting immediately after the canvass is completed, or the next day, as they may elect, to receive the returns of the election officers, and declare the result.

- Twenty members shall constitute a quorum of the Society at any regular or special meeting.
- A plurality vote shall elect the officers and the members of the Board of Directors at the annual election.
- The Board of Directors shall have power to fill all vacancies occurring in the Board, or in any of the officers of the Society.
- A majority of the Board of Directors shall constitute a quorum of that body.
- Members of the Society, under the By-Laws as they existed prior to December 14, 1878. shall continue to be members until suspended for non-payment of dues, by being six months in arrears.

## **Article VII.**

- The Society shall hold quarterly meetings on the second Thursdays of March, June, September and December of each year, at such place in the City of Los Angeles and at such hour or hours of the day as may be decided from time to time by the Board of Directors. Special meetings may be called by the President, on the request of five members of the Society, or shall be called by the President on the order of the Board of Directors.
- Special meetings of the Society, for discussion only, may be called at such times and places in Southern California as the Board of Directors may direct.

## **Article VIII.**

- The Society may hold exhibitions of fruits, flowers, plants, vegetables and seeds, and may offer and pay premiums or issue diplomas, on such articles as may be decided upon by the Society, and the exhibitions shall be held at such times and places as the Society may from time to time determine.
- Members and their families shall have free admission to all exhibitions of the Society.
- Life members of the Society shall be entitled to all the privileges of the Society, including family season tickets, to all Fairs held by the Society. Each life member shall also be entitled to the HORTICULTURIST free of charge.
- Annual members shall be en-titled to all the privileges of a life member or the period of one year from the time of becoming a member; *provided*, that in no case shall an annual member be entitled to a family season ticket to more than one annul Fair, without a renewal of membership by the payment of five dollars.
- Three dollars shall entitle a person to a competitors ticket. This ticket entitles the holder to free admission to the annual Fair of the Society, a right to compete for any and all premiums, and shall also entitle the holder to the HORTICULTURIST for one year, free of further expense, but such ticket does not confer upon the holder any right of membership in the Society.

## **Article IX.**

- All properties of the Society shall be under the control of the Board of Directors.
- Donations to the Society shall be entered in a book kept for that purpose.

## **Article X.**

- The Board of Directors, shall elect a Finance Committee of three.
- All bills against the Society shall be audited by the Finance Committee, and warrants on the Treasury shall be drawn by the President and Secretary, in accordance with the report of that committee.
- The Finance Committee shall, from time to time, examine the financial condition of the Society, inspect the books of the officers, and perform such other duties as the Board may require.

## **Article XI.**

- The Board of Directors may require bonds of any officer holding moneys or property of the Society.
- The Board shall fix the compensation of all employés of the Society during the holding of Fairs, or at other times when the work of the Society requires additional help, and shall have the appointment of all help, except the position of Assistant Secretaries, which shall be appointed by the Secretary, subject to the approval of the Board.

## **Article XII.**

- The Board of Directors shall appoint the following standing committees:

### **General Committees.**

- On Semi-Tropical Fruits,
- On Northern Fruits,
- On Viniculture,
- On Raisin and Table Grapes,
- On Irrigation,
- On Legislation,
- On Exhibitions,
- On Publications and Library.
- On Nomenclature.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Semi-Tropical Fruits to examine and report upon all questions referred to it by the Society relative to the propagation, budding or culture of semi-tropical trees and plants, and the disposition of semi tropical fruits; the Committee to consist of seven.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Northern Fruits to examine and report upon all questions referred to it by the Society relative to the culture and sale of northern fruits; also small fruits of all varieties.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Viniculture to examine and report upon all questions referred to it by the Society relative to the culture of the grape, and the manufacture of wine and brandy.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Raisin and fable Grapes to examine and report upon all questions referred to it by the Society relative to the culture of raisin and table grapes, and the methods of manufacturing raisins.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Irrigation to examine questions of irrigation, systems of water distribution, necessity for irrigation, wastage of water, legislation necessary to the irrigation question in Southern California, and report from time to time such conclusions as it may consider of benefit to the country.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Legislation to examine all questions calling for further State or Congressional legislation that may be referred to it by the Society, and to draft such bills for the guidance of our Representatives in the Legislature or Congress and memorials as expressive of the wishes of this Society, and the people and interest it represents, as the Society may direct.
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Exhibition to devise ways and means for placing the horticultural exhibitions of Southern California on such a basis as shall be productive of the greatest good to fruit-growing interests of this section.
- The Committee on Publications and Library shall have charge of a monthly publication which shall contain the proceedings of the Society, debates, prepared papers, and such other matters as shall be of general interest to members of the Society, and shall establish as soon as practicable, a reading room and library in connection with the editorial rooms of the monthly periodical. This Committee shall also prepare a programme of exercises for each quarterly meeting of the Society, and shall publish the same prior to such meetings
- It shall be the duty of the Committee on Nomenclature to prepare such rules for their guidance in naming new varieties of fruits as shall be found accessory, and in accordance with the usages of Horticultural Societies, and shall report the same to the Society for their adoption, which rules shall govern them in the discharge of their duties.

### **Article XIII.**

- The Society shall establish as soon as practicable, a library and reading room in the city of Los Angeles, which shall be under the management of the Board of Trustees, and shall be free to all members.
- The Society shall cause to be published a monthly periodical, under control of the Committee on Publications and Library. The expense of publishing such periodical shall be borne by the Society, and all receipts from its publication shall be turned into the Treasury of the Society.

### **Article XIV.**

These By-Laws may be amended, as provided by the Civil Code.

### ***Fair Suggestions.***

EDITOR HORTICULTURIST:—Allow me to make a suggestion which, if carried out at the next Fair, I think

will be an improvement in the pomological department. At the last Fair the fruit was placed in different parts of the pavilion, and it must have been a very difficult matter for the judges to make their awards. Now, I think the interest that is manifested in fruit in this part of the State demands that there should be a special hall, or part of the main building set apart for its display. Also, that competing lots be placed side by side and not in a conglomerate mass, where, or as the exhibitor may fancy. Let the names of varieties be legibly written or printed, so that visitors can decide upon varieties in the purchase of fruit or trees. It would be a good idea for the Committee on Nomenclature to look over the collections and correct mistakes in naming, if any. Also, that the judges make and affix their awards to the Successful lots before the public are admitted. Yours etc.

Alexander Craw.

## ***Will It Pay?***

In entering upon any business the first question asked is, "will it pay?" A few men enter a business for the pure love of the thing itself, but the majority always have and always will look at any enterprise from an investment stand point. The time never has been in Southern California when there have not been found plenty of people who have advised against planting orange and lemon orchards, on the ground that the business will soon be overdone, and that the undertaking, as an investment, would be a failure. In this business, as in any other, there are plenty of failures; there is a right way and a wrong way to put out an orange orchard, and a majority of people find the wrong way.

As an evidence of what can be done we refer to the Sierra Madra Villa orchard, in this county. It was planted in the Spring of 1875, the trees were five-year-old roots, with two-year-old Konah grafts, making the trees, last Spring, eight years of age. Two hundred and fifty Konah trees were planted. This season J. De Barth Shorb has advanced \$600 on the orange crop, and says that the trees will average 500 oranges to the tree. As \$150 per acre will bring an orchard to this state of advancement, any ordinary scholar can easily figure on the proposition—"will it pay to plant orange orchards?" In our opinion it will pay to invest in an orange or lemon orchard, if the orchard is to receive *good culture*, otherwise not.'

CORN has sold in large quantities, in Iowa the present season, as low as eight cents per bushel.

The Fourth Exhibition of The Otago Art Society

December 13, 1879.

"Chi va piano va sano."

Held in the Society's Balleny, School of Arts, Monag Place North, Dunedin.

Price, Sixpence.

Dunedin: Printed at the "Daily Times" Office, Corner of Dowling, High, and Macandrew Streets.

# **Otago Art Society.**

Founded, January, 1876.

## **President:**

- John Irvine, ESQ., R.S.A.

## **Vice President:**

- W. M. HODGKINS, ESQ., J. P.

## **Council:**

- The Right Rev. Dr. Nevill, Lord Bishop of Dunedin
- The Honorable Henry Samuel Chapman
- His Honor Mr. Justice Williams
- William Arthur Esq., C.E.
- George. Bell, Esq.
- Richard Oliver, Esq., M.H.R.



- Rev. D. M. Stuart, D.D.
- The Hon. James Macandrew, Esq., M.H.R.
- John Bathgate, Esq., District Judge
- George Joachim, Esq.
- J. H. Scott, Esq., M.D., Professor Anat., Otago University
- J. C. Hoyte, Esq.
- E. A. Gifford, Esq., Gold Medallist. R.A.

## Treasurer:

- W. F. Browne, Esq.

## Secretary:

- David C. Button, Esq., Art Master.

## Members:

- Anstead, Mrs.
- Arthur, W.
- Beauchamp, R.
- Barraud, C. D.
- Barraud, F.
- Billens, J.
- Browne, W. F.
- Chapman, Miss
- Chapman, E. A.
- Davidson, Mrs.
- Gully, John
- Gifford, E. A.
- Green, S. E.
- Gibb, J.
- Herbert, Mrs.
- Gibbes, F. B.
- Holmes, Miss
- Holmes, J. S.
- Hoyte, J. C.
- Huddleston, F.
- Hodgkins, W. M.
- Hutton, D. C.
- Irvine, John, R.S.A.
- Jury, H.
- Joachim, Mrs.
- Morton, S. H.
- Muntz, P. C.
- Morris, J
- McLaren, Miss
- Nicholls, Mrs.
- Neville, L.
- O'Brien, G.
- O'Keefe, E. P.
- Pym, M.
- F. C. Quick, Mrs. W. H.
- Richardson, Miss
- Richardson, F. H.

- Rolland, A.
- Roscoe, Miss
- Roscoe, Miss A.
- Stott, A.
- Stott, Mrs.
- Thomson, J. T.
- White, Mrs.
- Welch, J. S.

Reports of Meetings Held, and Addresses Given,  
By Mr. W. L. Rees,  
In  
Poverty Bay & Tologa Bay,  
UPON THE SUBJECT OF  
Native Lands.

Gisborne: PRINTED BY HENRY EDWIN WEBB, AT THE STANDARD" OFFICE "GLADSTONE ROAD. 1879.

## Mr. Rees'S Address.

(From the "Poverty Bay Standard," February 11th, 1879.)

LAST night, W. L. Rees, Esq., M.H.R, delivered a most interesting address in the Masonic Hall, upon several matters of public interest. The night was wet, and boisterous; but, notwithstanding, there was a good attendance. Several ladies had also signified their intention of attending, but were prevented on account of the rain.

On the motion of MR. CARLAW SMITH, Mr. H. E. Webb occupied the chair; and said that he had hoped to see some ladies present, many of whom had expressed their desire to respond to Mr. Rees's invitation. He would remind the meeting that Mr. Rees was a visitor, and was about to entertain us as his guests; and, as such, it was our duty to accord to him an impartial and courteous hearing. Mr. Rees might feel it difficult to dissociate the politician from the private gentleman; and, perhaps, so much the better, as he was intimately connected with the mind of the Government, what he had to say on public matters would have greater weight. He had much pleasure in introducing Mr. Rees to the meeting.

MR W. L. REES, M.H.R., who was received with applause on rising, said: Mr Chairman, and gentlemen,—I thought it better when coming to address the meeting this evening to put down in order the few subjects upon which I intended to speak. It would be better to do so that the time might not be occupied in discursive narrative, and that what I myself, with your help, might hope to accomplish, would be clearly laid before you, in the form of a picture that would take hold upon your minds. No doubt the inclemency of the weather has kept many from attending this evening, but when we remember that the cause of the comparative paucity of attendance here tonight, is due to the present fall of rain, it will hardly be a matter of regret, knowing as we do, how welcome that rain will be throughout the district. However, it is not in mortals to command success. It will be sufficient if those who are here gain an intelligent idea of the subjects I propose to deal with, so materially affecting the welfare of this district; and to those who are absent the representatives of the Press will make known the views that are uttered. Perhaps it would be wise in commencing my remarks to state why I have taken upon myself to ask the people of Gisborne to meet me here to-night. To those whom I now have the pleasure of addressing it is well known the profession to which I have the honor to belong. It may be equally familiar to them that of late years I have mixed considerably in politics. More especially I have taken an active part in regard to questions pertaining to the natives and their lands, and, of course, I suppose we need not hide it from ourselves that the action I have so taken has been provocative of considerable comment, and viewed with much suspicion from certain quarters. Suspicion, apprehension, and curiosity, have been created in many quarters in relation to transactions in which I have been actively engaged. Now, I desire at this meeting to-night to lay clearly before the public the grounds upon which I pursue the action I do. I desire, also, to state the reasons by which I have been led to follow the course I have adopted; and the explanation I am about to submit will, without doubt, be satisfactory to those whom I am now addressing. In taking a brief and retrospective view of the tenure under which Miori lands were held prior to the advent of the European, we find, as I suppose many here to-night are fully aware, that a system prevailed of possessing land under tribal right. A system of Communism prevailed, and speaking generally, no native held absolutely to himself any portion in particular, of the surrounding territory of the vicinity in which he lived. Chiefs possessed rights in virtue of their chieftainship and they held lands on behalf of tribes or families whom they represented. When the first Parliament of New Zealand assembled, at the time the Constitution was given to the country a new feeling was

created among the Maoris. They regarded with much suspicion the new power that was thus raised up amongst them, and considerable anxiety arose throughout the centres of aboriginal population in the colony. I have heard from the old residents of Auckland who were acquainted with the Maori chiefs of that district who belonged to the past generation, that at the first assembly of the New Zealand Parliament the Maoris squatted round the Provincial Chambers which were then the Houses of Parliament. And it has been described how they regarded with suspicion the pomp and ceremony attendant upon the first opening of Parliament in a British dependency: how the Maoris questioned the Interpreters, and wondered what the whole thing meant. The Maoris understood the *mana* of the Queen over the Islands of New Zealand, and had become familiar with the fact that the Governor was her representative; but what this new power consisting of the Parliament opened with so much ceremony really meant and whence the power was derived, was altogether beyond their conception. They were determined to question this new power and ascertain its source. Previous to that time the Maoris had been accustomed to appeal to the Governor direct whenever they had any cause of complaint or any alleged wrong requiring redressing. Now they were told that if they had a grievance that grievance was to be laid before Parliament; the power of applying direct to the Governor no longer existed. In consequence of the feeling that arose among the Maoris and the generally unsettled state of the Natives, a combination among the Natives was formed known as the Land League.

Potatau determined to send to the Government asking to have a flour mill erected at Matamata, and for that purpose a deputation was appointed to wait on Mr(after wards Sir Donald) McLean. Upon the reply to that demand the future policy of the Land League was to be based. These messengers from Potatau came to Auckland to see Mr. McLean and ask him if the Governor would comply with their request about the flour mill. Mr. McLean at that time was an adversary of the present Chief Judge of the Native Land Court, Mr. Fenton, and one was trying to overturn the other. At all events the Natives were put off by being told by Mr. McLean that by-and-bye the Governor would be seen about the flour mill, but that members of the Government had to be seen first, as no direct interview could then take place between the Natives and the Governor. The chiefs from that moment went back to their settlements. They saw that the power of the Governor rested on the action of his Ministry and, ignorant and suspicious of what further action might be taken with regard to their territory, the Land League was formed, and the King Movement brought into existence. Potatau was declared to be King, and from that arose what is now known as the King Movement among the Maoris.

The Assembly of New Zealand among other things began to legislate with regard to Native lands, and in 1862 the first measure bearing upon Native lands was passed by Parliament. This Act however remained inoperative. In 1865 another Act in relation to Native lands received the sanction of Parliament and thus the Native Land Act of 1865 was passed. It was then established by law that a certain mode should be adopted in or by which the titles to Native lands should be ascertained and the Native Land Court was thus constituted. Various provisions were made tending to the subdivision of lands and the extinguishment of the Native title absolutely. We know that those measures for dealing with Native lands and ascertaining the title of the Native owners were defective. We had to deal with a system of land tenure that had been unknown in Europe for centuries, such as holding land under a communistic title similar to that which the ancient heads of the baronial families in England possessed, but which has long since passed away. In those times the same sort of tenure existed as was found amongst the Maoris when Parliament began its legislation in regard to Native lands. Therefore any legislation in relation to those lands was of an experimental character. So from the day the first Native Land Act passed until the present moment the Parliament of the country has been unable to frame any certain and final measure in regard to Native lands that would tend to promote harmony between the two races occupying these Islands.

In 1867 and in 1868 the dealings in Native land between Europeans and the Maoris commenced, and continued on till 1873. Those transactions were conducted mainly under the Act of 1865 and the subsequent Act passed in 1807. In 1869 the Native land laws were further modified. Nearly all the difficulties between the Natives and Europeans arose during that period of time. Those laws were in such a state that litigation in regard to Native lands was simply inevitable. The seed was sown, and as sure as a crop is brought forth by the operations of nature were the laws then in existence bound to produce litigation. Contusion and litigation were the outcome, and unless some such measure as the Native Lawsuits Bill of last session be passed (Hear hear) that litigation will continue for years and years to come. It is my object so far as I can in my private, public, professional, and political character, to put an end, if possible, to this confusion and litigation that surrounds us. I feel fully persuaded that the country cannot have prosperity until the titles to lands are clear and distinct. Capital is shut out so long as the land titles are uncertain. An end is put to any hope of harmony ever existing between the two races of this colony so long as this state of things prevails. (Hear hear) I say that privately, publicly, and politically it has been my sole desire and endeavor to put an end to the confusion and litigation that have arisen from the Native Land Acts of 1865 and subsequent years, and to see that justice is done between the Europeans and Maoris. (Hear hear and cheers). Now it cannot be denied that the present condition

of Native land titles is eminently unsatisfactory. Any one who has anything to do with Native lands knows that. No one who reads the papers of the day but is aware of that fact. There is no getting over the fact that the land titles are bad, and even if the question of their legality were staved off for a few years it would not improve matters. The holders who perhaps had worked hard and honestly to secure a possession that they could leave behind to their children when they passed away, would have been living here in a fool's Paradise. Those who may have fancied that they had secured homes for their families would find, and their children would speedily find, that a legacy had been left them of sad and bitter disappointment, to be followed by overwhelming litigation. It is far better therefore that the titles should be gone into now, and the frauds ascertained at once. Capital then will be speedily invested in the district, and an increased demand for labor will arise when a man knows that he can obtain land with an absolutely clear and distinct title and that he can leave a certainty behind him to those who follow in his track. (Cheers.) In the question of the alienation of Native lands we find that purchases and leases from the Natives have been made partly by the Government of the country, and partly by Europeans. Before the land laws to which I have referred came into existence, the Natives did not question sales or leases that had been made beyond demanding the stipulated consideration. They understood fully the transactions in which they were concerned. They understood that the Crown was purchasing from them, and they knew that right existed with the Crown under the Treaty of Waitangi. In the cases of land purchases in the Middle Island before the Native Land Acts passed, the Natives there say, "Let us have for ourselves the reserves that were marked out in the time of Governors Grey and Hobson." The question of the increased value of the land is not gone into. A demand is simply made for the fulfilment of promises that should long since have been carried out. But since these land laws have come into operation, both the Government and private purchasers have fallen into a state of trouble and confusion; and I propose to show how such a result has been brought about. In some instances, I do not say in the majority of instances, where Europeans have bought from the Maoris, the land titles are un-satisfactory owing to fraud. In some instances there can be no doubt that fraud has been committed. Talk to the people themselves, and in a number of instances it will be found that unfair dealing has taken place. As an instance of the manner in which fraud has arisen, names have been forged to deeds; sometimes with the intention to commit forgery, and sometimes the head of a hapu has been asked to sign to deeds the names of his family or some of his hapu on their behalf. In some cases the persons whose names were being signed were at the time hundreds of miles away, and it was known to the parties that such was actually the case. This representative of his hapu, being told by persons to whom he looked up to for knowledge, to sign the names of his people, would do so unconscious of any fraud. He would take the money and I think that was the way to sign deeds according to the law. There was no criminal intention in the matter. Nevertheless, it was a fraud upon the parties who never signed their names. Then there was another way in which unfairness was resorted to. In many instances; children in their mothers' arms have been brought into a room to sign a deed. The infant has been put through the form of touching the pen while its name has been written on the parchment. I know a case of a girl in Napier named Pukepuke, who is a grantee in some valuable lands there. An interpreter and an agent, both of whose names are well known in regard to Native matters in that district, got her to sign over absolutely every interest she possessed; and at the time this important transaction took place the girl was about ten years old. She received in payment for her interest a trifling consideration. The name of this girl was obtained in the way I have stilted to property now worth' about £30,000. Had she died and the Maoris forgotten the circumstance of the sale, the title would have passed, but now; she is trying to get the land that was wrongfully obtained: and that is what is called Repudiation. Not only have the lands of minors been thus obtained, but i Interpreters have made false declarations. One Interpreter confessed to it in open court. It is nonsense then to say that no frauds have been perpetrated. Anyone who will attempt to bolster up such a statement deserves to be punished; otherwise all sense of public morality, honor, and justice, would go to the winds, and life would become simply a race as to who could cheat the most. Alluding again to Hawke's Bay, there was an old chief there, Waka Kawatini who had interests in valuable blocks in that district. A large trust deed was prepared and Waka was got to absolutely convey his property in fee simple to Europeans for a rent charge of £300 a year for his natural life. At the time this deed was made the property was actually bringing in about £500 a year. Friends arose who told Waka that he must not be cheated out of his lands in that way. The case was taken to the Hon. J. N. Wilson, Solicitor, in Napier, who commenced proceedings on behalf of Waka Kawatini, and at the instance of these "kind friends" of the Maoris, to have the deed declared void, and the lands restored to Waka. The day was fixed for the trial; but at the last moment the defendants who had obtained this deed from the Maori,—who, by the way, was about seventy-four years of age, and could neither read nor write—being afraid to face the Court, held an interview with the "kind friends" of the Native who had brought the action, and agreed to give up the deed. This was done, but to Waka's and Mr Wilson's astonishment, "the kind friends" then stepped in and got the land for themselves, large parts of which they hold to this day. One interest was a share in the Heretaunga Block.

There is another reason that renders the present state of land titles unsatisfactory; and that is the

non-alienation clause in deeds. By reason of the temporary nature of the leasehold no man will invest his money to any great extent. Yet another source of difficulty is the conflicting claims in the different blocks. One grantee may have parted with his interest in a certain block while another has not. Confusion arises in consequence, through the shares being undefined. In many cases the Natives who have not alienated their interests are looked upon as trespassers if they go upon the land. Again a further reason of dissatisfaction prevailing is that large areas are unprofitably held by individuals. Looking at the Kaiti and those other blocks extending towards Tologa Bay, we find that there are thousands of acres of land that should be brought under the plough simply covered with ti-tree and scrub. The Europeans will not go to the expense of clearing and improving, and I do not blame them while their titles remain imperfect. So long as land titles remain unadjusted it simply means locking up the country from settlement. Any person who comes forward to settle the difficulty and have the lands thrown open so that people can find land with a perfect title to dwell upon, deserves to be looked upon, not with opprobrium, but as a benefactor, and as one meriting the thanks of the whole community. (Hear hear and cheers). In the Assembly, during the past few years, efforts have been made for Committees of Inquiry to be held respecting certain land transactions on the East Coast: the Hon. Member for the East Coast and the Members for Hawke's Bay while always declaring that their hands were perfectly clean still opposed the appointment of the committees. There was a Committee of Inquiry held last Session in relation to a matter, in which persons in Poverty Bay were concerned. I do not remember the decision, but something cropped up about bribing a Native.

In pushing these matters I have had to meet with much opposition, and endure much insult. No man who attempts anything of the sort that I have taken in hand can avoid coming into contact with persons who are neck deep in those trans-actions of a questionable nature, and the consequence is that a man must expect to have dirt thrown at him. There are persons in this community, and I am glad to say they are few in number, who have acted improperly in their transactions with the Natives, but the day is rapidly approaching when they will be judged. The Maoris and the Europeans who have been present at any of the meetings I have held in this district, are aware that I have laid it down as a fundamental principle that any *bonâ fide* contracts between Maoris and Europeans of the full purport of which the Natives were aware, however disadvantageous it may appear now, if honestly entered into, are to be preserved intact.

The next proposition is to have the non-alienation clause in all those Maori lands amended, so as to give extended facilities for the purchase of certain areas, and for the better and safer investment of capital. I believe that in all cases where lands are locked up by the non-alienation clause, the Government would be prepared to provide for the entail over a portion, at any rate, of the land being broken, in order that the fee simple might be obtained.

In dealing with conflicting claims, the course to be pursued will be to partition undivided interests, and in some cases where found expedient and satisfactory, to effect an adjustment by purchasing the interest contested. There are some cases of this nature that call for an appeal to the courts of law. Where the holders have so far as they are concerned honestly become possessed of the land, as many here are an equitable adjustment will be afforded. I have in relation to the Whatauopoko Block of nearly 20,000 acres on the opposite side of the river from the town absolutely secured the adjustment of the title to the land. The same result will be brought about in regard to Mr. Johnson's run at Maraetaha. I am to have a large meeting with the Natives there to-morrow. Besides that there are a vast number of other matters of a similar nature now in hand. In all those negotiations for the completion and validation of titles the principle is to deal more liberally with the Europeans than Europeans would with themselves under such circumstances. I must state in relation to the Whatauopoko Block—as illustrating what I mean—the course of action adopted. Mr. Barker was the purchaser of 30 shares; there were 46 in the whole block. He tried to sell the interest he got, but could not do so. He was unable to get £35,000. I met Mr. Barker and told him there were three courses open to him, to fight, to sell, or partition—that is, for him to take a portion of the land for his thirty shares—or altogether sell out. Mr. Barker had no desire to fight the matter out in the law courts, neither had I. Eventually we came to terms by my purchasing on behalf of the whole of the grantees, Mr Barker's interest for £40,000. I am prepared to show absolutely in every trans-action in which I am concerned that my hands are clean. I find however that it is only those against whom I am fighting who condemn me. In all those cases under settlement the just claims of the; Maoris, and the just claims of the Europeans, can be equitably adjusted. And I say this publicly, and I wish it to be; generally known, that with persons who have not worked a wrong themselves I am prepared to deal more liberally, and I am empowered to do so.

I propose that large unprofitable areas may be opened up for settlement, where men can make homes for themselves and their families. That where large pieces are leased from the Maoris a purchasing clause over a certain portion will be granted so that the lessee can have the option of purchasing it. I believe that my proposals will meet with the unanimous assent of every man who desires the prosperity and welfare of the district. Some of you are aware that the Natives have been signing to myself and Wi Pere, and in some cases to

others as trustees empowering us to act absolutely for them in regard to their lands. Without that we could do nothing. It would have been impossible to do anything towards bringing that matter to completion, if we had had to deal with 30 or 40 Natives scattered all over the country. I told the Natives that to deal successfully with their property, trustees should be appointed, and that a committee, consisting of Natives, should be formed, having power to act jointly with the Trustees; and, against whom, in the case of wrongdoing, the grantees could appear in the Courts of Justice. What I have done has been with the full concurrence of Members of both sides of the House of Assembly; members of the legal profession, and many of the public men of New Zealand. I saw it was the only possible way of doing the work.

In Mr. Woodbine Johnson's block, he absolutely desires that I should get all titles vested in myself and Wi Pere; and for this reason: He has got a property of enormous value, if the title is complete, j By the land being placed in the hands of Trustees, and the Maori Committee, and they obtain a clear title, then, acting on behalf of the whole of the grantees, an equitable arrangement can be entered into. A certain defined area will be allocated to Mr. Johnson, to which he will have an absolute title, and the residue coming to the Natives will be thrown open for settlement at once. (Cheers). I believe that I can manage these Maori affairs profitably to both races alike; and while I have the approval of my own mind. I will continue to do so. The Natives, at any rate, believe that I will act fairly, and I think the public believe it also. At the present time there are many people waiting to invest their capital in this district, but refuse to do so while the land titles remain as they are; and it is to settle those titles and open the way for capital that I am doing what I am. (Hear, hear).

In directing my remarks to the benefits which will accrue to both races, I would point out that the Natives from Tokomaru Southwards nearly to Gisborne have resolved to assign their lands to trustees; and by this means thousands of acres that are now locked up will be thrown open for settlement. Those lands are comparatively unoccupied, except by a few persons who will not venture to permanently improve their holdings while the title is insecure. There are gentlemen here to-night, who, from the circumstances, I have stated, cannot go in for any outlay upon the land they occupy. These people know that if they can get an absolute title to a certain portion of the run, the general public could go in for the rest. The benefits to the Maoris will be these:—Regular rents will be coming to them, and the money accruing from sales on deferred payments. About 15 per cent, would be paid down, the balance remaining at 6 or 7 per cent. On these terms will people be enabled to settle in the district. (Cheers).

At Tologa Bay Mr Murphy is—not occupying but—in possession of 28,000 acres. If he had 8,000 acres with a clear title, he would be infinitely better off. In such cases we propose arbitration for a mutually satisfactory settlement and the lands coming to the Natives can then be submitted for the benefit of the public. Is not that doing a good service (Yes, and applause).

[Mr Rees then went on to explain the advantages to be derived from a superior education, similar to that addressed to the Natives at Tologa Bay.]

MR. REES continued: Is there any gentleman in this district, who holds Native land, that will say he is satisfied with the title? That he has a title that a solicitor will pass If he had the same property down South, with a good title he would probably get £100,000 for it; whereas he could not get £50,000 now. In the case of Mr. Barker of Whataupoko he has got back part of the land in lieu of portion of the purchase money, and can have a title that will pass the Land Transfer Act. To be able to obtain such a title is an incalculable advantage not only to the purchaser but to the whole community. (Hear, hear). The Natives will agree to a system of sale upon deferred payments, and in cases of leases clauses could be introduced more favorable to the lessee than could be got from any European. The Maoris see that the enormous areas of land they hold can be advantageously utilized by *bona fide* settlers getting upon them—not the land speculator. (Hear, hear.) I feel that I have taken upon myself an enormous responsibility in relation to these matters. Those who are acquainted with the law know that a Trustee cannot only under extraordinary circumstances profit a penny out of the land. (Hear, hear, and applause.) Should we be successful in getting the titles settled this place will prosper more than any part of the whole colony of New Zealand. (Hear, hear). An influx in the population would follow; and I am not singular in that belief. I wish the public to know that the movement is carried on in good faith and in the best interests of the place. I do not go in grog shanties to surreptitiously obtain Native signatures. I speak to the Natives through interpreters at public meetings where everything can be publicly discussed. No one need object to my proceedings except evil doers. Those who have acted wrongly, their unholy gains shall pass away from their grasp. I say that the whole of the community should support me; I do no care whether they do or not; but in view of its interests it should. The names of this place and Hawke's Bay stink in the nostrils of the people of the South, on account of land transactions. You have only to go South to find that any one engaged in Maori lands here, is looked upon with suspicion. I say to the community if it desires to see its own prosperity, those who have honestly dealt for lands, that whatever difficulties there are, whatever flaws exist, they should face the matter at once. I say to those persons that the Maoris, and the representatives of the Maori will deal far more liberally with them than Europeans under the same circumstances. There is no single instance where the

greatest liberality has not been shewn in settling with Europeans. Those who desire to fight must please themselves. Those who desire really to settle this question, the great bugbear of the place, and put an end to this shouting and screaming as of noises and fury signifying nothing, can do so equitably, and to the welfare of the district.

Now, sir, having finished upon that topic, I should like to speak on one or two other subjects of local importance.

In relation to the harbor I got the tacit understanding of the whole House and the promise of the Ministry, that a harbor should be constructed here. It was the first place named by the Hon. Sir Geo. Grey. The only question was if the scheme was practicable, and the cost moderate,—and of that there can be no doubt. I consider that a promise has been absolutely given by the Government, and I am confident that the works will be undertaken on the receipt of Sir John Coode's report and plans.

With respect to district roads, sums have been placed upon the Estimates, and surveyors are now employed laying off lines of roads, and explorers are engaged ascertaining the most suitable country. A commencement has been made, which the Government will not fail to carry out. I have great hopes that the district will emerge from its past obscurity. Tenders in connection with the Gisborne-Ormond railway line have, I see, been called for to-day. The Government have given the rails but I think they are bound to do something more. I believe that the County Council will, before long, pass a resolution asking for certain things to be done for the district. The lands acquired by the Government, in this district, will be thrown open as soon as the titles are closed. Then a large area will be open for selection. A Land Office will be here, so that people will not have the trouble of going to Auckland or Napier in order to have their titles substantiated. I communicated with the Hon. Mr Macandrew on the subject, who forwarded my telegram to the Minister of Lands.

It is a preposterous thing for the people of this district to have to send their claims to be registered as voters to Maketu. If the Council pass the resolution referred to, I will bring under the notice of the Government the extreme urgency of a Registration office being in Gisborne.

It would be out of place for me to refer to the recent speech of your representative here. I must say that the conduct of the two papers here, especially the STANDARD, is likely to produce a great deal of good. The more light that can be shed upon matters of public interest the more likely is a strong healthy public opinion to be generated, and that is the precursor of many things. I am glad to see the very independent action the STANDARD took; and whether the papers are for me or against me, I do not care so long as a fair criticism is given, and a healthy public opinion maintained no matter how hard they hit. What I object to is when journals take to villifying. The great desire should be to maintain a strong and healthy public opinion. There are other matters upon which I would like to address you but I will not trespass upon your time. Before sitting down I must record my belief that the future of this place and the whole district of Hawke's Bay will be a brilliant one if the people manage properly. Nothing else is wanting to make the place a great country. Here possessing a climate unsurpassed in the world, it but needs the steady perseverance of the people; and in moulding new institutions the people themselves should take an independent stand. Depend upon it the future prosperity and growth of the place rests upon the formation of an honest public opinion that will resolutely put its heel upon what is wrong and support that which is just. I would say in conclusion that I have no doubt that we shall be able to propound measures that will meet with the unanimous support of the Natives and tend to the welfare of the district. Those persons who can give good counsel in those matters will no doubt give the help that lies in their power. The making of roads, the introduction of capital, the amicable adjustment of the land difficulties, all are matters which only require to be taken in hand and properly conducted to make this district the finest in the Australian colonies. Mr Rees resumed his seat amid loud cheers.

After the applause subsided, Mr BOUS-FIELD said: If what you mean is genuine you have raised a hydra of an hundred heads. What I have heard of your speech I admire immensely. It is the first attempt I have heard of to cut off even one head of the hydra.

The CHAIRMAN notified to the meeting that Mr Rees would be pleased to explain further if necessary any of the subjects that had been touched upon or reply to any questions relating to matters of public importance.

Mr CARLAW SMITH wished that Mr Rees would do all in his power to get the Government to bear the cost of freightage of the rails for the Gisborne and Ormond line. Also that Mr Rees would be good enough to exert himself as a supporter of the present Government on behalf of the district and have the Harbour survey made at once.

Mr REES in replying stated that with regard to the survey of the Harbour the Government was prepared to pay £500 for having the survey performed.

Captain TUCKER explained that the Government had promised to send an Engineer to make the survey.

Mr REES remarked that the money was ready, but he supposed the requisite skill was not available here. He would communicate with the Government at once. Regarding the payment of freight for rails the Government had persistently refused to incur a similar outlay for about a dozen of places. The Minister of Public Works

undertook to find the rails for 14 miles from the town to the quarry. He believed the Government could not pay the freight as the House had not voted the item. It might be possible to get the County reimbursed the amount.

Mr CARLAW SMITH: When the question of the redistribution of seats comes on before Parliament will you advocate the claims of this district for special representation. (Hear hear).

Mr REES: I may state that I believe there will be this year a redistribution of seats. I have no reason to think that this district will not be allowed a separate Member. If provision be not made in the Bill I will undertake absolutely to urge the claims of the district upon the Government so that Gisborne and the surrounding district will have a separate Member.

Captain TUCKER said that as there were no further questions put, he thought Mr. Rees was entitled to a vote of thanks for the address delivered. It would be seen that the subjects dealt with in that gentleman's address were of vast importance. He (Capt. Tucker) was well aware of a large amount of capital being shut out from the district, because investors were dissatisfied with the land titles. Wealthy persons from the South were desirous of securing large blocks here to cut up for settlement, but in almost every block, especially those investors would require, there was some difficulty as to title. From what Mr. Rees had said he (Captain Tucker) thought those titles would be investigated. There was no harm in asking for justice. Mr. Rees was not instigating the Natives to use fire-arms, he desired simply to settle the titles that were in dispute and had been long before Mr. Rees's name was heard of in connection with native matters. The result of Mr Rees's advent in this district would be the settlement of those disputed titles, and we should then know who to deal with for the land. Large capitalists were excluded from the district solely on account of the nature of the land tenure. The question was not whether European or Maori won; it was the settlement of complicated titles, and that much-desired result would be brought about through Mr Rees's coming amongst us. (Cheers.) There was the Whataupoko Block of several thousand acres of excellent land within a biscuit throw of the town, used as a sheep run, and occupied by two or three people. If the title to that was settled, as he understood from Mr Rees's remarks it had been hundreds of families could be located there. Such were the results to be hoped for from Mr Rees's coming to this district. (Hear hear.)

Captain TUCKER then proposed a vote of thanks to Mr Rees, for the trouble he had taken in expounding his views to the meeting—Seconded by Mr CUFF.

The CHAIRMAN said he should put the resolution to the meeting as a matter of form, but he could confidently anticipate its result. He might be allowed to state that he heartily concurred with its spirit, and thought Mr Rees entitled to the best thanks of the community for the able address just delivered. There could be no doubt that the district had labored under many disadvantages in the past, one of the greatest of which was the Native land titles. The persistent neglect of successive Governments we might look to be remedied in the future; and if there was one man more than another able and willing to do us justice it was Mr Rees; and he (the Chairman) had great pleasure in putting the resolution.

Long and continued applause followed. Mr Rees acknowledged the compliment, and the meeting broke up.

## Mr Rees at Tologa Bay.

(From the POVERTY BAY STANDARD, Feb. 11th, 1879.)

ON Saturday last Mr Rees addressed a large gathering of natives at Uawa, who had requested him to give them an exposition of his policy with regard to future dealing with native lands.

After several speeches of welcome,—

Mr REES said that in addressing the chiefs and people of Tetanga, Hauiti, and others, he would speak to them as they had asked him to do so that day. He would ask them to be patient while he spoke about matters of importance to them, their children, and those to come after them. He had seen their beautiful country. He had seen in this place, Turanga, Napier, and other places, lands of the Maoris which had gone forever. It was, no doubt, right that the white people should have land to settle on. He, however, always thought that Maoris had parted with their lands for that which was worse than nothing. Sometimes for money spent at once, to pay a debt, or for grog, which was worse again. In some instances Europeans had purchased or leased the land fairly, so that neither Europeans nor Maoris had any right to complain. Instances again had arisen where the Maoris had been cheated out of their land, for which they should have redress, and the Europeans punished. It was his duty, speaking for the Maoris, to see what had been done wrong in the past, and prevent it for the future. He was struck by a remark that had dropped from Wi Pere that morning, that we should have patience. When one went a journey, he could not expect to get to the end at once; so in building a whare, it was necessary first to collect the material, and erect it before one could see it and enjoy it. They had further been told that morning that, although the Europeans were descended from the younger branch of Noah's family, they had more know-ledge than that possessed by the Maoris, who were the descendants of the elder branch. If this was so, it



was because the Europeans had more patience, and would work on to the end; the Maoris would need some patience; and a great deal would be done in a very short time. There was a time in New Zealand, after the pakehas came, when there was no Native Lands Court; and a time again which brought that Court into existence. No person could buy native lands except the Queen and her representatives. In those days the people were gathered together as they were that day; and if the question of the sale was agreed to, it was done, so that, when the land was sold, everybody had a say, and could agree, or differ, as to the sale of his land. Parliament then made a law, and appointed Judges to give Crown grants. Under the first law only ten persons could go in a grant; whilst, probably, a hundred persons had the right to the land included in it. This was very bad, as the ten could sell or lease without giving any of the proceeds to the remaining ninety. Something more than this could happen, because, if the whole of the ten did not agree, one of their number, who wanted a buggy, or grog, or was in debt, any European could get at him, and so gradually at the others, and eventually get the whole of the land to himself. When we had to fight the Maoris, we found they could take their own part; but when it came to planning, scheming, lying, or cheating, they were as children, and were no match for the European. So in Turanga and Napier, for grog and debt the land passed from the native people. Had the ten collected their people together, and sold in broad daylight, it would have been fair; but that the Europeans should have been enriched in the way he mentioned, is a matter of shame. In preparing the deeds the Maoris were promised that large reserves would be made for them; but to his (Mr Rees's) knowledge this had not been done in many cases. Had these Europeans treated other Europeans in the same way, they would have been put in prison; but the Maoris knew no better; were ignorant how to seek redress; and these Europeans became rich. In some places, as at Ahuriri and Turanga, these things have been felt, but not so much at Tolaga Bay. He did not come to Tolaga Bay to say these words in such an out of the way place, or because there were but few Europeans present. He had said these things in Parliament, and to those who had done it. He challenged, these people to come out to the light, and show what they had done. Nor would he stop in his course as long as life existed. It is said that the present Government did not like Maoris, nor wished to do more than the other Governments had done. They (the Natives) must remember that the old Governments did these things (evils') themselves, and allowed them to be done by others. It is members of the old Government and their friends who are stopping the present Government from doing what is right for the Maori people. He would advise them not to lose faith, but to believe that the present Government were doing their best for them., He would now tell them the way he came to take charge of Maori matters. Mr Sheehan was managing Maori affairs in Napier, and so hated was he in consequence by the white people, that his own friends were afraid to speak to him in daylight, for fear they would be ruined; and would only do so at night Sir George Grey became Premier, and Mr Sheehan Native Minister. There was then no one to take up Mr Sheehan's work for the Natives; and Sir George Grey told him (Mr Rees) to go to Napier, as there must be some one to look after Maori matters. Sir George would do anything to give justice to the Maoris, and have the wrongdoers punished. He went to Napier and took up Mr Sheehan's work, and soon found that the Maoris in the different districts looked to that office as their only hope to save them. He had been invited by Ngapuhi chiefs at the Bay of Islands to visit them. Kepa of Wanganui had also wished him to go there. Whatahou could tell them how he had been flooded with letters from the Wairarapa to go there; but he was sorry to say he had not been able to go as yet. In like manner he had received invitations from Waikato, Otaki, Tauranga, and other places. It was impossible for one pair of hands, and one pair of feet to carry out the whole of the work. They must not think it was want of will that he had not been to Uawa before. He was so pressed that he had to work night and day. Now that he had come he would be able to initiate measures which they themselves could carry out. He was glad to see Maori chiefs like Wi Pere willing to take upon themselves the burden of carrying out these measures. They must not be impatient; it is sufficient that they should fence, break up, harrow, sow the seed; and then wait for the harvest. Land was the life of the Maori people. Europeans could depend upon other means of existence. They were tradesmen, mechanics, laborers, doctors, and lawyers, and have many modes of obtaining a livelihood; but the Maoris could depend upon their land only. It was, therefore, absolutely necessary they should have good rules, and manage their lands as Europeans were doing. Let them look at the mode in which Maoris were managing their lands; a little patch of cultivation here, a piece of flat, or bush land there, with, perhaps, a small pa overrun with weeds; while the bulk of the land is unproductive. If they, the Maoris, cannot manage large areas of land properly, they should get some one that can. How this could be done he would now explain. Hitherto they had sold or let their lands to Europeans. When a European had land to sell, or let he advertised it, and so get the highest price. The Maoris adopt a different course. A European living amongst them, comes and says, "I will give so much for your land;" and they foolishly give it to him; the result is that the European is able to realise a fortune, whilst the Maori has little or nothing. The European may come as a beggar, and go away a rich man. There were two or three instances he knew of. There was the Heretaunga block, for which the Natives got £12,000 or 15,000; that land is supposed to be worth some £400,000 or £500,000. It is often worse in the case of leases. He would take Pouawa, and Kaiti, as instances. The Maoris leased for £250 a a year, and the European sold his

lease for £15,000. He would not say that the Maoris should get everything; but that they should get a fair share. He believed that the land could be so well dealt with that both the European and the Maori could do very well out of it. With respect to Whataupoko, it was leased to the late Capt. Read: then some of the owners wanted a plough, or other things, and some 30 out of 46 owners sold to him, and, eventually, he bought out 38 or 39 of the owners at a price of about £ 1000. Wi Harongo, Riperatr, Wi Pere, and a few others, did not sell. When he (Mr Rees) came to Turanganui, the matter was talked over with Wi Pere, and eventually the block was bought out from Mr Barker for £47,500; and there would remain after paying him, some £50,000 or £60,000 for the natives. This would show how by a little management, much money could be made out of the land. He would now instance Paremata and Mangaheia No. 1 and No. 2, in all about 28,000 acres. Mr Murphy got the lease—the Maoris receiving £300 or £400 a-year, In this case, the deeds were properly made, and the Maoris had themselves to blame for not receiving as much as they ought. He had talked to some of the chiefs, now present, and they have come to the conclusion to buy Mr Murphy out, so that the land will bring in £3,000 or £4,000 a-year. He alluded to these blocks to illustrate what could be done. In Read's estate the land was got in this fashion. He (Mr Rees) had commenced an action in the Supreme Court against the trustees, and put notices in the papers, that if persons bought, they would do so with Maori claims hanging over them. Some persons were afraid to buy, as others did, and now came, day after day to his office, to endeavour to arrange by giving up a portion of the land to have a clear title for the rest. He would be able to get back a good deal of the land for the Maoris. Had not his office been started, lands would all have slipped away from the natives.—[Mr Rees then lucidly explained the system proposed for the election of Trustees and Committees, together with their power and responsibilities, and continued.]—He had now explained the proposed plan for dealing with Maori lands. It only remained for the Natives to approve or disapprove. As to dealings in the past, where the Europeans have dealt justly, the transaction must stand; there could be no going back, even if mistake had been made. Where the consideration for the land had been gross, or fraud had been used, he was prepared to get the land back, money or no money. But the Maoris themselves should assist. Where reserves had been promised, and not given, he would compel the granting of these reserves, or break the lease. He expected the chiefs now to discuss these questions. Mr Rees then went on to impress his hearers with the necessity of supplying a better class of education for their children. Without an advanced education, and a knowledge of the English language, it would be impossible for them to keep pace with the Europeans. He thought that lands should be set aside by them for the support of such schools. After some further remarks. Mr Rees—whose address had been ably translated to them by Mr Jury—sat down amid the hearty acclamations of his hearers.

The meeting then proceeded to discuss the questions enunciated by Mr Rees, and agreed that the lands should be vested in Messrs Rees and Wi Pere, as Trustees, with a Committee of seven to assist them, in negotiating the several blocks of land in the district.

## Mr. Rees's Meeting.

(From the POVERTY BAY STANDARD, Feb. 15th, 1879.)

To the unprejudiced mind; and to those susceptible of reasonable and unjaundiced impressions, the address Mr. Rees delivered in the Masonic Hall on Monday night last, will be a welcome earnest and instalment of the many good things in store for Poverty Bay. As an all-round address on matters of general importance, it was the best that has ever been delivered in Gisborne. It was thoroughly and well connected; the subject-matter of it was the outcome of a thoughtful mind, and formed a syllabus of circumstances connected with the East Coast, the importance of which it is not easy to estimate.

We were glad to hear Mr. Rees attack, *in medias res*, the principal offending head of the Hydra—the Native titles—which, *par excellence*, is the bugbear and great opponent to settlement and prosperity. There was a vigor and manly outspokenness of language employed by Mr. Rees that left little doubt of his sincerity, even in the minds of his bitterest opponents. The most sceptical of—what we shall call for the sake of convenience—the Anti-Repudiation party, must have been convinced that the plans laid, and means employed by Mr. Rees—for the purpose of untying the Gordian knot, which has so long twisted its gnarled cords round the very throats of the settlers—have the merit of originality and honesty combined. Nothing, to our mind, can be more candid, or more entitled to the most favorable consideration, than the expressions of a man who brings with him the means of immediate and prospective relief from pecuniary and financial embarrassments; and pledges his reputation on the result. Mr. Rees is a very sanguine man, but he is no theorist. He is too much of a lawyer to be speculative beyond the boundary lines of either prudence or redemption. He has faith himself in the work that lies before him; and that, of itself, is an important factor in working out the sum of mundane possibilities. Mr. Rees sees that a great future awaits the East Coast generally, and Poverty Bay in particular. He is cosmopolitan in his views; and his belief in the timely fruition of a great scheme, nerves him to carry it on in the face of all

possible opposition—and we commend him for it. A man of less sanguine temperament—one less inured to the hardship and toil of political and personal strife, would either not have attempted the work at all, or, if he did, would have thrown up the sponge, and submitted to an ignominious defeat. Not so Mr. Rees. He is a far-seeing, but practical enthusiast, who puts his shoulder to the wheel, and pulls our cart out of the mud for us, while wo—to our shame be it said—sit on the way-side and call upon Jupiter for help.

"I feel fully persuaded," says Mr. Rees, "that the country cannot have "prosperity until the titles of the lands "are clear and distinct. Capital is shut "out so long as the land-titles are uncertain. An end is put to any hope of "harmony ever existing between the two" races of this Colony so long as this "state of things prevail." Now can the most rabid opponent of Mr. Rees deny the truth of these self-evident theses? But there are men—too many in their influence, if not in their numerical strength—still to be found who, while they theoretically admit the truth of these theses, practically deny it in their course of dealing with the Natives, which, if it be not what might be termed lawless, is opposed to the good government and peaceable settlement of the country. Mr. Rees finds Chaos and a Cimmerian darkness brooding over the land, and he says, "Follow" me, and I will give you light." Either he is a charlatan and an impostor of Gog and Magog stature, or he is the saviour of the district. But how shall we decide which character he personates until we see the result of his labors? Mr. Rees says, "It cannot be denied that "the present condition of native titles "is eminently unsatisfactory; and if the "question of their legality were staved "off for a few years, it would not improve "matters." Experiences on the East Coast of New Zealand bear but too correct a testimony to allow of the slightest attempt at refutation of this; while every settler of Poverty Bay knows but too well that its comparatively backward state is solely attributable to a most nefarious and ill-advised bartering—we cannot call it dealing—in Native lands. This much being conceded, it surely cannot be maintained that the man who can emancipate us from the evil effects of a system which has been built up from the force of bad examples, ought to be hounded down as an enemy to both races, and a foe to every principle of right, justice, and morality towards either!

Now, what are Mr. Rees's proposals Shortly, they are these: That Trustees and Committees are elected to take charge of all the lands, the Native owners of which consent to have them administered. The Committees will decide as to the best means of dealing with the several blocks, and have absolute control, in conjunction with the Trustees, over them. Lessees will be liberally, fairly, and honestly dealt with; they will be guaranteed as much of their holdings as they can afford, or care to buy, and the remainder will be thrown into the market for *bona fide* settlement. It will then be optional for any one to buy the fee simple of these lands, and in the most convenient and profitable way, namely, on a system of deferred payments, the principal sum bearing interest at the rate of six or seven per centum. Truly, it may be asked—Would any European amongst us, if he had an opportunity, offer such advantageous terms If Mr. Rees counselled the Natives to sell out entirely the whole of their possessions; or if he were trying by insidious means to possess himself of fat slices, as the manner of some is, he might be looked upon with suspicion; and his regard for the interests of European settlement would be blown to the winds. But the element of Conservatism that permeates his scheme; and the reservations and conditions proposed so that the advantages should be mutual, are so dead against those hypotheses, that it seems to be more difficult for an honest mind to asperse him as an enemy, than to commend him as the best friend the district ever had. And if we require results to cement our belief, let us look around. Already the tree has borne fruit; of which Maraetaha, Pakowhai, and Whataupoko blocks are instances. In the latter case, the difficulties that for some time stood in the way, are all but completed for the immediate survey of all the lower portion opposite the town of Gisborne. A traffic drawbridge will be thrown over the river, and some thousands of acres of the most fertile land in the Colony will, ere long, be settled with a thriving population Mr. Roes might well pause in his address, and ask if these things are not something to be proud of! But, it is not in isolated places, or even in the whole of Poverty Bay, that Mr. Rees proposes to carry on his work. He has received urgent requests from Natives all over the Island to go over and help them; and it must be a matter of hearty congratulation to know that, not until Mr. Rees has got well advanced in the gigantic undertakings in hand, on this Coast, will he budge from the post of duty. Mr. Rees says what is quite true. He has taken upon himself an enormous responsibility; and, instead of meeting with factious opposition, he ought to calculate on the support of every true settler. For our own part, we say—Go on. Turn not to the right, nor to the left. Let actions redeem words; and as teeming multitudes pour into the place; as the returning thousands of capital which have passed our doors in the past, seek again this field for investment, the name of W. L. Rees will be handed down to posterity as the greatest benefactor the East Coast of New Zealand—if not the whole Colony—has ever seen.

## The Kaiparo Block.

(From the POVERTY BAY STANDARD, Feb. 20th, 1873.)

IN our last issue we notified that the Deeds of the Kaiparo Block had been concluded on Monday last by Mr. Rees and Wi Pere, the Trustees for the Grantees in the said block. We are forcibly reminded of the old adage, "that "straws show how the winds blow." To our readers who are not intimately acquainted with the topography and native nomenclature of the district, we would state that the above block consists of four hundred and thirty-one acres of excellent land, situated on the town side of the Ferry Hotel, and on the southeast of the paddocks where the last races were held. We refer to the negotiations in the above block mainly to convey some idea to the general public of the complications surrounding many of the Native titles in this district; and, also, to illustrate, that by judicious management, a speedy and amicable settlement of Native titles can be arrived at. For that reason we propose giving a brief sketch of the ordeal through which the Kaiparo Block has passed, since it became Crown granted.

Originally, there were thirty-three Grantees, but of that number several are now dead. In 1869 the late Captain Read obtained a lease over the whole block, at a rental of three shillings an acre. Shortly after, six hundred pounds were paid to a few of the owners, on behalf of the whole of the Grantees, by way of mortgage on the block. The interest charged on the six hundred pounds almost completely swallowed up the whole of the annual rental for the remainder of the lease. Many of the Grantees who did not participate in the mortgage were, nevertheless, debarred from drawing their portion of the rent. We will leave it to the members of the long robe to judge of the legality, or otherwise, of the mortgage. To add to the complications, the Natives got into debt, and the purchase of shares began in the usual way. Some of the sales were admitted; others denied. A few of those who had not sold took possession of portions of the land, and erected houses thereon. In this confusion as to ownership the interests of the late Captain Read in the block were recently sold. He claimed two hundred and eight out of the four hundred and thirty-one acres, as freehold, with lease over the remainder of the block, terminable in 1884. According to that, not until five years hence, and until the mortgage was redeemed, could the Natives do anything in regard to the land without appealing to costly litigation in the Supreme Court. It is hardly, therefore, to be looked upon as a matter of surprise that on layman could be found sufficiently venturesome to purchase such a network of intricacy, Mr Brassey, solicitor, of Gisborne, purchased the interest of the late Captain Read; and we are glad to be able to state, that, now the whole of the difficulties in connection with the Kaiparo Block are finally adjusted, by the original lease and mortgage being extinguished. Of the two hundred and eight acres claimed by Captain Read's Trustees, forty-eight have been returned to the Natives; also the two hundred and twenty-three acres, being the residue of the block, and held under a disputed lease. The Natives who took possession of what they deemed their portion of the block, have their proportionate shares, amounting in the aggregate to about fifty acres, awarded them. After giving Mr. Brassey an absolute title to one hundred and sixty acres of the best part of the block, the remainder of the area returned has been leased to that gentleman for ten years at an amount in value of over one pound an acre per annum, reckoning improvements. The balance of the block—one hundred and thirty-one acres—other Europeans have been anxiously negotiating for on similar terms, at the same time equally advantageous to all parties; and all arrangements are now concluded. The Native Grantees obtain a clear annual rental of about two hundred and seventy-five pounds, besides a reserve of one-eighth of the block, and the disputed mortgage and lease are wiped out. In this small transaction alone, the Native owners are placed in a very good position; at the same time the Europeans have nothing to complain of. Liberal arrangements have, we believe, been made with them. They have absolutely a clear and distinct title to their land, such as many a person here, and in Hawke's Bay and elsewhere would be glad to have. To the district at large, the general benefit accruing is this:—That a valuable block of land within four miles of town, second to none in quality of any to be found in Poverty Bay, which, for the past nine years, has been in the hands of Europeans without a single acre being improved, or a chain of fencing, erected, will at once be made to bring forth benefits to all concerned. Costly residences, and other improvements, will forthwith be commenced; and an outlet will be found for the expenditure of capital that cannot fail, in its beneficial effects, to be for the good of the district. It seems, indeed, as if the day had at length dawned for bringing about a settlement of the heart-burnings and jealousies that have too long been felt in this district in matters between Europeans and Natives in respect to Native land titles; and for the consummation of which we look confidently towards Mr. W. L. Rees, through whose instrumentality, alone, those interested in the Kaiparo Block are indebted for their success.

## **KO TE RIIHI I TURANGA.**

Ko te whakamaori tanga tenei o nga kupu whaikorero a Te Riihi i whakapuakina eia ki te hui pakeha i hui ki Turanganui i te ahi ahi o te 10 o nga o Pepuere, 1879 i runga i tana powhiri, nana ano i whakahau kia whakamaoritia kia rongona ai e nga Iwi Maori katoa.

Ka tu a te Riihi ka whakapai atu te hui ki a ia, ka meaia.

I whakaaro au i a au i haeremai nei ki te whaikorero ki te hui kua hui mai nei i tenei ahi ahi, he mea tika kia whakarangitia e au nga take hei ahunga atu mo taku whaikorero kia marama ai i te hui te takotoranga haeretanga o aku korero, ena ano e tokomaha atu te hui nei me i kore te awaha kua ua nei, otira e taea hoki te aha i ta te Atua, a e hari ana hoki tatou ki te uanga o te awaha hei whakaoraora i to tatou Takiwa nei.

Kei te mohio nga Tangata ka whaikore-rotia atu nei e au ki taku tino mahi (ara) ko toku Roiatanga, kei te mohio ano ratou he Tangata au e uru ana ki nga mahi Paremata me taku whakaaro nui ki runga ki te taha Maori ki nga raruraru hoki e ahu ana ki runga ki o ratou whenua a i ranga i aku mahi penei kua tau te whaka-kino a tetalii hunga marire ki runga ki a au, me te whakatonga hoki taua hunga ki aku mahi.

Ka whakamaramatia e au ki tenei hui inaianei nga take i haere ai au e enei huarahi, a e mohio aua au e kore e tau he whakakino a tenei hui ki runga ki a au ina marama atu ai ia au aua nga take.

Me titilo whakamuri tatou ki te noho a te Tangata Maori ki runga ki ona whenua i te wa o te korenga ano o te pakeha ki uta nei, ko te mana o te whenua i ena takiwa i noho ki te Iwi nui tonu, otira ki nga Rnngatira o ia Iwi o ia Iwi.

I te huinga o te Paremata tuatahi o Niu Tirani me te whakamananga a te Ture i taua Paramata, ka uru he mahara hou ki roto ki nga Tangata Maori me te titiro whakatonga hoki ratou ki te mana hou kua maranga ake ki waenganui i a ratou, a he nui te manukanuka me te pairi i tipu ake ki nga Iwi Maori katoa o te Koroni nei, a kua rongu au ki oku hoa pakeha e noho ana ki Akarana i tena takiwa, i te titiro ahua wehi atu a nga Tangata Maori i hui mai ki te whare Paremata i Akarana ki te matakitaki i nga mahi whakanui a te pakeha i te huakanga tuatahi o te whare paremata, me a ratou ui makutu ki [unclear: ng] Kaiwhakamaori ki te take o tenei [unclear: mai] hou.

Kua mohio ake ano ratou i mua ake [unclear: kua] tau te mana a te Kuini ki rungu ki [unclear: nga] motu nei, engari ko tenei mea hou ko [unclear: te] Paremata ta ratou i raha atu ai me ta ratou i wehi atu ai, a ka mea ratou [unclear: tia] kimihia kia whawhatia atu tona ahua [unclear: me] tona take.

I mua atu o tenei ko te mahi a te [unclear: Ta] ngata Maori he kawe atu i ona mate i [unclear: ana] putake raruraru ki te tino Kawana [unclear: kia] tirotirohia kia whakapaitia, na i te wa [unclear: ku] tu nei te Paremata ka kiia mai ki a [unclear: rato] me ahu ke atu ki te Paremata.

I runga i te ahua manukanuka o [unclear: nga] Tangatata Maori mo te taha ki enei [unclear: mahi] hou ka whaihangatia ake e nga Iwi [unclear: Maori] tetahi Komiti, ka huaina tona ingoa [unclear: ko] Komiti whakahaere whenua.

Ka mea atu a Potatau ki nga [unclear: Rangat] kia whakaarahia he Mira huri [unclear: paraoa] Mata Mata a ka whiriwhiringia [unclear: eta] Tangata hei haere atu ki a te Makarini, ka kiia i reira ko runga tonn i te [unclear: kupo] whakahoki a te Makarini i taua tono mohiotia ai te huarahi mahi ma taua [unclear: Kom] whakahaere whenua, he maha ano nga [unclear: ton] a Potatau kia te Makarini i muri ake [unclear: ai] kia whakina ake te whakaae te [unclear: pe] ranei a te Kawana mo taua tono Mira.

Ko te Makarini raua ko te Penetana [unclear: e] noho ririri ana ki a raua i tena takiwa, [unclear: a] turaki ana tetahi i tetahi kia hinga, na [unclear: i] riro na konei i whakaroa te korero mo Mira ra, me te ki atu hoki a te Makarini [unclear: ihi] a ratou taihoa te korero ki a te [unclear: Kaw] engari me korero ki nga minita i te [unclear: tuat] no te mea me matua te korero ki [unclear: nga] minita katahi ka tika te kawe atu ki [unclear: a] Kawana.

Heoiano ka hoki nga Tangata ki o [unclear: ratu] kainga kua matatau hoki ratou kua riro [unclear: e] mana a te Kawana i te Paremata, a [unclear: tu] ana te pairi me te whakatonga ki roto [unclear: te] te ngakau o te Tnngata, pehea ra [unclear: pehes] te te ahua me te tu o nga mahi ka [unclear: ho] ake nei mo te taha ki o raton whenua.

Heoi kua hangaia te Kingitanga i [unclear: kori] kua karangatia ko Potatau te Kingi, [unclear: kote] timatanga tonu tenei o te Kingitang [unclear: ki] nga Maori.

Ka timata tenei te Paremata ki te [unclear: haga] ture mo nga whenua Maori a no te tan 62 ka whakaotia te ture tuatahi e te [unclear: Parena] otira kihai taua ture i whai [unclear: mana] noatia te tau 64 no taua tau ka han te Paremata te tahi, ture ano, a no te tau 65 ka hangaia te ture tohu tohu i te pehea-tanga o te kimihanga i nga take o nga whenua Maori me te hanganga i te Kooti he kimi, ko nga whakaritenga katoa o taua ture i ahu anake ki runga ki te whakawakanga me te wawahanga o te whenua, me te tino whakakorenga o te take Maori i runga i te whenua.

E mohio aua tatou i he te ahua o te hanganga o aua ture no te mea ko u te Tangata Maori noho ki runga ki ona whenua kihai i penei me o te pakeha, kati ehara i te mea e hanga ana te Paremata i runga i te matauranga engari e hanga ana i runga i te pohehe hei whakamatau noa ake me e kore e tupono ki te pai, a no reira mai ra ano a e haere nei ano te kore-nga kahore i oti i te Paremata tetahi ture tino pai e oti pai ai nga raruraru o nga whenua Maori e noho pai ai hoki nga Maori me nga pakeha ki runga ki enei motu.

No te tau 1867 me te tau 1868 ka timata te reti te hoko me era atu tu mahi a te pakeha i nga whenua Maori, a ka haere tonu aua mahi a taea noatia te tau 1873 ko aua mahi i haere i runga i nga whaka-ritenga a nga ture o

te tau 1865 o te tau 1867, i te tau 1869 ka hangaia ano nga ture, no roto i enei takiwa i tipu ake ai nga raru raru katoa i waenganui i nga pakeha inga Maori.

I runga i te kino o nga ture kua kitea-tanga atu te raru raru kei mua e takoto aua mai, kua ruia hoki te pua, e kore ano hoki e kore te tipu.

He raru raru te mea i whanau mai i tato i enei malunga, a ena a haere tonu ano te raru raru i roto i nga tau e maha e haere ake nei ki te mea ka kore e whakao-tia tetahi ture pena tona ahua me te ture mO nga whakawa i nga whenua Maori i metia nei a kihai i whakaaetia e te Pare-mata ka hori nei.

E mea ana au i runga i oku ahua katoa, a i roto hoki i aku mahi katoa kia whaka-nutua haeretia e au nga raru raru katoa e akoto ana i waenganui i nga Maori me nga pakeha, no te mea kei te mohio au e kore e tipu pai te ahua o to tatou motu i te korenga kahore ano i marama te [unclear: tao] pnga whenua, ko aua raru hoki [unclear: vkaka] haehae hei pana ata i nga moni e hia hiatoia ana ki te homai ki enei wahi whaka haere ai me taku mohio hoki e kore rawa tipu pai te ahua me te whairawatanga o nga Maori me nga pakeha e noho tahi nei i enei motu i runga i tenei tu ahua.

E tino ki tuturu ana au ko taku tino hia hia he whakamutu he whakapai i nga raru raru kua tipu ake i waenganui i nga Maori i nga pakeha i runga i te kino o nga ture whenua Maori i nga tau kua pahure ake nei.

Hei aha koa kia whakaroina ano te tiroiro i nga mate me nga raru rara e pelli nei i runga i nga whenua he aha te painga ki a wai o te waiho roa i nga whenua kia takoto kino ana me te whakaepa i nga raru raru hei tukunga iho ki nga uri o te tangata Maori ranei Pakeha ranei, tena etahi pakeha ahu whenua e mahara ana kua whiwhi ratou, i te oranga mo a ratou tamariki i muri i a ratou kaore, he whenua raru raru ia te whenua ka tukua i iho nei.

Heoi ra ko te mea tika kia tiroirohia wawetia inaianei nga raru raru o te whenua kia whakapaitia ai, hei reira hoki ata tau ai nga whakahaere katoa o te rangi marie, (Ka whakapai te hui ki a te Ruhi i konei.)

Ko nga hoko me nga reti o mua (ara) i te wa kahore ano kia hangaia he ture Kooti mo nga whenua Maori, na te Kawa-natanga na etahi pakeha ano, kaore nga Tangata i whakahe ki nga hoko i tena takiwa, i mohio hoki ratou e hoko tika ana i ratou i runga i nga whakaritenga a te Tiriti o Waitangi, na mo nga hoko o Kai-koura heoi ano ta nga tangata Maori o reira he tohe tonu ki nga whenua rahui mo ratou i roherohea i te takiwa i a Kaw-ana Kerei raua ko Kawana Hopihana, kaore i te tirohia te kakenga o te utu o aua whenua i nga tau ka hori ake nei heoi ano ta ratou ko te tohe tonu kia whakatu-tukitia nga whakaritenga o era nga rangi.

I te hanganga o Dira ture whenua Mauri ka timata te raru raru o te Kawanatanga me etahi atu tangata hoki e hoko whenua ana, na ka whakaatungia e au inaianei nga take i raru raru ai.

Ko te take i kino ai etahi hoko na runga i te raweke, i runga i nga korero noa iho a nga tangata Maori ka lutea tanga atu nga mahi raweke kua maina ki runga ki a ratou, he mea ano i riro na tetahi atu tangata i tuhi te ingoa o tetahi, he mea ano ko te upoko o tetahi hapu hei tulli i nga ingoa o tana hapu, [unclear: heie naro] ke atu ra pea te tangata nona [unclear: tringoa ka thia] nei, he whenua ke noa atu, me te [unclear: mohnga] pakeha kei te ngaro te tangata nona te ingoa ka tuhia nei, me te ki atu ano nga pakeha ki te upoko o te hapu e mana tonu ana tana tuhinga i nga ingoa o etahi taangata o tona hapu, na ka tulli kuare atu ia kaore te mohio ake hei hara tena mona, a tau ana te raru rara ki runga ki nga mea ehara ake nei i a ratou i tulli o ratou ingoa, i etahi meatanga e hiki tonuana te koka i te tamaiti ka tuhia te ingoa o te tamaiti ki te pukapuka.

I konei ka korero a te Riihi i te tini-hangatanga a etahi pakeha o Nepia i tetahi tamaiti wahine ko Puke Puke te ingoa ka te kau tonu nga tau o taua tamaiti i te takiwa i tuhia ai tona ingoa ki te puka puka huri o ona whenua katoa ki aua pakeha, i korero ano ia i te timi-hangatanga i a te Waaka Kawatini. Kei konei ka patai ake a Papu Kupa, nawai i hoko nga whenua o te Waaka, ka ki a te Riihi "Ehara i te mea hoko, he mea tahea tonu."

He nui nga whenua o konei puta atu ki Uawa kei te takoro mangere noa iho ko te take he nui no te whenua ki te pakeha kotahi, ko etahi wahi o aua whenua he pai noa atu mo te parau, a kci te tipuria noa-tia e te ota ota noa, ko te alma raru raru o te take o te whenua tetahi take i kore nga pakeha e taluri ki te whakapai.

E kore rawa e tika kia whakakinongia te tangata ana tahuri ake ia ki te wliakapai i enei raru raru engari me whakapai a katoa ki a ia (ka mihi te hui ki a te Riihi i konei.)

I nga tau kua pahure ake nei kua mea-tia i roto i te Paremata kia whakaritea tetahi Koniiti hei titiro i nga raru raru whenua o te Talentai Rawhiti engari na te mema o Kaki Pei rana ko te mema o te Tai Rawhiti i peehi me te ki ano raua kaore tahi o raua hara.

I te Paremata ka taha nei i noho tetahi Komiti hei whakawa i tetahi mea e unu ana a te Kupa ki roto, ko te whakataunga kihai i ata marama i a au engari i puta i reira tetahi korero whakawhai hara i a te Kupa mo tana hoko kino i tetahi tangata Maori. Kei konei ka mea ake a te Kupa, (ko koe kei te hoko kino i a Wi Pere.)

Ka mea a te Riihi, "Kati ano koe kia whai kupu kia mohiotia atu ai kei te pamamae koe."

Ka mea ake ano a te Kupa i etahi kupu tawai mo te Riihi, ka whakahua ia ki te aru arutanga mai i Àkarana mo te raweke.

Ka mea a te Riihi, ki taku mohio e kore rawa koe e toa ki te tulli i ena kupu ki te puka puka.

Ka mea a te Kupa, he kore oranga mou i tau malli roia no reira ka anga koe ki te taware i nga Maori.

Ka mea a te Riihi. He nui te pai a oku hoa roia kia au hei hoa inaili mo ratou i roto i nga whakawa, e mohio ana au ena e tupono mai ki a au etahi tangata kua wnai hara, i a au e mahi haere nei i aku mahi, a ko aua tangata hei maka mai i te para para ki runga ki a au. Ka mihi atu te hui i konei.)

Tenei ano etahi tangata whai hara kei enei wahi e noho aua, engari ka tata te ra whakawa mo ratou.

Kei te mohio nga Maori me nga pakeha e tae ana ki roto ki aku hui ki aku ture i whakatakoto ai moku (ara) ahakoa i mou mouria etahi whenua e kore e ahatia atu i te mea i mahia i runga i te ngakau pono o te tangata.

Kei konei ka mea a te Kupa, Kowai koa hei whakaronga i ena korero au, ka mea a te Riihi ke a te Kupa.

Mehemea kei te pohehe koe ki nga ture o tenei mea te hui he aha koe i haere mai ai, katahi ano te mea whakaohomauri i te tangata, he tangara mahi penei ki roto ki te hui.

Ko tetahi whakaaringa aku ko nga whenua kei te takoto i roto i te haere kia whakamataratia kia watea ai te hoko i etahi wahi e tika ana kia hokoa, me taku mohio ano ena te Kawanatanga e whakaae kia watea te here o etahi wahi o aua whenua.

Kei konei ka koreotia e te Riihi ana mahi katoa kua mahia mo te taha ki Whataupoko, i whakaatutia ano e ia nga tikanga katoa kua takoto mo Maraetaha me etahi atu poraka whenua o Turanga.

Kei konei ka mea ake a te Kupa. Me te mea tonu kei a koe nga whenua Maori katoa o te motu nei, inahoki to tu o au korero.

Ka mea a te Riihi "me te mea tonu e hao ana e wawata ana koe kia riro anake i a koe inahoki te tu o au korero." Ka kata nga pakeha me te karanga (hia hia.)

Ka mea ano a te Riihi. Kei te mohio ano koutou kua hurihia e etahi tangata o ratou whenua ki a maua ko Wi Pere whaka-haere ai kati kua whaiti ki roto kia matou: ko te Komiti nga whakahaere katahi ano ka oti [unclear: painga] malli katoa e hiahia ana kia mahia.

Ko enei ritenga i whakaaetia e nga taha erua o te whare Paremata e nga roia me etahi tangata munii o te Koroni nei, [unclear: ko] te hoko kino i te tangata i kore i, a au a ko te tangata e ki ana i te malli pera an me tulli e ia tana korero ki te pukapuka.

Ka whakato i a te Kupa i konei.

Ka mea ake a te Riihi me te mea tonu he mea utu naku a te Kupa kia haere mai ia i tenei po hei katanga ma katoa.

Ko te tino hia hia o te Honehana kia riro ma maua ko Wi Pere e whakatau nga raru raru o ona whenua no te mea he moni nui kei roto o ana whenua e takoto ana, ae mohio ana au era e oti pai i a au te wha-kaoti ki runga ki nga Iwi erua, kei te tatari hoki etahi pakeha whai moni kia pai te takoto o nga whenua ka hoko ai ratou i etahi wahi. (Ka mihi atu te hui i konei.)

Ko nga tangata Maori o Tokomaru tae noa ki te awa o Turanganui kua whakaae ki te huri i o ratou whenua ki etahi kai tiaki a ka tino huakina etahi whenua nui hei nohoanga mo te tini o te pakeha, ko nga pakeha rua rua kei runga e noho ana inaianei kei te ngaikore ki te whakapai i aua whenua ko te take kei te raru raru ano te takoto o nga whenua.

Kowai rawa te pakeha hei ki mai ko ia kei te noho tika i runga i tetahi whenua Maori.

E mohio ana au he malli taumaha tenei ka tangohia nei e au ki a au mahi ai, otira mehemea ka ata tau ki raro nga raru raru whenua o tena Takiwa ko reira hohoro ai te tipu o te whairawatanga o tenei Takiwa Katoa me te whakakikii haere ki te pakeha.

E mea ana au kia marama i te ao katoa aku whakahaere, kaore au e haere ana ki nga whare hoko Waipiro tulli haere ai i nga ingoa o nga tangata Maori haere tonu ai au me aku kai whakamaori ki nga wahi marama korero ai i aku korero kia rongona ai e te ao katoa, heoi ano nga tangata hei whakahe i a au ko nga tangata kua whai hara, a ka murua nga rawa riro he i runga i a ratou ka noho ake nei, he mea tika kia tuaratia au e katoa ki roto ki aku mahi nci.

He nui te haunga o tenei kainga me Nepia ki roto ki nga ihu o nga pakeha o tera motu mo runga i nga raru raru whenua, a, ka whakatongatia i reira te tangata o konei atu ki te rongona he tangata ia kua pa ki nga whenua Maori.

E mea ana au ki nga tangata katoa e noho ana ki tenei takiwa mehemea he hia hia to ratou kia whakatautia nga raru raru o enei whenua me tahnri wawe inaianei ki te mahi a ka whakangawaritia e te taha Maori nga whakaritenga, ko nga mea e hia hia ana ki te kakari kei a ratou te whakaro.

I konei ka korero a te Riihi i etahi korero e ahu ana ki runga ki te taha pakeha ara mo te awa kaupuke mo Turanga, mo nga rori me nga whenua [unclear: o] te Kawanatanga.

Mo te rehitatanga o nga kai pooti, a ka mea ia ena ia e mea ki te Kawanatanga kia turia he Tari rehitia pukapuka whenua ki Turanga, me era atu mea hei whaka-whiwhi i tenei Takiwa ki te pai. He imi te whakapai a te hui ki a te Riihi i tona nohoanga ki raro.

Ka tu ko Kapene Taka ka mea I te mea kaore he patai ki [unclear: a] te Kiihi e toe ana e mea ana au e tika ana kia tino whakapai tenei hui kia ia inaianei. He take nunui anake nga take o te whaikorero a te Riihi, e mohio ana au he nui nga moni haeremai o waho kei te aru arutia atu e nga raru raru whenua o konei, i runga i nga

korero a te Riihi kua mohio au ka tata te whakataua aua raru raru, chara i te ine no te taenga mai o te Riihi ki konei i mohiotia ai nga raru raru nei kua mohiotia i mua atu, kati ka tao mai nei a te Riihi hei mahi i enei raru raru heoi ko te tannga tenei e tau ai enei raru raru katoa, i runga i nga korero a te Riihi kua mohiotia inaianei ka tata a Whataupoko te whakakikiitia ki te pakeha Kati e mea ana au kia tino whakapai tenei hui ka a te Riihi.

Tautokotia ana e te Kawhi.

Ka mea a te Tieamana o te hui he mea tika hia whakapai te hui ki a te Riihi mo nga korero marama kua whakapuakina e ia ki te hui i tenei ahi ahi.

A he nui noa atu te whakapai a te hui ki a te Riihi.

## Ko te Riihi i Uawa.

Ko nga kupu korero enei i whakapuakina e Te Riihi i tana whaikorerotanga ki te hui Maori i hui ki Uawa i te 8 o nga ra o Pepuere, 1870, he mea whakahau nana kia whakamaoritia kia rongona ai e nga Iwi Maori katoa.

Mutu ake ana nga whaikorero whakatau Maninvinri a ia rangatira o te hui ka tu ko te Riihi ka mea.

E nga Rangatira mea nga tangata kotoa o Te Aitanga a Hauiti me etahi atu tangata e noho ake nei i roto i tenei hui i runga i ta koutou tono ki a au ka whaikorero au ki a koutou i tenei ra e mea ana au kia ata whakarongo mai koutou ki etahi korero e whaitikanga ana ki runga ki a koutou ki to koutou ahua e noho ake nei puta iho ki o koutou uri i muri i a koutou.

Kua kite au i to koutou whenua ataahua.

Kua krte au i konei i Turanga i Nepia me etahi atu wahi, i etahi whenua kua tino riro atu kua tino makere atu mo ake tonu atu.

He mea tiki ano kia riro etahi wahi whenua i nga pakeha hei nohoanga mo ratou.

Otira ki taku whakoaro kua mounouria noatia nga whenua kaore he ritenga tahi ki a koutou, he mea ano he moni te utu, otira ko taua moni i whakapaua hei utu nama aha noa ake ranei, he mea ano he waipiro, ko te mea kino rawa atu tenei.

Ko etahi hoko me etahi riihi i tika i pai noa iho a kaore hoki he ritenga tahi oenei.

Otira ko etahi he mea taware he mea tinihanga, e tika enei kia tirotirohia te taha ki nga Maori, kia whiua koki nga pakeha nana i tinihanga.

I runga i taku mahi i te taha ki nga Maori e tika ana ki tirotirohia e au nga henga kua he, ki te arai atu hoki i te he a muri ake nei.

E mihi ana au ki tetahi kupu a Wi Pere i puta i tenei rangi (ara) kia kua hei whawhai, me te tira hoki kei runga i te haere kei te roanga ano o te ara te ritenga.

Kua kiia hoki i tenei ra e tetahi o nga Tangata i whaikorero, ahakoa tematamua-tanga o te Iwi Maori i runga i te Tipuna kotahi (ara) i a Noa, ko te Iwi pakeha te Iwi kua poka ke atu te mataurauga, ko te take hoki he ata tau marire no ratou ki te ako ako i nga mea katoa, me te tohe tonu kia taea tonutia te mutunga, otira he nui ano nga mahi e oti i te takiwa poto.

I te wa kahore ano i hangaia te Kooti mo nga whenua Maori ko te Kuini anake ratou ko ana kai malli hei hoko i nga whenua Maori. Ko te tu o te hoko i ena takiwa, rimanga uni tonu ai, penarne tatou e hui nei i tenei ra, a ka unu a katoa ki te whakaaetanga ki te whakakorenga ranei o te hoko.

Na ka hanga nei te Paremata i te ture Kooti i nga whenua kia Karanua Karatitia. I runga i nga whakaritenga a te ture tuatahi kaore i uru nga tangata tokomaha atu i te kotahi te kau, a e mana ana taua kotahi te kau ki te hoko noa atu i te whenua o katoa me te kaiponu atu i nga moni ma ratou anake, a ehara ano hoki i te mea kia whakaae katoa te kotahi te kau ra, engari haere takitahi noa atu ai a ia tangata o ratou ki te hoko i tona hea i tona hea, a na te mea ka pau anake ratou, i te pakeha te hokohoko.

I te timatanga o te whawhai a te pakeha raua ko te Maori ka kite te pukeha he ngakau toa ano to te Maori, otira i te auganga ki nga mahi raweke kihai i tu to ringa o te Maori, na me te tamariki tonu, koia ano a Nepia raua ko Turanga i riro atu ai, he waipiro he nama rawa ano te utu.

Mehemea i hoko tika te kotahi te kau i te ra e whiti ana heoi kua pai.

I te mahinga o nga pukapuka hoko, reti ranei i kiia kia kapea tetahi wahi whenua mo nga Maori engari e mohio ana au kihai i whakatutukitia tenei whakarite-nga, mehemea i penei te hianga o te pakeha ki a ratou whaka pakeha ko te whare here here te mutunga, otira e taea hoki e te Maori te aha i tona kore matauranga, koia i tipu tonu ai te rawa ki te pakeha, otira ko tenei kainga ko Uawa kei te alma ora ano i enei mahi.

Ehara i te mea i haere mai au ki konci ki te wahi ngaro korero ai i enei korero aku, Kua whakapuakina e au enei korero ki te paremata ki nga tangata hoki nona nga hara, he tono ki enei taangata kia tu mai ki te marae whawhaki ai i a ratou mahi, a e kore e mutu noa taku mahi i a au e ora nei.

Kua kiia te ki kaore tenei Kawanatanga e aroha ana ki te Maori ara e rite ana ratou ki etahi kawanatanga te whakaaro kore ki te taha Maori, otira me mahara koutou na nga Kawanatanga tawhito i mahi nga mahi kino nei



me te waiho hoki ratou i etahi taangata kia mahi pena ana, a ko nga taangata hoki o aua kawanatanga kei te whakararuraru i tenei kawanatanga koi mahi tika ki runga ki te taha Maori.

Kati me mohio koutou ko tenei Kawanatanga kei te awhina i a koutou a me whakamanawa koutou ki a ratou.

Ko tenei ka whakamaramatia atu e au ki a koutou te alma i riro ai ko au hei kai whakahaere mo nga mahi Maori. Ko te Hiana e mahi ana i nga mahi Maori ki Nepia, a e tino ngakau kino ana nga pakeha o reira ki a ia. Ka tu a Hori Kerei hei upoko mo nga Minita, ka tu ko te Hiana hei Minita mo te taha Maori, katahi ka ki mai a Hori Kerei ki a au me haere koe ki Nepia ki te mahi i nga mahi a te Hiana, e kore hoki e alici to whakarere, ko Hori Kerei hoki kei te aroha nui ki nga mate o nga Maori, na ka haere au ki Nepia ki te mahi i nga mahi a te Hiana a ka mohio au ko taku Tari tonu te whaka-manawatanga o nga tangata Maori o ia takiwa, kua powhiritia au e nga tangata o Ngapuhi kia hacre atn ki to ratou Takiwa, ko te Keepa o Whanganui kua whai powhiri ano ki a an, ma Te Whatahoro e korero ki a koutou i te tini pukapuka mai o Wairarapa kia haere atu au ki kona, a e noho pouri ana au ki toku korenga i tae atu i ranga i aua tonu, me nga powhiri mai i Waikato i Otaki i Tanranga kua tae mai ki a au otira me pehea i te kotahi tonu oku hei inahi i nga tini mahi nei. Kua koutou hei mahara he ngakau kore noku te take i roa ai au, engari na te nui tonu o aku mahi, otira ka tae mai nei hoki au maku e whakahau etahi mahi ma koutou e whakaoti.

E koa ana au ki etahi Tangata pena me Wi Pere e tango nei i etahi mahi taumaha mahi ai engari kua hei whaawhai ko te pua me matua rui a ka whanga marire ki te huanga, ko te oranga hoki o te tangata he whenua, engari te pekaha he maha noa atu ona take oranga, kati he mea tika kia tino pai nga whaka haere i nga rawa o te whenua pena ano me a te pakeha, titiro ki te noho a te tangata Maori ki runga ki ona whenua ko te wahi paku ataahua ka mahia e ia ki te kai, ko te nuinga atu o te whenua ka takoto kau noa iho. I te mea kaore e taea e te tangata Maori te whakahaere pai i ona whenua, he mea tika kia tukua atu ki tetahi atu tangata malli ai, kati ka korero au ki a koutou i taku i mohio ai.

I mua ake nei ka hokoa ka retia ranei e te tangata Maori tona whenua ki te pakeha. Mehemea he whenua to te tahi pakeha hei hoko hei reti ranei ka panuitia e ia ki roto ki nga nupepa kia rongona ai e te ao katoa. Ko ta te tangata Maori tuku i tona whenua he tuku alma ngaro i runga i te tapaetanga atu a tetahi pakeha i te moni mana ko te mutunga o tena ka riro tonu atu i te pakeha te tino wini o roto o te whenua, ko te tangata Maori ka noho rawa kore noa iho, ko tetahi whenua kei Nepia ko Heretaunga te ingoa i riro noa mo nga moni £15,000 ko te utu o taua whenua inaianei e tae ana ki te £400.000, me titiro tatou ki Pouawa me Kaiti i retia nei e nga tangata Maori mo nga moni £250 mo te tau a kua hokona atu nei e te pakeha te riihi mo nga moni £15,000, ehara au i mea me riro i nga Maori anake te whairawa tanga o te whenua, engari e mea ana au tena ano nga whakahaere e whai rawa ai nga Maori me nga pakeha hoki ki runga ki te whenua, ko Whataupoko i retia i te tuatahi i muri ka timata te hoko hoko a nga tangata i tona hea i tona hea hei wha karite i tona hia hia ki te moni ranei ki te tahi atu mea ranei, a riro ana i a te Rire nga hea 30 o roto o taua whenua, ko Wi Pere ko Riparata me etahi taangata rin rua nga mea kihai i hoko, no toku taenga mai ki Turanga ka korero maua ko Wi Pere a ka hokona e mana taua Poraka i a Paaka a riro atu ana i a ia nga moni £47,500 a e mohio ana au era e toe mai ki nga Maori nga moni £60,000 in a rite atu ai nga moni ma Paaka, titiro ia nei koutou ko roto ko nga mahinga te puta ai te tino rawa o te whenua.

Na ko Paremata me Mangaheia No. 1, 28,000 eka o enei whenua i tika tonu te mahinga, no nga Maori tonu te he, kati ko tenei kua mea au ki nga tangata kia hokona te take o Mawhi ki aua whenua kia riro ma tatou e whakahaere nga rawa nui o roto o aua whenua a e mohio ana au ko reira puta ai ki te £3000 ki te £4000 ranei te whairawatanga o ana whenua i ia tau i ia tau.

E taura ana hoki au i enei mahinga mo nga whenua hoki i a te Rire, e penei ana hoki te alma o te rironga mai o ena, kua whakahautia e au nga whakawa i roto i te Hupirimi Kooti a kua puta aku panui i roto i nga nupepa mehemea ki te hoko tetahi pakeha i aua whenua ka whai tonu nga Maori ki a ratou, ko etahi tangata i hopo-hopo, ko etahi i hoko, a ko aua tangata i hoko kei te haere mai kia an i ia ra kia tahuri atu au ki te whakariterite pai ara kia whakahokia mai tetahi wahi o te whenua. Kia whakapumautia atu ki a ratou tetahi wahi.

I roto i enei whakahaere ka hoki tonu mai etahi wahi rahi o aua whenua ki nga Maori.

Mehemea kaore taku Tari i tu ki Turanga kua riro oti atu enei whenua.

Kati kua oti nei i a au te whakamarama kia koutou aku huarahi mahinga i nga whenua Maori na heoi te mea e toe ana ko te whakaae ko te whakakore ranci a koutou.

Ko nga hoko, riihi ranci i mahia tika tia e kore e taea te aha, engari ko nga whenua i riro i runga i nga hoko ki te Waipiro, he mea tinihanga ranei ka whaia tanga ka whakahokia mai e au.

Ko nga wahi rahui mo nga Maori i kiia i roto i nga riihi, hoko ranci, kia kapea a kahore ano kia meatia ka whaia tanga e au kia whakatutukitia ki te kore ka wahia e au nga riihi.

E mea ana au he mea tika kia tiroirohia te taha ki nga kura mo o koutou Tamariki kia wehea etahi wahi whenua hei oranga mo nga Kura ma konei anake hoki e rite ai a koutou Tamariki ki te pakeha te Matauranga.

Ka whakamtua e au aku korero inaianei engari me tahuri koutou ki te whi-riwhiri i aku korero nei a ka whai whaka-hoki pea etahi o Koutou ka pataitai ranci ki au i etahi patai.

Ka mutu i konei te whai korero a te Kiihi a ka whakaritea ko te 7 o nga haora o te ahi ahi hei taima hui ano kia whaka-rongo a Te Riihi ki nga kupu whaka hoki a nga Tangata.

Ko te Whatahoro te kai whakamaori i nga korero a te Riihi a nui atu te pai me te marama o tana whakamaoritanga.

I te whitu o nga haora o te ahi ahi ka hui ano te hui, ko te whakahoki a nga tino Tangata o taua hui he mihi ki nga wha-kaariaringa katoa a te Riihi he whakaae hoki kia tukua o ratou whenua ki a te Riihi raua ko Wi Pere pupuri ai whaka-haere ai, me te whakarite hoki i tetahi komiti i roto i a ratou hei hoa mo raua.

I te ata o te ratapu ka haere a Te Riihi ratou ko nga kai whakataki ki te mataki i te kokoru i Opoutama a he nui te mihi a te Riihi ki taua wahi hei tunga Kaipuke, me tana ki hoki nei ake ka mahia hei pera.

KO NGA korero a Weepu te Etita o te nupepa tuatahi o Turanga mo runga i nga kupu korero o roto o te whaikorero a Te Riihi ki te hui pakeha i hui ki Turanganui i te mane te 10 o nga ra o Pepuere, 1879.

Ki te ngakau kore whaktouga a ki nga ngakau hoki e taungia ana e nga whakaaro pai me nga whakaaro maua-hara kore, ko nga korero a te Riihi ki te hui i Turanganui i te mane te 10 o Pepuere era e tau pai noa iho hei wha-kaariari ake i nga painga mo Turanga e noho ake nei, no te mea i ahu te allunga o ana korero ki runga ki nga take nunui katoa. Koia i kiia ai ko te whaikorero tino pai tenei kua whakapuakina ki Kiihi-pane. Ko te takotoronga haeretanga o nga korero he nui atu te pai a he whaka-arohanga na te ngakau ata whiriwhiri, a e ahu katoa ana ki runga ki nga pehea-tanga o te Takutai Rawhiti.

He nui to matou koa ki te whakarongo ki nga korero a te Riihi i ahu ki runga ki nga mea tino whakahaehae o Takiwa ara ko nga raru raru [unclear: wh] koia nei hoki te mea whakakore atu tipu o te whairawatanga.

Ko nga korero a te Riihi i haere [unclear: mag] runga i te marama me te pai noa [unclear: i] ahakoa ko na tino hoa riri e kore [unclear: a] ahei te whakaha te whakatonga atu [unclear: run] ki nga huarahi a te Riihi hei [unclear: wew] nga whiwhi kua taweka ki nga [unclear: ka] nga Pakeha e noho ana ki enei [unclear: wah] te mea kei te haere i nga huarahi [unclear: ma] me nga huarahi ngakau tika.

Ki a au nei he mea tika rawa whakaarohia paitia atu te tangata e [unclear: h] mai ana me ana tikanga [unclear: whakao] wawe tonu i ia mate i ia mate me [unclear: t] tonu hoki a ia ko runga tonu i te [unclear: o] o ana mahi te mohiotia ai tona tika he ranei.

He tanguta ia a ngakau nui ana.

He Roia ano hoki ia a kore ia e ki waho o nga rohe tika haere ai. te whakamanawa ake ano a ia ki mahi kei tona aroaro e takoto ana ma konei hoki te kahanga e oti ai.

E kite atn ana a Te Riihi he [unclear: nui] painga e tau ki runga ki te [unclear: Tak] Rawhiti, ki Turanga ano hoki, [unclear: e] ake nei, na konei hoki tona [unclear: kahang] runga ki ana whakahaere, ahakoa whakararuraru katoa, a e mihi atu matou ki a ia mona i tohe tonu.

Mehemea ehara ia i te tangata [unclear: via] kaaro nui, mehemea ehara ia i te [unclear: tan] kua waia ki nga mahi kaha mahi, [unclear: punga] mata me etahi atu mahi a te tangata iho, kua kore ia e kaha ki te [unclear: whakat] i enei mahi, kua whakamutua [unclear: n] ranei i waenganui, na kaore a te [unclear: R] penei heoi tana he ti tiro whakamua [unclear: k] ko tona pakihwi ki te wiira o te [unclear: huo] hapai ai, na ko matou ko nga mea [unclear: tei] kore ka noho ki raro karanga ai [unclear: ki] atua.

E mea ana hoki a te Riihi e rawa e tau he rangi marie ki [unclear: runga] tenei Takiwa i te mea kahore [unclear: ani] marama nga take o nga whenua, [unclear: ko] moni e hiahiatia ana kia [unclear: whaka] ki konei kei te panaia atu e [unclear: nga] raru whenua, ki te penei tonu te re rawa e tau pai nga Iwi erua ki [unclear: ga] ki te whenua noho ai.

Ko whea rawa o enei korero katoa [unclear: a] te whakaha e nga tino hoa riri o te [unclear: hi].

Otira tena ano etahi tangata e whakaae [unclear: a] noa ana ki enei korero katoa [unclear: magri] ko a ratou mahi kei te harere [unclear: eka], a ratou mahi ki nga Maori kei te [unclear: re] whakararuraru i nga mahi pai mo [unclear: ei] motu.

Ka rokohia e te Riihi e noho ana i [unclear: to] te pouri ka mea mai ia, hoake kia [unclear: tu] e au te maramatanga ki a koutou, [unclear: ti] he tangata taware ranei a ia, he tino [unclear: i] whakaora ranei ia i te Takiwa nei, [unclear: hio] ko roto tonu i ana mahr te kite ai.

E mea ana a te Riihi, ahakoa whaka-[unclear: na] atu te tiro-tiro i nga raruraru nei aha te pai ki a wai o tena, ko wai [unclear: oti] whakaha i te tika o tenei, kei te [unclear: io] tonu hoki nga pakeha katoa e [unclear: ho] ana ki Turanga na konei i whaka-[unclear: a] i whakaepa te kore painga o Turanga [unclear: a] nga mahinga kino o nga whenua [unclear: ori.]

Heoi ra e kore e tika kia aruarutia tangata haeremai me nga tikanga kaoraora i nga matenga kua mate i [unclear: ga] i nga whakahaere kino kua akona nei.

Na, he pehea ta te Riihi e mea nei, [unclear: a] enei, kia hurihia nga whakahaere o [unclear: a] whenua ki etahi kai tiaki me tetahi [unclear: iti.] ma taua komiti e kimi nga hua-[unclear: hai] mahi o ia poraka whenua a

ka noho a ratou tahi me nga kai tiaki nga tino [unclear: anga] whakahaere, ka haere tonu i [unclear: ga] i nga ritenga whakangawari nga [unclear: anga] ki nga kai reti, me te tino hoko [unclear: i] etahi wahi o nga whenua kia whai [unclear: nga] tuturu ai ratou.

Mehemea i haere mai a te Riihi me te [unclear: akahau] ki nga Maori kia hoko tonu [unclear: i] o ratou whenua katoa mehemea [unclear: nei] i te mea a ia ki etahi whenua mo-ina mona tonu, pena me etahi atu e [unclear: a] nei, ena ano e tau te whakatonga runga ki a ia me te riro tonu atu ana [unclear: rero] pai mo runga i nga painga mo [unclear: i] Takiwa i te hau te pupuhi atu.

Otira i runga i te ki tenga atu i nga ritenga whakakotahi a te Riihi me nga tikanga e meatia ana kia rite tahi ai te painga ki runga ki nga taha erua e kore e taea e te ngakau tika te mea he hoa kino ia, engari he hoa pai rawa ia no tenei Takiwa, a mehemea e kimi ana tatou i nga take i penei ai te ki, me titiro tatou ki nga mahi kua mahia. Kua whai hua tenei rakau, inahoki a Maraetaha a Pakowhai me Whataupoko, ko nga raru raru nana i whakarua te pipihitanga o te wahi o Whataupoko e tata ana ki te taone nei kua pai, nei ake ka hangaia te Pereti a ko reira puare ai taua whenua nui, ataahua, hei taunga iho mo te tini noa atu o te pakeha.

E kore koa a te Riihi e koa koa ki enei mahinga Katoa.

Ehara i te mea kei Turanga nei anake e mahia ana enei mahi, kua whai po-whiri nga Iwi o ia wahi o ia wahi o te motu nei kia te Riihi kia haere atu hei hoa mahi mo ratou. Otira e kore a te Riihi e neke wawe atu i tenei Takutai i te korenga ano kahore i tuturu te ahua pai haere o nga mahi o konei.

E tika ana te ki a te Riihi he malli taumaha rawa te mahi kuautaina e ia ki runga ki a ia, a koia ano i mea ai a ia e kore e tika kia whakararururutia, engari me tuara nga pakeha katoa e noho tuturu ana i ana mahi.

Ko matou e mea ana, hoatu kaua e peka whakakatau ranei whakamani ranei, ma te mahinga o nga mahi e whakaea nga kupu whakaariari, a ko te mea kia whakakikitia to tatou Takiwa nei ki te tini pakeha me te hoki mai hoki o nga moni nui i taha atu i era nga takiwa, hei reira tatou ka tino whakapai ai ki a te Riihi, a ka tukua iho ki nga uri te ingoa o te tino hoa tuturu o te Takutai Rawhiti me te Koroni Katoa.

HE korero enei na te Etita o te nupepa tuatahi o Turanga, he mea Kape i roto i te nupepa o te 20 o nga ra o Pepuere, 1879.

Ko nga korero o te mahinga o Te Kaiparo Poraka.

I tera putanga o te nupepa nei i whakaa-tungia ake te otinga o Te Kaiparo i nga Kai Tiaki—ara—i a Te Riihi raua ki Wi Pere te whakaoti, a e mahara ana matou ki te whaka-tauki tawhito—ma te rerenga o nga takakau e whakaatu te ahunga o te hau."

E whakaatu ana matou ki nga tangata e tauhou ana ki te takotoranga me te ahua o enei whenua, ko taua poraka whenua e tata ana ki te whakawhititanga i Wharaurangi, ko ona eka 431, he whenua pai rawa atu.

I te Karatitanga o tenei whenuaiwhakataua ki nga tangata 33, engari ko etahi o aua taangata kua mate i muri nei, i te tau 1869 ka riihitia kia te Rire mo nga moni reti etoru hereui mo te eka kotahi, i muri ake ano ka moketitia e etahi o nga taangata mo nga moni £600—a riro tonu atu nga moni reti o ia tau o ia tau hei whakautu i nga moni inata-reti o te moni mokete, ka nui haere ano te raru raru i runga i te nama a etahi taangata a ka timata te hoko hoko tonu atu i nga hea, ko etahi o nga hoko i tika ko etahi i he, ko etahi taangata kihai i hoko i takuri ki te hanga whare ki runga ki etahi wahi o te whenua.

I roto tonu taua whenua i enei raru raru e takoto ana ka hokona nei e nga kai tiaki i nga rawa a te Rire ki tetahi atu pakeha, ko nga eka i whakamautia e te Rire mo runga i ana hoko 208—me te riihi ano o te katoa o te whenua a taea tonutia te tau 1884, a riro aua na taua riihi i arai atu nga Maori i runga i te whenua i roto i nga tau erima e haere ake nei.

Ko wai koa e manawanui ki te hoko i tenei wheua me una tini raru raru.

Ko te whaitaketanga o te Rire i riro i a Paraehe Roia o Khipane, Kati inaianei kua pai katoa nga raru raru o taua whenua.

Ko te riihi me te mokete o taua whenua kua tino whakakorca atu, kua whakapumau-tia kia Paraehe nga eka 160, kua retia atu ki a Paraehe ano nga eka 90 mo nga tau kotahi te kau i runga i te moni reti £1—mo te eka' ko te toenga atu o te whenua kei te takoto pai ki runga ki nga Kai Tiaki mo nga tangata nona te whenua, a ena e puta te moni reti o taua whenua ki te £275 ana oti ai te tuku ki te reti, me te toe ano tetahi wahi hei nohoa nga mo nga tangata Maori na kua tino tau he painga ki nga tangata Maori i roto i tenei mahinga, me te tnturn hoki o nga ritenga mo te taha ki nga pakeha.

Ko nga painga e tau ana ki runga ki tenei Takiwa i runga i tenei mahinga, ko-ia nei, ko tetahi whenua pai e tata ana ki te taone a ko taua whenua i te takoto mangere ki runga ki te pakeha kotahi. na inaianei ka timata te hanga i te ahua o taua whenua kia pai rawa atu kia tino puta ake ai ona rawa ki nga tangata nona te whenua, ka hangaia nga whare me era atu mea papai ki runga ki taua whenua, me te tau hoki nga moni nunui ki runga ki taua whenua whakahaere ai, a me te ata tau o te painga ki runga ki tenei Takiwa katoa, a me te mea tonu ko te aonga ake tenei o te ra e timata ai te mutunga haeretanga o nga puhachae kua roa hacre nei ki waenganui i nga pakeha i nga Maori mo te taha ki nga whenua me ta tatou whaka-manawa kia te Riihi, nana hoki i pai ai nga raru raru o tenei whenua o Te Kai paro.

# The East Coast Settlement Bill

1880.

A Bill, having the above title, will be introduced into the House of Representatives when Parliament meets in May. It is a private Bill, dealing with very large private interests; but it will also affect very greatly the public well-being of the whole colony. I therefore venture to explain its meaning. I do so for the purpose of soliciting public scrutiny; and, I hope, for an expression of public opinion upon the merits of a scheme, which if carried out, will mark the point of a new departure in the question of dealing with Native Lands.

Between the Wairoa River and the East Cape, upon the East Coast of the North Island of New Zealand, lies a district of great fertility, possessing natural advantages, not exceeded in any part of the colony. The soil is rich and well watered, the climate genial, the means of access convenient. Along the course of the sea frontage of this region are at least three excellent natural harbours, at Mahia, Gisborne, and Tologa Bay. There, also, four or five large rivers find their outlet to the sea. In that wide area forming parts of Cook and Wairoa Counties, and comprising nearly two millions of acres of land, there are at present only some four or five thousand Europeans residing; nor until some change in the tenure of land takes place, is it probable that this number will be largely increased. This is not owing to natural circumstances, nor, as I have said, to a sterile soil. It is due to the complicated condition of landed tenure. The portion of the North Island contained within the limits above-mentioned is rich enough to support the whole present population of the colony. Perhaps one hundred and fifty thousand are owned by Europeans in fee simple. The title to portions of this land, however, is disputed by the Natives, or is so intermixed with land still belonging to them, owing to want of subdivision, that it is comparatively valueless. Perhaps five hundred thousand acres are owned by the Government in different blocks, but those lands are at the present for the most part useless, as roads and bridges are required to render them available for profitable human settlement. The remainder, upwards of thirteen hundred thousand acres, is Maori land, of which the greater part has passed the Native Lands Court under some act of the Assembly, and is now held by the Natives, not under their old tribal and hereditary custom, but from the Crown. That which is yet really Native land, and held as such, can easily be made to undergo the same process and thus become accessible for settlement. This one million three hundred thousand acres of New Zealand soil, in every way fit to support and enrich a numerous population, is now almost entirely a barren waste. It can, however, be settled without the expenditure of any public money, the bestowal of any public favor, or the granting of any monopoly.

Before explaining the plan of the proposed measure, it is necessary to shew the difficulties which now oppose the progress and development of the East Coast. Lands held by the Natives in that district under the Crown, are generally owned in large blocks and by very numerous bodies of proprietors. It is not unusual to find two, or even three hundred names in a title to a single estate. As a matter of course, among these are many married women and children. It is impossible that lands so held can be cut up for ordinary settlement, or small holdings. Even the preliminary step of surveying for sub-division would always be opposed by some of the Native owners; but if the lands were once "cut up" (which, however, is beyond possibility), then the expense and trouble of obtaining so many signatures from all parts of the country, and going through the long and expensive but necessary forms incidental to Native deeds, would amount to more than small pieces of the land were actually worth.

Moreover, very extensive areas of these lands are inalienable by reason of the provisions of the "Native Lands Act 1867," under which Act they passed through the Native Lands Court. They cannot be sold; they cannot be mortgaged; they cannot be leased for more than twenty-one years; neither can they be sub-divided until the expiration of any existing lease. Between Gisborne and Tologa Bay, a distance of more than thirty miles, nearly all the lands are in this position.

Through the whole district the individual blocks are, as a rule, very large. They run from one thousand to sixty thousand acres. Throughout this territory of such great extent, and inferior to no part of the Australasian Colonies, in those qualities and capabilities which attract the favorable notice of men, all growth is stayed, and all progress is paralysed. It is practically impossible to get a title to the land; and without some certainty of tenure, men will neither bestow their capital nor their labor upon the soil.

Titles are and must be imperfect, for—

- All the owners, as a rule, will not join in any one deed.
- In the ranks of the proprietors are generally to be found married women and children.
- It is impossible to cut up and sub-divide the blocks for settlement, and they are too large for individual holdings.

- Great areas of these lands cannot be sold either in the whole or in part, and these comprise some of the most valuable lands near Gisborne.

Before the East Coast can advance, such obstacles to progress must be removed. They are insurmountable.

The question at once arises—Is it possible to remove the obstacles and so throw open these lands for bona fide settlement on advantageous terms, without coercing the Native owners, and without casting upon them or the European settlers a pecuniary loss?

It is possible to do this, and also to do much more.

"The East Coast Settlement Bill," if it becomes law, will enable all Native owners of land in the district, including infants and married women, to sign for each block a deed of trust, vesting in trustees, chosen by the Native owners themselves, the whole property in the land conveyed. These trustees will be aided by a Committee, also chosen by the Maori owners of the lands to be affected; and these trustees and committees, like the directors and managers of a Joint Stock Company, will have full power, but subject to strict supervision and control, to deal with the subject matter of their trust: to cut up, to lease, to sell, to part, and to divide the lands.

It may be said—Some of the Natives will not agree to do this. What of them? The answer is not difficult—Let the shares of such Natives be set apart in the Native Land Court, and their own land given to them, under the existing laws which provide for the partition of Native lands, and still subject to present restrictions. But this, though a possible, is not a probable contingency. Generally the Native tribes, from Wairoa to Waiapu, have already consented to the plan, herein set forth, and it is at their request that the proposed Bill is being introduced. By the Bill it is proposed that committees shall have power to determine what share each hapu, each family, and if necessary each individual possesses in the common property.

Thus nearly all the difficulties would disappear, and the land could be "cut up," leased, sold, and conveyed as easily, and as cheaply as an estate held by any member of the community, under an ordinary Grant from the Crown. There still remain, however, the lands to the north-east of Gisborne, which the Act of 1867 will not permit to be sold. The Bill gives power to place such lands under trust also, and removes from them a restriction which now prevents their being dealt with.

The Native owners of these blocks, to a large extent, have consented to assign their lands to Trustees, and in truth have already in great part signed the necessary deeds. The Europeans who hold leases in this particular district (and under these restrictions,) are three in number. One holds in lease twenty-four thousand acres in Kaiti and Pouawa, another twenty-one thousand acres in Whangara, the third twenty-eight thousand acres in Paremata and Mangaheia, in all seventy-three thousand acres, running in a straight line from the postoffice, in Gisborne, for thirty-five miles to the north-east. Two of these have already agreed to terms for the surrender of their leases to the trustees; the third is willing to do so if Parliament gives the trustees the necessary powers. I have before said that these lands under restrictions as to sale, are among the most valuable upon the East Coast. On the south-west, when extended, they touch the town of Gisborne. Upon Kaiti, a part of Gisborne must be built, and upon the shore of that block also a breakwater will be erected. On the north-east Paremata and Mangaheia surround Tologa Bay and the Government township of Uawa. At the present, time only a few shepherds and a few sheep occupy this tract of country.

It is certain that there are now in the colony very large numbers of persons who are willing and able to take up good land on deferred payments, wherever that land may be. Many classes of the community are concerned in this desire. Both in the North and South there are young and active men, the sons of settlers, who, unable to procure land in the immediate vicinity of their homes, would gladly secure freeholds for themselves elsewhere. In every town and district there are not a few to whom the obtaining a piece of good land on which to settle and work out a livelihood would be a boon. Working men's clubs, too, in every centre of population, would gladly co-operate to secure for many of their members such pieces of land. Hundreds of families already in the colony, who fought in justice to be considered, can, and will avail themselves of the advantages which this proposed measure will enable the Maori trustees to offer. I have received reliable information from Belfast, which tells me that if these lands are thrown open as the promoters of this Bill desire they should be, hundreds of farmers from the North of Ireland, men of good character, of great energy, and of substantial means are willing to emigrate and make homes upon the Maori lands of the East Coast. I am also informed that a similar desire has been expressed by many of the same class around Edinburgh and Glasgow, while I hear of repeated enquiries from farmers in Lincolnshire, Gloucestershire, Somerset, and Devon.

The subject matter of the Bill may be viewed in two aspects; one as it affects the Maoris, and the other as it may affect Europeans who wish to avail themselves of the facilities offered for the acquisition of Native lands.

As affecting the Maori owners, the trustees will have—

Firstly, to select such lands in each block as may be necessary and convenient for the dwelling places and cultivations of the different hapu and families interested in the particular property.

Secondly, to make such reserves as may be deemed advisable for schools and charitable or other like

purposes; for roads, for townships, and for recreation and pleasure; and

Thirdly, to divide the nett proceeds arising from each block in the fairest and justest manner possible, subject to the general charges arising from costs of schools, hostelryes, building and repair of houses, fencing, etc., etc.

As affecting Europeans, the objects to be accomplished are—

- To cut up the lands for lease and sale in suitable areas and positions.
- To offer these lands for sale or lease upon such terms as to classification, price, times of payment, amount of interest or rent, and otherwise, upon such conditions as may attract settlers by their liberal nature, and yet yield a reasonable revenue to the native proprietors and vendors. It is easy to perceive that the trustees will be able to offer the land on very easy and liberal terms.
- To devote a reasonable and proper portion of the returns from the lands to the prosecution of useful works—*i.e.* harbours, roads, and bridges. This Bill provides for works of this kind to be constructed.
- To choose suitable sites for special settlements for farmers and others from the colony and from the United Kingdom.

These, briefly, are the leading objects of the "East Coast Settlement Bill."

In the proposed measure, power is asked to borrow money upon the security of the lands, or special portions thereof, always excluding reserves, for the purposes following:—

- To pay off mortgages and encumbrances now existing.
- To pay all debts due by the Maori owners of these lands.
- To construct necessary or useful public works.

The trustees are to be incorporated, and though possessing large powers, are placed under efficient control; all their transactions are to be patent and open to those concerned; and provision is made for the audit of their books and accounts.

It is not possible in a short paper such as this, to point out all the advantages which will result to individuals and to the community from the successful accomplishment of the scheme proposed.

To those Europeans already settled upon the East Coast it means the realisation of hopes which have buoyed them up through years of war, toil, and privation. To the district it means a speedy advance in prosperity, while to the colony it means an accession to population and to wealth.

If these proposals are given effect to by act of the Legislature, it is confidently believed that the beginning of the end of Native difficulty will have been discovered. Nearly all Native troubles have arisen in connection with the possession and the disposal of Native lands. To a law so easily understood, and arriving at such worthy objects as those proposed, I believe all the tribes will give their assent.

By the Bill all interests are conserved; existing rights are respected. Every Native will be a share in the benefits arising from the occupation, the leasing, or the sale of his ancestral lands, Each individual of the Native race interested will feel that he has committed the care of his land to fit persons, and that he is safe.

Front Cover

**The Audiphone!**

Patented throughout the Civilized World.

Price.

*Conversational, plain, \$10*

*Conversational, ornamental, \$15, \$25, and \$50*

(According to Decoration.)

*Double Audiphone, \$15*

(For Deaf Mutes, enabling them to hear their own voice.)

Sent by Mail or Express to any Part of the World on Receipt of Price.

Address,

Rhodes & Mcclure, Methodist Church Block,

Chicago, Ill.

R. S. Rhodes.

J. B. Mcclure.

## Contents.

## The Audiphone,

# Good News for the Deaf.

*An Instrument that Enables Deaf Persons to Hear Ordinary Conversation Readily Through the Medium of the Teeth, and those Born Deaf and Dumb to Hear and Learn to Speak. How it is Done, Etc.*

The Audiphone is a new instrument made of a peculiar composition, possessing the property of gathering the faintest sounds (somewhat similar to a telephone diaphragm), and conveying them to the auditory nerve, through the medium of the teeth. *The external ear has nothing whatever to do in hearing with this wonderful instrument.*

It is made in the shape of a fan, and can be used as such, if desired. (See fig. 1, page 4.)

When adjusted for hearing, it is in suitable tension and the upper edge is pressed slightly against one or more of the upper teeth. (See figs. 2 and 3, pp. 4 and 5.)

Ordinary conversation can be heard with ease. In most cases deafness is not detected, it being generally supposed, as is the experience of the inventor, that the party deaf, is simply amusing himself with the fan.

The instrument also greatly facilitates conversation by softening the voice of the person using it, enabling—even in cases of mutes—the deaf party to hear his own words distinctly.

Those Born Deaf can Hear, and the Dumb are enabled to Learn to Speak.

Mutes, by using the Audiphone according to the directions on page 6, can hear their own voice and readily learn to speak.

## Directions for Use.

### Fig. 1. The Audiphone in its natural position; used as a fan.

Fig. 1 represents the natural position of the Audiphone, in which position it is carried (by gentlemen) by attaching it by means of a hook or button to the vest or inside of the coat, where it will be convenient for use and fully concealed. The shape and flexibility of the disc render the Audiphone an excellent fan.

### Fig. 2. The Audiphone in tension; the proper position for hearing.

Fig. 2 represents the Audiphone in tension and ready for hearing. It is put in this position by means of the silken cords which are attached to the disc, and which pass down as a single cord under the "wedge" in the handle. By opening the wedge (as seen in Fig. 3) the cord, which now moves freely, should be drawn down until the disc is brought to the proper tension (as seen in Fig. 2) when the wedge is closed and the instrument is held in the position required. Experience will regulate the exact tension needed for each person, and also the tension necessary for different voices, music, distant speaking, etc. In this respect the Audiphone is adjusted to suit sound as an opera glass is adjusted to suit distance.

### Fig. 3. The Audiphone properly adjusted to the upper teeth; ready for use. (Side view.)

Fig. 3 represents the position in which the Audiphone should be held for hearing. It should be held loosely in the hand and its upper edge should be placed in easy contact, by a slight pressure, against one or more of the upper teeth, that are the most convenient. In many instances the "eye teeth" give the best results, but a little practice will soon determine the best for hearing. *The lower teeth should not come in contact with the Audiphone*, nor should the Audiphone be pressed beyond the point of tension at which it has been adjusted, as seen in Fig. 2

## Note.

*A Word Concerning the Very Deaf—False Teeth—And those Using Ear Trumpets.*

Persons who have been *very* deaf for many years, and who are accustomed, wholly or in part, to interpret sound by the movement of the lips of the party speaking, may not readily distinguish the *words* of the speaker when *first* using the audiphone, though the *sound* of these words will be distinctly heard. In all such cases a little practice will be required to enable a deaf party to rely wholly upon sound. Such persons should request a

friend to read aloud while they (the listener) should carefully observe the words (as spoken) in a duplicate book or paper. "When this is properly done the deaf person will be surprised with what distinctness every word is heard by the use of the audiphone. In this way they *educate* themselves to articulate sounds, and soon learn to hear well without observing the movements of the lips.

Persons having false teeth, if they fit firmly, can, notwithstanding, use the Audiphone successfully.

It should be further noted, that persons using such instruments as ear trumpets, etc., which in all cases increase the deafness by concentrating an unnatural force and volume of sound upon the impaired organ, should at once lay aside all such devices on receiving the Audiphone. Such persons, thus accustomed to the *unnatural* sound, through the ear trumpet, will require some practice to again familiarize themselves with the natural sound of the human voice which, the Audiphone always conveys.

## To Learn to Speak.

Mutes will learn to speak by holding the Audiphone against the teeth, as above directed, and practice speaking while it is in this position.

A good exercise is for the mute, at first, to put one hand on the instructor's throat, watch the motion of his lips, while his other hand is on his own throat, the instructor meantime holding the Audiphone to the mute's teeth. The mute will *feel* the influence of the sound on his hand in the instructor's throat, imitate it in his own throat, will *hear* the speaker's voice on the Audiphone and will be aided in imitating the speaker by *seeing* his lips, and will also hear *his own voice on the Audiphone*, and readily learn to speak.

It is remarkable how rapidly they learn to distinguish words by sound. In a very short time, they have learned to repeat whole sentences spoken to them while blindfolded. It is believed that every mute child may hear and learn to speak by using the Audiphone.

It must be borne in mind, however, that a mute who has never heard has no conception of the meaning of the simplest words. Even though he be very intelligent and highly educated, read and write fluently, and interpret language readily by the motion of the speaker's lips, still he will not understand the most elementary *sound* until he is taught. He is familiar with visible, but knows nothing of articulate, language. At first, if you ask him to intimate whether or not he hears by means of the Audiphone, he may indicate that he *feels* a peculiar sensation that is new to him. It will not be long, however, until he realizes that what seemed to him *feeling* we call *sound*. Parents and teachers of mutes are, therefore, recommended to begin with the rudiments of language, as in teaching a child of two years.

Mutes enjoy music from the first. A piano or organ should be used daily in their early training, at first resting the handle of the Audiphone on the instrument. Start and stop the music at intervals, until they realize the difference. Then they may withdraw from the piano and gradually ac-custom themselves to the new sensation.

Faithful and patient practice, repeating over and over again the vowels and other simple sounds day after day, must be the ground-work of the mute's articulate education. To expect him to understand the first sounds that reach his brain is like asking the child in the A B C class to read Bacon or Shakspeare.

## The Double Audiphone.

This instrument consists of two similar and parallel discs, with the lower edges united, from which a handle extends. The upper edges are separated about a quarter of an inch by beads, and adjusted to the teeth by means of notches. The voice of the mute falls between the discs, and is carried back, thus enabling him to hear his own voice.

## Historical.

## Origin of the Audiphone.

(From the Chicago Tribune, August 26, 1879.)

*A Device for Removing the Misery of the Deaf—Discovery of an Entirely New Principle in Acoustics.*

The ingenuity of American inventors has displayed itself for many years in the patenting of instruments to help the hearing of different people. All these devices are but modifications of the ear-trumpet. They have all been attempts to remedy, through the ear, a defect existing within it, and many of them have undoubtedly rather worsened than bettered in its sense the constant use of the defective organ, and the throwing upon it of a



greater volume of sound than it is naturally accustomed to has a tendency to increase the disease which has affected the hearing.

An inventor has now come forward, however, who has struck out on a new path; who has discarded the ear as the means of hearing, and putting on one side all those ear- trumpets, large and small, which are bothersome to carry around, and which really are only available when a speaker talks directly into them, and which are practically useless if listening at a public meeting, theatre, or an opera, and has utilized the mouth—or, to speak more directly, the teeth—as a means of making the deaf hear. It is the application of a long-known principle, but none the less- ingenious, and none the less useful for that. The inventor is a Chicagoan—Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, the senior partner of the publishing firm of Rhodes & McClure. He has been deaf for nearly twenty years. After going through, with the usual routine of ear-trumpets, and all that sort of nonsense, and getting thoroughly disgusted with it, he happened one day to hold a watch between his teeth, and noticed that he could distinctly hear its ticking, though, when he held it to his ear no sound was audible. This set him to thinking that possibly he might be able to invent some device by which the sounds of the human voice could be transmitted to the auditory nerve, through the medium of the tube, just as the ticking of the watch had been. So he launched out upon a series of experiments, extending over many years, and costing not a little, which finally brought him to an assured success. He began by taking strips of wood, say eight by nine inches each way, and, by holding the upper end of the strip against his teeth—the strip being so placed that the voice of the person to whom he was speaking should strike upon it, and the vibrations imparted to it by the voice might be given to his teeth, and thus pass to the auditory nerve, he found that he was able to hear, but that the wood was too resonant. The sound thus obtained echoed too much. Those echoes run into one another so that the hearer hears a sound and nothing more. These experiments of wood were very thorough, extending over a hundred different kinds in as many different ways. Then he resorted to metal, trying tin, silver, steel, and brass, but with equally unsatisfactory results. He got the sound, but it was too hollow. He tried compositions of paper, and everything else imagination could suggest, until about a year ago he hit upon vulcanized rubber, and found that that article—which had not the resonance of many of the other things which he had tried—was the most satisfactory. Having convinced himself that that was the best medium for conveying sounds, he then had to go through another series of experiments to decide as to the best shape, and manner of using it. That problem he worked out to his satisfaction; and, having convinced himself of his success, applied for letters-patent, for what he calls an Audiphone, or a sound hearer.

## Audiphone in Chicago.

## Tests and Testimony.

### From the N. W. Christian Advocate.

(Organ Methodist Episcopal Church, Dated Sept. 10, 1879.)

*"A trial of the capabilities of the Audiphone was made before several journalists and other gentlemen September 4, on three persons, one of whom had never heard anything, while the two others were partially deaf. The mute was blindfolded and asked to respond to the sounds made with the use of the Audiphone, which he did in a manner to convince all present that he could hear an ordinary vocal tone. The Audiphone enables those who are partially deaf to hear with nearly or quite the perfection of those who are in complete possession of the sense."*

LATER.—(Same paper, November 26, 1879.) "We have noted the success, in many cases, of the fan-shaped, rubber 'Audiphone,' sold by Rhodes & McClure, of this city. We have seen and tested the Audiphone, to which we feel under obligations because alone of the magical and blessed boon it has proved to several loved personal friends. In some cases the relief has been instantaneous, magical, and, to the patients, overwhelming. We have seen friends burst into glad tears and sink quietly to the floor under the glad stroke of, gratitude and joy. We add for information: The instrument costs ten dollars: it is fan-shaped, and under that guise its use for relief is not always detected; it will succeed when the drum of the ear alone is damaged and the auditory nerve is healthy in part or wholly; the upper horizontal edge of the fan is applied to the upper teeth, and false teeth, if well fitted, do not defeat the instrument. The relief given to so many hundreds will secure undying gratitude to the inventor."

STILL LATER.—(Same paper, January 14, 1880.) "Rev. B. C. Dennis, pastor at Pre-emption, Ill., has, as we

noted, tried in vain to secure medical relief from deafness. He finally tried the 'Audiphone,' of which he says in a private note: 'The Audiphone is bringing me into a new world of sound. I thank God.' Some are aided by the instrument, while others are beyond help. The test is in the patient alone, not in the Audiphone. For their sakes alone, we advise all the deaf-in-part to try the experiment. No money, or mere request from the makers could gain this good word. "We speak it unsolicited for all sufferers. Dr. D. D. Whedon did not obtain relief thereby."

## **From the Hon. Joseph Medill.**

### **In the Chicago Tribune.**

(Date, August 20, 1879.)

"It is known that the editor of this paper has been deaf for a number of years, and that during that time he has used all the devices for improving his hearing that he could hear of or that were brought to him. None of them were, however, satisfactory. He has tried the Audiphone for some weeks, and finds that it not only improves his hearing

### **But Restores the Sense**

of hearing to him. Not merely does it answer when engaged in conversation with a person who is a foot, or a few feet, from him, but it answers perfectly at a concert. Each note of the musician and each tone of the singer come as clearly and distinctly as they did before the sense of hearing was impaired. Others have also tested this instrument, and have expressed themselves satisfied with its working."

## **From the Advance.**

(Organ Congregational Church, dated Sept. 11, 1879.)

"Hear, O ye deaf! The 'Audiphone' is the name of an instrument, recently invented by Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, of Chicago, which, it is believed, will work wonders for the relief of the deaf. Its construction is as simple almost as that of a Japanese fan, which in shape it resembles. It is a device by which one whose hearing is either wholly or partially lost, may hear—not through the ear—but through the *teeth*; that is, by means of vibrations communicated from the edge of the fan-shaped instrument to the teeth, and through the teeth, and thence to the auditory nerve. We have seen persons hear sounds in this way who never before knew what sound was. If we are not much mistaken, the world will yet build a monument to our friend Mr. Rhodes for the beneficence of his invention."

## **From the Interior.**

*"We have known for some time that Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, of the publishing firm of Rhodes & McClure (our former agent, Rev. J. B. McClure), was perfecting a new invention for making the deaf to hear. The invention is a method of conveying sound to the auditory nerve through the teeth, and it seems to be a success. Hon. Joseph Medill (editor of the Chicago Tribune), whose hearing is very deficient, is able, by its use, to hear ordinary conversation perfectly, and others bear similar testimony."*

LATER.—"I knew it was coming—something which would do for the hearing what spectacles do for the sight." So writes a friend in regard to the Audiphone. But the tests at Methodist Church Block show that the Audiphone does more than this. No spectacles will give a blind man sight, but the Audiphone does give the deaf man hearing.

## **Testimony from the Chicago Tribune.**

(Date Sept. 4, 1879.)

*The Audiphone—A Most Satisfactory Test.*

*"In the parlors of the First Methodist Church yesterday afternoon, Mr. R. S. Rhodes, the inventor of the audiphone, submitted his instrument to some severe and very interesting tests, in the presence of a number of people, including Mr. G. C. Tallerday, of the Medical Times, Dr. T. W. Brophy, Prof. Swing, Mr. L. M. Stone, and Mr. Gray, of the Interior.*

*Already The Tribune has contained a brief account of this wonderful invention, and the interest it has awakened among deaf people is but a revival of that over the announcement made a year or so ago by Edison when he declared himself the discoverer of an appliance by which the man or woman whose ears were utterly useless should be able to hear, not only ordinary conversation, but should be able to appreciate the pleasures*

of music. When Edison failed to fulfill his promises, people generally, and many medical men, too, scouted the idea of ever being able to reach the point which the inventor of the quadruplex telegraph thought he had reached; but Mr. Rhodes, a deaf man himself, when the telephonic diaphragm appeared, caught a suggestion from it, and the result was his audiphone.

*It is in shape like a square Japanese fan, and is made of a composition the major portion of which is vulcanite. At the back of this thing there is a cord, stretching from the upper edge to the handle. By means of this cord the instrument is tuned like a violin, and the tension is regulated according to the distance the sound has to travel. The upper edge of this audiphone is placed against the two upper teeth, and the vibrations received on its surface are conveyed by the medium of the teeth, and the nerves of the teeth to the acoustic nerves, and produce upon them an action similar to the action produced by sound upon the drum of the ear.*

*In addition to experiments made yesterday with people who were not completely devoid of hearing, two boys were made to hear the human voice for the first time in their lives. One, 17 years of age, was deaf and dumb, while the other was about 15, and, although he could speak, he was perfectly deaf. At first the sounds were strange to them, but after a little they signified that they could hear them distinctly, and understand perfectly that they were sounds. Of course, in order that they may comprehend what the meaning of the words spoken is they will have to be taught.*

*Medical men and others were charged with the experiments, they admired the simplicity of the invention, and there certainly now appears to be no earthly reason why the deaf should remain deaf."*

## Testimony from the Inter-Ocean.

(Date, Sept, 4, 1879.)

*News for the Deaf—Complete Success of the Audiphone—Simple yet Marvelous.*

*"Yesterday afternoon a number of interested gentlemen assembled in one of the parlors of the First Methodist Episcopal Church, on Clark Street, to gather some information relative to the audiphone. This little machine is the invention of Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, of the firm of Rhodes & McClure, and is intended to be used by those who have wholly or partially lost the sense of hearing.*

*The audiphone is very simple in construction, and without any mechanism. It is apparently a black polished india rubber or "vulcanite" fan, the leaf part being square with rounded corners, the material very flexible, so that the leaf can, if necessary, be bent double. One side has cords attached from the thin end or top of the flap of the fan to the handle. When these cords are drawn tight they curve down the flap or leaf of the audiphone, which is then fixed for use. It is used by the deaf by applying the thin edge of the fan to the four front teeth of the upper jaw.*

*There were several deaf mutes present, who were experimented upon. Mr. Charles Day was the first of these. Fixing the audiphone to his teeth he repeated quite audibly the monosyllabic sounds "boo, hoo," which Mr. Rhodes recited to him. To prove that he had not imitated the sounds from watching the illustrator's lips, Mr. Day was blindfolded and then also showed conclusively, by repeating two more sounds, that this was a bona-fide triumph of the audiphone. Without the apparatus Mr. Day could only be communicated with by the deaf-mute sign language. Mr. Day, who is an intelligent young fellow, is enthusiastic with regard to the audiphone. He has for the first time by its aid heard the sound of his own voice. To The Inter-Ocean reporter he stated, via the interpreter, that he was satisfied with the audiphone, and repeated the word "water" so as to be understood, which he had learned by means of these "new spectacles for the ears."*

*A gentleman who was very hard of hearing tested the audiphone and found it of great benefit. Several other experiments were made, and were in each case more, or less successful.*

*Among those who were in the audience were the Rev. Professor Swing, the Rev. L. M. Stone, and Dr. Gray, of the Interior; Dr. J. C. Tallerdar, of the Medical Times; Dr. Brophy, and representatives of The Inter-Ocean and other daily journals."*

## From the "Faderneslandet."

(Scandinavian Paper, Chicago, September, 1879, Translation.)

*[The editor of this journal voluntarily interviewed the parties mentioned herein concerning the Audiphone.]*

*"This instrument has already attracted a good deal of attention, and all agree that it is going to be of immense alue for the deaf. The most prominent papers have contained big treatises over the Audiphone, and we could furnish our readers with hundreds of undeniable testimonies concerning the excellences of the Audiphone, but space compels us to be satisfied in giving the following few:*

*The Hon. Jos. Medill, proprietor of the Chicago Tribune, has been deaf for a number of years, and during that time he has been using all devices known for improving his hearing. None of them were satisfactory, but*

now, when he has tried the Audiphone for some weeks, he finds that it not only improves his hearing but restores the sense of hearing to him.

The son of Mr. Jacob Kleinhaus, No. 91 Chicago Avenue, has a long time been suffering from deafness. He states, that at a visit at the company's office he could hear very perfectly through the Audiphone, and intends to purchase one.

Frank E. Gerber, No. [unclear: 17] Twentieth St., and Samuel F. Woods, No. 94 Washing too St., also witness the excellency of the instrument.

Charles F. Day. No. 755 [unclear: Nichigan Ayr]. deaf since 1864, can hear somewhat with the audiphone.

John Hollaed, deaf eight [unclear: years residing] at No. 791 Hinman St., can hear with [unclear: Audiphone].

Frank [unclear: Luttrell], residing in Cairo, ill., states the same.

Fred. Stiegel, from [unclear: Delavan,] Wis., deaf ana amno and attending school in Chicago, can hear with Audiphone. Thinks he cannot do without it.

Lars M. Larson, a Swede, residing in Springville, Wis., believes that he can learn to hear with the Audiphone.

Alexander Weisel, twenty years old, eighteen years deaf, can hear with Audiphone."

## From the "Die Deutsche Warte."

(German Paper, Chicago, Sept. 14, 1879. Translation.)

"Chicago once more ahead! for Richard S. Rhodes, of the publishing firm of Rhodes & McClure, of this city, who has been deaf for about twenty years, has succeeded in bringing to practical use the long-known theory of hearing by means of the bones of any part of the head, and for which the eye teeth, with their delicate nerve system, form the basis of operation. It is a well-known fact that Bee-thoven the great composer, used as a substitute for the ear a metallic rod which he held between the teeth, with the other end resting on the sounding board of his piano, by which means he was able to hear what his brain had produced, and thus reach perfection in music when has rarely been equaled.

We can say with assurance that those denied the pleasure of hearing, and who have a good set of teeth, will no longer be deaf. We have the best evidence of this in our friend Jos. Mill, the editor of the Chicago *Tribune*, who assures us, that nee he is in possession of the Audiphone he [unclear: does] not feel the loss of hearing to suco an extent as before, and that he hears with the Audiphone every word spoken or any other noise near him as good as those whose hearing is perfect, and can again enjoy the theater and other public amusements."

## Audiphone in New York.

### From the New York World.

(Date, Nov. 22, 1879.)

*The Deaf Made to Hear—Singular and Touching Results Attained by a Simple Little Invention.*

There has been a great deal of fun made over attempts to make the deaf people hear, and the wonderful Edison with his megaphone has done not a little to encourage the general amusement, but a man deaffer than Edison has shown that people born deaf or made deaf by disease can actually be made to hear to a greater or less extent, and so can be freed from many of the inconveniences formerly inseparable from their condition.

This fact was shown yesterday at the Audiphone parlors, No. 41 East Twenty-Second Street, where the Audiphone was exhibited by Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, of Chicago. Dr. George M. Beard, the well-known electrician, in introducing Mr. Rhodes said he had not thoroughly examined the instrument but believed it would prove more serviceable to those who were almost completely deaf than to those who were partially deaf, providing that the auditory nerve was not destroyed. While Dr. Beard was speaking Mr. Rhodes sat listening to him with an Audiphone against the teeth of his upper jaw, and when Dr. Beard had finished Mr. Rhodes rose, and in the high-pitched voice common to deaf people, said Dr. Beard had stated the case exactly. He himself had been deaf for twenty years, and had tried every form of ear trumpet without benefit. He had fallen into the habit of placing his watch between his teeth and listening to its ticking, and one day it suddenly occurred to him that he could hear articulate language in the same manner. He

## EXPERIMENTS WITH THE AUDIPHONE ON A CLASS OF DEAF MUTES IN NEW YORK CITY, Nov. 21, 1879. (From Frank Leslie's Illustrated

## Paper.)

then began experiments to find a proper medium for conducting sounds to the ear through the teeth, and after two years perfected the Audiphone, which he has since used. Mr. Rhodes then exhibited the Audiphone and explained the manner of its use.

The interesting part of the exhibition was the introduction of a class of deaf mutes from the Washington Heights Asylum. This class included two young ladies, a young girl, two young men and two boys.

One of the two young ladies adjusted the Audiphone with feminine intuition, and as she had been deaf since the age of two years, Mr. Rhodes attempted with her the experience between two sounds. He pronounced the letters "A" and "O," at the same time making the corresponding deaf mute signs, and after a moment he blind-folded the young lady. Then he pronounced the same letters, varying their order, and each time the young lady raised her finger and made the deaf mute sign of the letter which had been spoken to her. Then chords were played on a piano and on an organ while the young lady held the Audiphone in her mouth, and it was shown that she could hear the sounds perfectly.

The experiment with the other young lady of the class was very touching. She had been born deaf, and she showed the greatest eagerness when she was given an Audiphone and promised that she should hear. The experiments made with the other young lady of the class were repeated successfully with her, and she was then asked if she had ever heard her own voice. She answered in the negative, and she was instructed by means of signs and by placing her hand on Mr. Rhodes' throat so as to feel the vibrations of the vocal chords how to produce sound. Then she was given a double Audiphone—one in which there are two discs between which the voice is thrown—and she endeavored to make a sound. At first she was unsuccessful, but on the second attempt she made a long, wailing sound which was in strange contrast with the brightness of her face. Her face flushed as she sank into her seat and pulled her veil over her face. The instructor asked her if she had heard her voice, and she answered that she had. She could describe the effect it had upon her only by saying it was "a curious sensation."

Another interesting case was that of a young man who lost his hearing at the age of two years, and who had lost both of his arms by being run over by a railroad car. In spite of his deformity he was able to make himself understood by peculiar movements of the stumps of his arms, and one of the deaf mute young ladies held an Audiphone against his teeth while experiments were made with him. Like the others, the young man was able to hear spoken words and music by means of the Audiphone, although everything was simply a "rumble" to him as to the others. An ingenious test of the relative—and so to speak articulate—powers of hearing of the class was made by Miss Belle Cole, who sang an echo song in which the tones run from very soft to very loud. The deaf mutes were instructed to raise or lower their hands as the sound was more or less intense to them, and it was interesting to watch them as they stood grouped around the piano, upright and rigid, waiting to catch the sound. Then as Miss Cole sang the hands raised and fell, now slowly, now quickly, until when Miss Cole struck a high note the hand of the young lady who had never before heard her voice shot far above her head.

After this song the audience sang, "Nearer, My God, to Thee," and the deaf mutes, who presented a curious sight as they stood facing the people with the Audiphones in their mouths, seemed to enjoy the singing heartily.

## New York Correspondence.

### Wonders of the Audiphone.

*Interesting Experiments in New York—The Deaf Made to Hear—Sensations of a Young Lady Who Heard Her Voice for the First Time.*

(Special Correspondence of the *Inter-Ocean*)

NEW YORK, November 26.—An interesting exhibition of the Audiphone was given in this city last Friday afternoon, under the auspices of the inventor, Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, of Chicago, in the handsome parlors rented by Caswell & Hazard, who have taken the agency for this country.

The audience was a very stylish one, and beside a number of society people, who are scientific to a fashionable extent, included a number of notabilities, the most interesting of whom was the honored old man, Peter Cooper, who entered the room with the inevitable air-cushion in hand, and installed in a large easy chair, with a number of charming young women hovering about, anxious to contribute to his comfort, sat seeming unconcerned of the attention he attracted.

Never was there a man upon whose face and bearing, riches and power had left so little impress. With his kindly benevolent face, wrinkled with age, stamped with thought, and framed in white hair, long and a little wavy; his gentle, considerate manners and quiet thankfulness, not pride in his green old age, make an impression on the mind not easily, effaced. As he came through the door he was met by Henry Bergh, whose

giant height and strong, resolute face, render him conspicuous anywhere.

The friends of mankind and animal kind shook hands and beamed at each other. They met on ground of mutual admiration, and both alike devote their time and their wealth to doing the work that seems to them most needed.

Dr. George M. Beard, the scientist, keen-eyed, keen-eared, keen-nosed, was there, ready to detect fault or flaw at a second's notice; Frank B. Carpenter, the artist, who, since the Beecher trial, has been called "the man with the dark, mysterious eyes," sat looking on with interest, and next to him was seated the father of the inventor, George A. Rhodes, a pleasant-faced old gentleman, who told me that he had just been visiting his live sisters, all old ladies, and living in Rhode Island.

Mr. Rhodes was introduced by Dr. Beard in a few well-chosen remarks, and he then gave a brief history of the invention, the years and thought he had given it, the experiments made with different woods, metals, and compositions, before he hit upon the carbonized rubber, which, cut in the shape of a Japanese fan and regulated by cords, is the wonderful instrument that makes the deaf hear, the dumb speak, and an exhibition of it a foretaste of the day of judgment.

Mr. Rhodes added that the principle of the invention was suggested to him by noticing the distinctness with which he could hear a watch held between his teeth tick, when applying it to his ear he heard nothing.

At the conclusion of his remarks the scholars of the Deaf and Dumb Institute were led out and the invention was more severely tested than it had ever been before.

One sweet-faced girl of sixteen, born deaf and dumb, was brought forward, and the instrument adjusted between two rows of as pearly teeth as can be found. Mr. Rhodes then called out, "A." Instantly a strange look—half fear, half delight—appeared on the girl's countenance, and, in response to a question, she answered with her nimble fingers that she heard, but did not know what, being unable to connect the sound with her figures of speech. This was explained, and the inventor called B. Again she assented; C, the same, and after being told once she really distinguished the letters, even blindfolded. She was then requested to articulate, that she might hear the sound of her own voice, which had never fallen upon her ear. At first she refused, saying, in her own language, she was afraid, not knowing what noise might come. Being gently encouraged, but with cheeks burning red with excitement, she at last opened her mouth, and the most pathetic wail, like of a soul in anguish, burst from her lips. Several of the audience were so affected that tears fell from their eyes; as to the girl, she turned white and shivered, saying, with her little hands:

*"Was that really I? Tell me the truth; did I make that strange noise?"*

When assured that she did, and could learn to speak like others, her joy was extreme.

Mr. Rhodes was warmly congratulated by the company, and Mr. Cooper spoke of his invention as a blessing and a godsend to the afflicted. Before dispersing refreshments were served, and, highly gratified with the exhibition, the audience dispersed. \* \* \*

CRESS.

## In the St. Joseph's Institute

"ST. JOSEPH'S INSTITUTE, "FORDHAM (near New York City), Dec. 4, 1879.

"On Tuesday, the 2d inst., the Audiphone was tested by a number of pupils of the institute with the following results:

"Cecilia Lynch, aged sixteen, is supposed to have been deaf from birth. It has, however, been remarked that she could hear very loud sounds and could sometimes distinguish her own name if spoken in a loud tone by a person quite close to her. She says also that she sometimes hears the strains of the organ in the chapel, but so far from deriving any pleasure from the music the confused sounds are very disagreeable to her. By the use of the Audiphone she not only heard distinctly but could repeat almost every word spoken to her. As she has been instructed in articulation and reads easily from the lips it was thought that this knowledge assisted her. One of the persons present then stood behind her and repeated several words, which she readily imitated, thus proving, beyond a doubt, the value of the Audiphone.

"Annie Toohey, aged ten years, became deaf at the age of three from spinal meningitis. It was supposed that her hearing was completely destroyed, but on applying the Audiphone to her teeth she heard and distinctly repeated after Mr. Rhodes several of the letters of the alphabet. This little girl has begun to make considerable progress in articulation, but up to the day on which she tried the Audiphone the vowel E appeared to be an insurmountable difficulty to her; by the aid of the Audiphone she repeated it with perfect distinctness.

"Another little girl, Sarah Flemming, also heard the voice of Mr. Rhodes and others who spoke to her. As in

the preceding case, her deafness was caused by spinal meningitis, by which she was attacked when five years of age. By the aid of the Audiphone she was able to repeat several sounds. Several others tested the Audiphone with more or less success.

"MART B. MORGAN, Principal."

In a later letter (December 12) Miss Morgan states: "No doubt the Audiphone will be of great service to our pupils."

STILL LATER.—We are using them (the Audiphones) in the class-room, and have good reason to hope that they will be a great success. On Monday, which was the first day that we used them, one child heard and understood almost every word spoken during the school exercises. Thanking you most sincerely for your kindness, I am respectfully yours,

M. B. MORGAN.

## Audiphone in Philadelphia

### From the Philadelphia Times.

(Dale Dec. 9, 1879.)

*Making the Deaf Hear—Asylum Mutes Testing A Machine—Those Deaf from Birth and Those Whose Hearing Has Long Been Dead Enabled to Hear Their Own Voices Once More—A Veteran Editor's Wager.*

The experiment of making the deaf to hear and the mute to speak was tried yesterday in the Pennsylvania Institution for the Deaf and Dumb by Mr. R. S. Rhodes, of Chicago, who, having long experienced the privation of infirm auditory organs, invented a carbon disc, the testing of which as a conductor of sound was the object of yesterday's trial. Those who came to see how the new invention would work were welcomed by the superintendent, and accommodated with chairs in the ample parlors of the institution.

Among those present were E. Mortimer Lewis, David P. Brown and George P. Kimball. Not a few of the interested auditors were enabled to follow the proceedings by means of Audiphones, and all such cheerfully added their testimony to the great amelioration of what was in some cases almost total deafness of many years' standing. The apparatus for the experiments consisted of a grand piano and several Audiphones.

Mr. Rhodes, the inventor, remarked introductoryly that only those whose auditory nerve was not wholly dead could be benefited. Very few, however, even of those born deaf, are totally without sense of sound, hence nearly all of those educated in the asylums may be taught to speak, inasmuch as their dumbness is owing solely to their want of use of the organs of speech.

### A Deaf Girl Hears.

Miss Ida Brook was first experimented with. The superintendent said she could hear very loud sounds in favorable weather without mechanical assistance. Mr. Rhodes, standing where his lips could not be seen, spoke at the top of his voice twice, but Miss Brook did not betray the faintest sign of having heard. An Audiphone was adjusted for her, and similar sounds were heard by her, as her pleased ex-pression showed. She also heard single notes sounded on the piano up to ten feet distance, beyond which she seemed not to hear. Practiced on A and O she heard well enough to repeat them with reasonable accuracy, much of her facility having doubtless resulted from her cleverness of interpreting the movement of the lips. Mr. Rhodes covered his own face with an Audiphone, and Miss Brook was still able to repeat the sounds, and make the appropriate mute letter signs at the same time.

To illustrate the necessity of long practice to enable even those who hear to speak, Ellen McClurg was next called up. She is about 10 years old, and born of deaf mute parents. She never until lately heard any spoken words. She understood English no better than if she had been Chinese. Words she repeated accurately, but without any sign of understanding their significance. She was intelligent enough in the mute signs.

### Mayor Medill's Bet.

The great editor of the West—Medill, of *The Chicago Tribune*—was deaf. He made two promises, viz.: One to his wife, that he would attend church; the other that he would pay a thousand dollars to any ingenious individual that would let him drop his speaking trumpet. Since then Edison and all the inventors have been "going for Medill." It was at the convention of the Western Associated Press, held a few weeks ago, that Medill lost. Rhodes, who struck the idea, told him that he hadn't yet got all the patents. So Medill (who looks all the world like Ex-House of Correction Manager Thomas A. Barlow, with a speaking trumpet at his ear) went to the last convention keeping "mum;" and while the youngsters of the newspaper business, like Henry Watterson,

James B. McCullagh, of the *Globe-Democrat*, and Murat Halstead and Wash. B. McLean, were trying to arrange their situation of affairs, Medill was quietly holding a fan-like arrangement in his mouth, between his teeth, and when he got tired of holding it that way gave it to the fellows around him to fan themselves with. In the meantime Medill heard everything, and it is reported did great execution in freeing the newspaper press by the first of the year from telegraph monopoly—just by this Japanese fan. And the worst of it is, it is said Medill has to fulfill the second consideration that he promised his wife—that is, to go to church.

## From the Philadelphia Record.

(Date, Dec. 9, 1879.)

*The Deaf Hear—Experiments at the Deaf and Dumb Asylum—Deaf People Hear the Sound of Their Own Voices for the First Time in Many Years.*

In the parlors of the Deaf and Dumb Asylum was yesterday demonstrated the Audiphone, by which the deaf can hear. It is the invention of Mr. R. S. Rhodes, a man who is accounted "hard of hearing." Before experimenting, he explained that the Audiphone was used by placing the instrument against the upper teeth when addressed. He said that where the physical conditions of the persons using the Audiphone are the same the results are the same. Any person having the use of the auditory nerve is enabled to hear through the instrument, but those who have lost the power of this nerve through disease or sickness could not be made to hear.

While Mr. Rhodes was speaking Mr. Curly, of the institution was explaining his words by finger signs to some dozen of the inmates of the asylum who had been brought into the parlor.

Mr. Rhodes also read a letter from the principal of St. Joseph's Institute, at Fordham, in which the results of some experiments were given. It read that out of thirty inmates experimented upon, five, who were entirely deaf, could hear with the Audiphone, sixteen, who could slightly hear the sound of an organ, could hear distinctly, and nine, who barely discerned the sound of the voice, could hear perfectly.

G. B. Gimball explained that his sister, who had been very deaf for a long time, was enabled to hear through the Audiphone quite well. Last Sunday she visited church, and for the first time in seven years, was able to hear and appreciate the sermon.

Ida Brooks, a child of the institution, who had been deaf since birth, was then experimented upon. The Audiphone, which is a fan-shaped instrument, slightly curved by means of a string while in use, was placed against her upper teeth and she then heard a note of the piano at a distance of twelve feet. She was also able to repeat the sounds of letters after Mr. Rhodes. The double telephone was then placed between her teeth, and with it she was able to hear her own voice plainly.

Catherine Lewis, a young lady, also an inmate of the asylum, ordinarily was able to hear a very loud voice. With the Audiphone she could hear and repeat words uttered in a conversational key.

Samuel Davidson a young man of seventeen years, who had been deaf for over ten years, was the next object of attention. He had lost his hearing from disease, and was able only to hear a noise, but could not distinguish the difference in sound. The young man was handed a book to read, in which Mr. Rhodes read the same passage aloud. With the aid of the instrument the young man was able to follow the reading, and to distinguish each word.

Julia Fooley, a young lady who had the use of her voice, but who could not hear any sound, was the last one to try the instrument. Miss Fooley is an expert reader from the motion of the lips, and readily understood enough of questions to answer that she lost her hearing from brain fever eight years ago. Since that time she had never heard a sound, not even of her own voice. The Audiphone was placed in position in her mouth, and she distinctly heard a note struck upon the piano. With the use of the double instrument she read a few sentences from a book, and was able to distinguish what she said. In explanation the young lady said, while her eyes sparkled with pleasure: "I can hear myself, but it is inconvenient to speak with this in my mouth."

In order to test the power of the Audiphone thoroughly, Miss Fooley was requested to raise and lower her hand according to the high or low note struck on the piano. As she had had no training upon the piano before her sickness she could not distinguish a high key from a low one. But she lowered and raised her hand according to the volume of sound.

## Audiphone Among the Doctors.

From E. C. Shoemaker, M. D.



(Reading, Penn.)

The following is from Dr. Shoemaker's recent excellent volume, entitled "The Ear; Its Diseases and Injuries and Their Treatment," pages 359, 360, 361, 362

## **The Audiphone.**

The Audiphone is an instrument invented by Richard S. Rhodes, of Chicago. It is made of hard rubber, in the shape of a fan, and is intended to convey sounds to the auditory nerve through the medium of the teeth. The external ear has nothing whatever to do in hearing with the instrument, which is represented in Figs. 39, 40 and 41.

**Fig. 39.**

**Fig. 40.**

**Fig. 41.**

Much has been claimed by the public press for the merits of this instrument. As the number of people deprived of the function of hearing is very large, it is but natural that any promise of relief by any means obtainable by such afflicted, would receive their earnest attention and inquiries, and if found practical would be regarded by them as a great boon.

In order to test the merits of this instrument, I have put myself to quite considerable expense and inconvenience, and even delayed the issue of this book that I might give its readers correct and reliable information on the subject *from, my personal knowledge, obtained by a careful and impartial test of the instrument in a number of cases at my office.* These cases, it will be observed from their history, have been judiciously selected for this purpose, and the results are given as follows:

### **CASE I.**

*Deafness from Aural Catarrh, fifteen years' standing.*—Mrs. H, aged 73, gradually lost her hearing fifteen years ago from aural catarrh. Deaf to all sounds in right ear. Left ear deaf to tick of watch, but hears vibrations of tuning-fork close by. Tuning-fork heard equally well on both sides when placed on the teeth. Can hear and understand words when spoken loudly a few inches from left ear, but can not distinguish sounds at a distance. Hears ordinary conversation quite well with the aid of the Audiphone, even at a distance of 12 feet, notwithstanding she wears artificial teeth.

### **CASE II.**

*Deafness from Scarlet Fever, sixteen years' standing.*—W. M., aged 18, deaf from scarlet fever since two years of age, both drumheads entirely destroyed by chronic uppur-ation of the middle ear. Deaf to ordinary conversation. Hears and understands when loudly spoken to close by—Hears much better with the Audiphone. Hears fairly well with this instrument 20 feet or more away.

### **CASE III.**

*Deafness from Explosion of a Shell.* Mr. K., aged 47, resident of this city, lost his hearing from an explosion of a shell during an engagement in the late war. Both drumheads are completely destroyed. Is quite deaf to the voice and all ordinary sounds. Can distinguish words when spoken *very* loudly, within six inches of his ear. Tuning-fork not plainly heard on his head, but more plainly on his teeth. Told me he had not heard the sound of any bell since 1864, when he received the injury. This statement seemed incredible, yet I regarded him as a truthful man. I immediately obtained an ordinary sized dinner bell, and rang it as loudly as possible by the side of his head, but he said he could hear no sound, but that he could feel the vibrations. I then handed him one of Mr. R. S. Rhodes' Audiphones (A No. 702), and directed him how to use the same, placing myself some five feet away. I then rang the bell and gradually approached him, and when about three feet away he expressed great joy at hearing the natural ringing sound. He also said "I can hear you talk and understand first rate what you say when I have this instrument against my teeth. I then placed myself at a distance of twenty feet from him, and spoke in an ordinary tone of voice, asking him several questions, and he answered them all correctly. He then said "I find I need not talk so loud as I hear very plainly what I myself say." Regarding this test very thorough, as well as very satisfactory in its results, I then took a seat some five feet from him, and engaged in a conversation with him, and in a rather low tone of voice, but still he understood every word. Here I may

congratulate Mr. Rhodes on the success of his invention, and my patient on his good fortune in deriving such signal benefit from the same.

## **CASE IV.**

*Deaf-Mutism caused by Cerebro-Spinal Meningitis.*—J. S. aged 10, deaf since three years of age, from the effects of cerebro-spinal meningitis, and having been deprived of hearing so early in life is also dumb. On applying the tuning-fork on his head and teeth, he intimated he could hear. I then applied the Audiphone to his teeth, and he seemed to hear when spoken to. I then asked him to repeat the sound I made; being a bright boy, and taking much interest in his examination, I had no difficulty in getting him try to repeat any sound I made. Thinking it likely he only followed the motion of my lips or mouth, I had his eyes closed, and then repeated the sounds, which he as promptly endeavored to imitate, some even remarkably correct—leaving no doubt on my mind as to his hearing with the Audiphone.

## **Remarks.**

The above cases were not consecutive, but fairly represent the result in a number of cases examined. I feel it my duty to say that I have met with several cases in which the Audiphone did not give entire satisfactory results, but I think the failures may very readily be accounted for in each case. One is that of a lady aged 68, of catarrhal deafness, the failure was altogether owing to the looseness of her artificial teeth, and in others to various causes plainly perceptible.

I may also mention that in all cases examined, other instruments of ancient and recent invention, were also tested or tried, but in no instance save one was any found as effectual as the Audiphone. I refer to the case of the lady with the loose artificial teeth. In this case the ordinary conversation tube was found the only available aid.

## **Conclusion.**

Having carefully and impartially tested the merits of the Audiphone as a means for aiding the deaf to hear, it affords me very great pleasure to say, that in my opinion, it is the best instrument for this purpose known to the science of otology.

# **From the "Louisville (Ky.) Medical News."**

(Date, Dec. 27, 1879—Page 307.)

## **The Audiphone and Dentaphone.**

By W. Cheatham, M. D.

The Chicago Audiphone can be used at the opera or church or in general conversation with perfect comfort and success. I think the form (fan-shape) is quite an item, as it is easily carried, and can be used without exciting comment. The position of holding a fan in the mouth is quite a natural one.

The principle of the working of the Audiphone is very simple. The instrument only does good in cases of deafness the result of external and middle-ear diseases. Where the nerve is involved it is useless. The instrument is held between the teeth. The sound striking it causes certain vibrations, which are carried through the bones to the nerve of hearing. In case of the patient having artificial teeth, the conducting power is of course interfered with very much.

Patients before investing in an Audiphone should make certain tests, unless they have an instrument at hand to try. If on placing the handle of a tuning fork (which has been caused to vibrate by striking it on the knee) on the teeth, the ringing is heard distinctly, or with increased intensity; or if a watch held firmly between the teeth is heard to tick well, it is pretty certain that an Audiphone will be of some service to them. Patients in whom there is any prospect of improvement of hearing by treatment should not use an instrument except on special occasions.

Mrs. P., who is unable to hear only when the voice is considerably elevated and the mouth put close to the ear, purchased a Chicago Audiphone. The result was surprising. She can hear common conversation at some distance with it. Others I have tried with like result. My Audiphone cost \$10.50.

## **From the Marion Chronicle.**

(Dated Jan. 1, 1880.)

Some time ago Dr. "Webster became acquainted with a deaf and dumb boy who lives in North Marion, Indiana, and his attention being called to the recently-invented Audiphone, he determined to see what it would do for his young friend. The instrument was sent for and came to hand last Saturday. The doctor then sent for the boy to come to his house, and some very interesting experiments were had. The boy placed the instrument against his eye-teeth, and the doctor's daughter, Miss Euretta, commenced playing on the piano. The dazed and astonished look of the boy indicated that he had heard for the first time in his life, but did not know what it was. By means of writing he was informed that it was a sound he heard, and with this explanation the experiments proceeded. He laughed and cried and applied himself diligently to learn. In the course of a few hours he could distinguish the different pieces played by Euretta on the piano, and could understand a few words spoken by the doctor. We called at the doctor's residence on Monday evening to see how the boy was prospering, and was surprised and pleased to see the rapid progress he had made. We shall watch the case with great interest, and at an early day have more to say.

The Audiphone is made of vulcanized rubber, in the shape of a fan; in fact, it can be used as one, and none would have an idea that it was anything else. Two cords are drawn across the face so as to slightly curve it. The curve differs in each case, which can be found out only by trial. When the fan or instrument is ready, it is placed against the teeth and the sound waves act upon it as upon the ear drum. The instrument is so simple that when we say it is a hard rubber fan drawn into a curve by two silk cords, we have fully described it. That is all there is of it, but it is the most wonderful invention of the past year.

## Press Commendations.

*The Audiphone in Liverpool (England), and Elsewhere.*

### From the Liverpool Daily Post.

(Date, Nov. 12, 1879.)

THE AUDIPHONE.—In his address on the mechanical genius of the Americans, last Saturday, Mr. James gamuelson showed the model of a new instrument called the Audi-phon, which is destined to afford the means of hearing to deaf persons. It consists of a large thin plate of metal, which is held between the teeth, and acts as a sound board, transmitting sounds to the brain in cases where the ear is imperfect, and unable to perform its functions. Mr. Sam-uelson has now received one of the Audiphones from America, and tested it on Monday upon a number of gentlemen who are more or less hard of hearing, with very excellent results. After giving it a further trial, and fully satisfying himself of its efficiency, he will take means to enable all persons who are afflicted with deafness to witness its operation.

LATER.—(Same paper, December 2, 1879.) On Saturday afternoon last, there was held, in the Lecture Hall of the Free Library, a meeting in connection with the Liverpool Science and Art Classes, when the chairman of these classes, Mr. James Samuelson, exhibited an instrument designed as an aid to the deaf—the Audiphone—which he met with during his late visit to America. Mr. Councillor J. A. Picton presided, and there was a crowded audience, there being present several medical gentlemen and others interested in matters pertaining to deafness. Mr. Samuelson first gave a brief description of the structure of the several parts of the ear, and explained how, by the use of the Au- diphone, sonorous vibrations are gathered up and transmitted through the bones of the face and the skull to the auditory nerve. He next asked several gentlemen on the platform, including Dr. Nevins, to test the instrument, and they all pronounced it a great assistance to hearing. He then tested it on two pupils from the Deaf and Dumb Institution with satisfactory results. Afterwards about a score of persons of different ages and conditions and degrees of deafness came forward from among the audience, and made a trial of the instrument, and in nearly every case it was clearly shown that such sounds as those of the voice, of a bell, a whistle, or a musical instrument, could be heard by the aid of the Audiphone, where without it they were inaudible. The general result appeared to be that, provided the auditory nerve itself was in a healthy condition, the Audiphone was of great assistance to deaf persons. Mr. Samuelson mentioned that the inventor was a Mr. Rhodes, of Chicago, and, in answer to many inquiries from the audience, stated that the Audiphone was now being manufactured by Messrs. Rhodes & McClure, of Methodist Church Block, Chicago, and sold at a price of about ten dollars. The meeting, which was of a most interesting character throughout, concluded with a very hearty vote of thanks to Mr. Samuelson for calling attention to so useful an invention.

### From Frank Leslie's Illustrated Paper.

### *Information on the Education of Mutes.*

The Spanish monk Pedro de Conce, whose name appears in early history, 1570, was the first who undertook to educate the mute so as to make him useful to society. After him, in the seventeenth century, J. Pablo Bonet, a Spaniard, undertook to teach the mute the art of understanding written words, and explained their meaning by drawings and pictures. The mathematician Wallace began the education of mutes in England as early as 1680. In Holland, in the early part of the eighteenth century, Konrod Amman taught them by the motion of the lips, which he made them practice before a looking-glass. Soon after this period France established a school, through Abbe De l'Epper, to teach the mute by pantomime.

But now, in the latter part of the nineteenth century, R. S. Rhodes, of Chicago, has invented an instrument named the Audiphone, by which the deaf can hear, through the teeth, spoken words and musical sounds, and the mute that has unimpaired auditory nerve can hear his own voice.

This instrument, which has lately been exhibited in several institutions of this country, is destined to be a great boon to those afflicted with deafness.

Its success is established beyond peradventure. In fact it does more than is claimed by the inventor, as hundreds of testimonials coming from all parts of the world prove.

It not only makes the deaf hear, but by stimulating the natural organ of hearing it improves and strengthens its impaired condition. It is opening a new world for the deaf, and the name of R. S. Rhodes, in connection with the Audiphone, will pass into history and be spoken henceforth and forever along with those of Fulton and Franklin and Morse, and others.

## **From the Herald and Presbyter.**

(Cincinnati, Jan. 21, 1880.)

Mr. Richard S. Rhodes, of Chicago, the original inventor of the Audiphone, has recently visited this city and arranged with Mr. A. B. Merriain & Co., corner Fifth and Walnut, to represent and sell his device which enables deaf persons to hear as distinctly through the teeth as others do naturally.

The Audiphone, in appearance, is simply a rubber fen, and its use is so simple and natural that a deaf person may carry it anywhere and use it upon all occasions without attracting attention or exciting remark.

There can be no question that Mr. Rhodes' invention will prove an inestimable boon to thousands of persons who have heretofore been deprived of the priceless blessing of hearing.

We have only to add that Messrs. Rhodes & McClure have adopted a method of introducing their invention which is calculated to convince every one that they have the fullest confidence in its merits and permanent success. Several thousand of these Audiphones are already in use, and giving great satisfaction.

## **The Audiphone for Women.**

(From the Evening Wisconsin, Jan. 20, 1880.)

By the Editor, W. E. Cramer.

In using the Audiphone it has occurred to us that no invention could have been more fortunate, especially for a pretty woman afflicted with deafness.

She can not pleasantly use the snake auricular, because it frequently places her head in an ungraceful position, and if she happens to have large or ugly ears, it invites too much attention to that glaring defect.

It is well known that Pauline, the beautiful sister of Napoleon, had very large ears, and, at one time, a rude English lady almost drove the beautiful Pauline from the ball-room by exclaiming quite aloud: "Oh, what a monstrous ear!" This invited general attention to Pauline's large ears, and it annoyed her beyond measure.

If a woman has a sea-shell of an ear she can use the Smith auricular with some satisfaction. Yet it is generally disagreeable for her to use it at all. A woman with a natural desire to conceal her infirmities does not wish people to know that she is at all deaf, as that implies some deterioration of her charms.

Now, the Audiphone invented by Mr. Rhodes, of Chicago genius, does away with all this misery and trouble. The woman can jauntily place the edges of the Audiphone upon her front teeth, and, if these teeth be white and fair, and her lips rosy and luscious, the Audiphone unconsciously invites special attention to her charms in that regard.

If she has beautiful eyes she can flash them upon the person with whom she is speaking, with much better effect with the Audiphone upon her teeth, than if she had to bend her head in using the ordinary auricular.

So, we think that Mr. Rhodes has been fortunate in introducing an invention for the bright and handsome woman of our grand land, who may, in some degree, be afflicted with an infirmity of hearing, and then, so far from depreciating her charms by the effort to hear, she will appear even more interesting, for thousands of our fairest women keep a fan in their hand for the purpose of adroitly inviting observation to their beautiful teeth,

the fashion being to put one edge of the fan in the corner of the mouth, thus showing also the glowing radiance of their lips.

Now, in this nineteenth century, when so many efforts are made by the fair sex to beautify their forms and their faces, is it not most fortunate that a discovery has been made which takes away the edge of an infirmity and renders it possible that even a maiden who is touched with an infirmity of hearing may become a belle?

## From the Christian Intelligencer.

### The Audiphone.

A correspondent of the *Christian Intelligencer* writes: It may seem a small matter to speak of as an outcome of a great city's doings—but there is a room in New York where you may go to-day and sit and have a blessed revelation and thank God. One and another come in, bearing on their faces the peculiar lines which indicate the sadness and solicitude of deafness. They take into their hands what seems a curved fan, and rest it (as is the wont of those who fan themselves) against their lips, or rather seem to touch it gently to their teeth. Instantly a pleasing surprise pervades their countenance, and soon the sorrow lines smooth out of their brows and cheeks, not wholly from within but reflected from the speech and sounds about them. They hear! They are out of a long imprisonment, whose thick walls have shut from them the voices of men, or dulled them into a confused and distant murmur. One says (a young man), "I was receiving a large salary and saw a prosperous career before me, but I was forced to resign it all under the pressure of increasing deafness, and I have found myself strangely incapacitated for what I feel I could best do, and need to do for the sake of others as well as myself. And now I hear you all and could transact business with you as well as ever." Another says, "I went three times to church yesterday, as has been my wont, but I heard scarcely a word; but now I hear distinctly your ordinary tones." And the whole secret is in that little fan which each holds against his teeth. Are not the tailsmans of science working greater marvels than the babied genii, or the dreams of Arabian Nights? All this is but a faint prelude of a great sea of blessed sound, which is to surge in upon myriads of relived hearts when the Audiphone makes itself heard as it makes men to hear.

*"A man deaf as Edison has shown, by the Audiphone, that people born deaf or made deaf by disease, can actually be made to hear to a greater or less extent."*

—*Detroit Free Press*. Nov. 25, 1879.

*"It is valuable, and will materially help in the education of children like those at the Deaf and Dumb Asylum, and will doubtless prove an effective aid to the many people of impaired hearing. Its discovery therefore is a cause for congratulation, and its attractive appearance and convenience for use, so different from the old-fashioned ear trumpet, will serve to bring it largely into use."*

—*Hartford (Conn.) Courant*.

*"Deaf mutes were able to hear the music of the piano when at a considerable distance from the instrument."*

—*N. Y. Observer's Report of Private Exhibition*.

*"This wonderful invention promises to be one of great value."*

—*Illustrated N. Y. Christian Weekly*.

*"Tests were satisfactorily applied to several members of a class of deaf mutes who were present, and the pleasure at hearing sound evinced by one young girl was most interesting and touching. A new organ, or a new use for an organ, is discovered, if not created."*

—*From Jenny June's Letter in Baltimore American*. Dec. 1, 1879.

*"At last the deaf are made to hear. Failing to hear through the front door of the ear the Audiphone carries it to the back."*

—*Concord (N. H.) Daily Monitor*. Nov. 25.

*"The deaf-mutes were enabled to distinguish the difference between sounds, and enjoyed the singing of one of the ladies."*

—*New York Tribune's Report of Exhibition*. Nov. 22, 1879.

*"The Audiphone, for the deaf, is likely to supersede the ear trumpet altogether; is not at all objectionable to carry or to use, and enables thousands who never heard a sound in their lives to distinguish letters, words and music for the first time."*

—*Church Union*. November 29, 1879.

*"In this invention Mr. Rhodes has proved himself a benefactor."*

—*The Standard*. Sept 25, 1879.

*"The fact of hearing through the medium of the teeth has long been known, but it has remained for the inventor of the Audiphone to utilize this fact for the benefit of the afflicted."*

—*New York Star*. Nov. 22, 1879.

*"A class of deaf-mutes from the Washington Heights Asylum were present, and the tests with them were quite satisfactory. Some heard the notes of the piano for the first time."*

—*New York Evangelist's Report of New York Exhibition*. Nov. 27, 1879.

*"Seems to discount any of the instruments invented by Edison to aid the hearing."*

—*New Orleans Times*. Nov. 27, 1879.

*"The invention will have practical value."*

—*New York Herald*.

*"It is all the inventor claims it to be."*

*Evansville (Ind.) Journal*. Nov. 30, 1879.

*"The Trial was an eminent success."*

—*Boston Traveler*. Dec. 2, 1879.

*"Has proved a signal success."*

—*Albany (N. Y.) Press*.

*"Would be easily mistaken for a fan."*

—*Democrat and Chronicle*.

*"In many cases of deafness, where the auditory nerve is impaired, the Audiphone can be of no avail; but where, as is often the case, the defect is only in those parts of the ear by which vibrations are conveyed to the nerve from without, this invention will prove a great boon."*

—*Washington (D. C.) Post*. Oct. 27, 1879.

*"Will practically restore to speech and hearing a large class of afflicted persons."*

—*Toronto (Canada) Mail*. Dec. 5, 1879.

*"Great benefit to those partially deaf."*

—*Providence (R. I.) Journal*. Nov 6, 1879.

*"Earlier reports are fully borne out by later experiments."*

—*Denver Times*. December 6, 1879.

*"A new and ingenious device by which the deaf are enabled to hear through the medium of the teeth."*

—*New York Graphic*. Nov. 21, 1879.

*"One of the wonders of this day of telephones, phonographs and the like, is the Audiphone, invented by Richard S. Rhodes, of Chicago, which enables deaf people to hear with their teeth. People who have once heard, but have grown deaf, and thus know the meaning of sounds and can talk themselves, practically have perfect hearing restored by the use of the Audiphone."*

—*Springfield Republican*.

*"Had it in our possession not more than two minutes before we were satisfied that it was at least all that we anticipated, but have since found it to be much superior to anticipations. Besides, we find it to improve by use, also to improve our natural hearing, which is remarkable."*

—*Editor Germantown Telegraphy Philadelphia*, Nov. 26, 1879.

*"With a little practice the sounds thus received are interpreted the same as if they reached the nerves of hearing through the ear."*

—*Scientific American*.

## Personal Commendations.

(Extracts from Correspondence.)

### Letter to Hon. Joseph Medill, Editor "Chicago Tribune."

(From E. F. Test, Claim Agent C. P. R. R.)

Freight Auditor's Office, OMAHA, NEB.,

Sept. 21, 1879.

MY DEAR MR. MEDILL:

Instead of going to church this morning, I have come down to the office to thank you for your renewed thoughtfulness in sending me the pamphlet about the Audiphone. I sent to Mr. Rhodes for one after receiving your first notice, and got the conversational style. It answers the purpose admirably. It has created quite a

sensation among my friends. It was comical to see a number of them fanning themselves with it, under the impression that it was simply a fan, and then in a few moments to see their astonishment when they saw me hearing with it just as well as I ever did. All the physicians to whom I have shown it endorse it warmly.

Your sincere friend,

E. F. TEST.

## **From E. F. Test.**

(Claim Agent Union Pacific R. R. Co.)

UNION PACIFIC R. R. OFFICE, OMAHA, NEB.,

Sept. 19, 1879.

Messrs. RHODES & MCCLURE, Chicago, Ill.

The Audiphone came all right yesterday noon. It appears to answer the purpose admirably, and seems to have created quite a sensation among my friends. Now that I have it, I don't want to do without one for a day. I am astonished and delighted at the volume of sound the instrument can convey through the nerves. It seems to work on the principle of ventriloquism. I enclose my cheque No. 4: on the State Bank of Nebraska for \$10.00.

I am, respectfully yours,

E. F. TEST.

## **From Rt. Rev. R. li. Clarkson, D. D.,**

(Bishop of Nebraska, Omaha.)

"I am personally acquainted with Mr. Test of Omaha, and I can scarcely make him hear by shouting to him. If you make that man hear you do wonders."—*Bishop Clarkson's remark while purchasing an Audiphone in the Chicago office.*

## **From a Young Lady.**

(Concerning her Father.)

"My father, who has been deaf forty-six years, and who can only hear when you are near to him and speak very loudly, can hear an ordinary conversation by the help of the Audiphone."

CHICAGO,

Sept. 22, 1879.

## **From John Atkinson.**

(Sec., Treas., Supt., and Engineer Racine Gaslight Co., and builder of West Side Gas Works, Chicago.)

Office of Racine Gaslight Company, Racine, Wis.,

Sept. 19, 1879.

Messrs. Rhodes & McClure, Chicago, Ill.

*Gents:*—I have been deaf for thirty years, but can now hear distinctly with the Audiphone. I thank God that I now have something that will help my hearing, and that I can now enjoy, as well as others, some of the delights of this world's amusements.

Yours truly,

JOHN ATKINSON.

## From W. W. Evans.

GRANT LOCOMOTIVE WORKS, PATTERSON, N. J.,

Sept., 1879.

Messrs. RHODES & MCCLURE, Chicago, Ill.,

*Gents:*—Your Audiphone to hand. The lady (my sister) has tried it, and finds she can hear now an ordinary conversation, which she cannot do without it. I would not part with it for ten times its cost.

Very respectfully,

W. W. EVANS.

## From Henry Milnes, Esq.

(Resident of Cold Water, Mich.)

I have been a little deaf for over thirty years and very deaf for twenty years, and have not heard a sermon, lecture, or a tune on the piano for twenty years. I procured an Audiphone yesterday and can already hear quite well an ordinary conversation, and expect by a little practice to be able to hear sermons, music, etc., without much difficulty.

CHICAGO,

Sept. 24, 1879.

HENRY MILNES.

## S. H. Weller, D.D.,

*"The loss of hearing is a deprivation than which there is scarcely any other more serious. The extent to which this misfortune prevails can only be realized when we reflect that the deaf are to be found in numbers in every community. The man, therefore, who by any device, affords relief to this army of afflicted ones, not only deserves honorable mention as an inventor, but becomes a benefactor of his race. The "Audiphone," recently invented by Mr Rhodes, of the firm of Rhodes & McClure, gives good promise of meeting this case. The inventor himself, with whom it is difficult to converse at all, joins readily, with the use of this instrument, in ordinary conversation. I am satisfied, from ex-periments which I have witnessed, that, excepting instances in which the auditory nerve is fatally paralyzed, all the deaf may, by its help, be enabled to hear and intelligently converse. This invention employs an entirely new and hitherto unused medium of sound and hence the most convincing and gratifying results are obtained, where the natural organ of hearing is entirely destroyed. I should like to speak in terms of strong commendation of an invention which is certain to be widely used, and which is bound to play a prominent part in ministering to the comfort of the afflicted."*

S. H. WELLES,

Resident Minister, Chicago.

## From E. C. Ely.

OFFICE OF REYNOLDS & ELY, WHOLESALE PROVISION DEALERS, PEORIA, ILL.,



Oct. 4, 1879.

Messrs. RHODES & MCCLURE, Chicago, Ill.

*Gentlemen:*—The 'phone at hand, and on trial even more satisfactory than could be expected at first use. My wife and friends are delighted and enthusiastic over it. They are rejoiced that I can hear, and I am glad that it no longer requires an effort on their part to enable me to do so. I have sent the pamphlets to friends similarly afflicted, and would like five or six more for the same purpose.

Yours truly,

E. C. ELY.

## From Mrs. F. A. Lex.

"114 SOUTH TWENTY-FIRST STKEET, "PHILADELPHIA, PA.,

NOV. 15.

"MESSES. RHODES & MCCLURE:—The Audiphone arrived safely, and I hasten to assure you of its *perfect* success for *my* hearing. In ordinary conversation I cannot use it against the eye-teeth, as it makes the voices too loud, although the Audiphone is scarcely drawn. I entered into general conversation with perfect ease, last evening, for the first time for five or six years. A melodeon or piano I hear distinctly at great distances. Reading aloud is also easily heard. My family and friends are so rejoiced at my success, and regard the instrument in wonder. My physician is delighted with it, and thinks, as my deafness arose greatly from nervousness, that the Audiphone will stimulate the auditory nerve, and possibly benefit or restore my sense of hearing. The terrible strain being taken from my mind gives me such rest and spirits that I almost forget my deafness.

Yours very truly,

MRS. F. A. LEX,"

## From H. A. Barry.

"MESSES. RHODES & MCCLURE:—The Audiphone, per Adams' Express, arrived all right, and my wife is delighted with it. She has been to the theatre and other public entertainments, and for the first time in twelve years was she able to hear all that was said.

"H. A. BARRY, 26 Post Office Ave., Baltimore, Md." Dec. 9, 1879."

## From John B. Scott.

"I find that the more accustomed I become to the use of my Audiphone the better results do I obtain, and having been quite deaf for over thirty years I can assure you it is a great gratification to be able to attend any place where public speaking is going on and hear all that is uttered by the speakers—a pleasure that has been denied me all that time.

"Nov. 26, 1879.

"JOHN B. SCOTT,

New York."

## From Christopher Cooper.

(Chatsworth, Ill., Jan. 3, 1880.)

MESSES. RHODES & MCCLURE,

*Gentlemen:*—I received the Audiphone you sent me quite safe, and am pleased to tell you that I can hear remarkably well with it. Gave it a good trial last evening. My wife talked and read to me just as she would to a person that had their natural hearing, and I could hear every word distinctly. Could hear my children converse with each other, which I could not do without the Audiphone. My little boy said he felt almost sorry that I had got one, as I should be able to hear all he said now. I noticed that it is not necessary to apply the Audiphone to my teeth when the baby cries, unless I want to hear an extra loud yell, so now I may begin to think there is some advantage in being deaf, for if I want to hear anything I can do so, and if I do not want to hear a noise, I can shut off the sound of the Audiphone.

Yours, etc.,

CHRISTOPHER COOPER.

## From C. H. Pinkham, Jr.

BOSTON,

January 6, 1880.

MESSRS. RHODES & MCCLURE, Chicago, Ill.

*Gentlemen:*—The Audiphone is a success with my sister. She hears perfectly and is consequently overjoyed.

Success to you in your business. May you make ten million dollars.

Yours,

C. H. PINKHAM, Jr.

## From the Evening Wisconsin.

(Milwaukee, Oct. 1, 1879.)

The editor of this paper, Mr. W. E. Cramer, who is very deaf, after making some experiments with the Audiphone, says, in an editorial (we quote his exact words):

"He has come to the conclusion that the Audiphone is a very valuable invention. His deafness is of long standing and his hearing is very much impaired, yet, with the Audiphone he can hear persons speak at a distance, which would be utterly impossible without its use. He has tried it in the process of reading and he finds it very serviceable. The use of the Audiphone has the advantage that it can be applied without effort and that when a deaf person is disposed to be lazy he can hear, notwithstanding. With the old "snake auricular" this cannot be so for there is always a deal of labor in striving to keep the auricular in the ear."

LATER.—(Same paper, October 18, 1879.) "We have been continuing our experiments with the Audiphone, and we have come to the conclusion that it is a superior invention for ordinary conversation. The singularity of the Audiphone consists in this: that the ingenuity of man seems to have invented something by which a person of impaired hearing can hear without the use of his ears. The two upper teeth (eye teeth) of the mouth become, as it were, the ears, and so long as the edge of the Audiphone is upon those teeth, the articulations of the human voice are conducted with accuracy to the understanding."

STILL LATER.—(Same paper, Jan. 7, 1880.) "Mr. Rhodes, of Chicago, inventor of the Audiphone, accompanied by his sister, Miss Lena Rhodes, paid the *Wisconsin* office a pleasant visit this forenoon. Mr. Rhodes uses the Audiphone himself, and says its usefulness to him materially increases by use, and that he can hear with it an hundred per cent better now than when he first commenced to use it. He is constantly engaged in improving the Audiphone, and feels confident of yet making it of great use to the thousands of deaf and dumb who are now within asylums. Mr. Rhodes' personal appearance is so much in his favor that he would be observed almost anywhere. Phrenologically he possesses a head of genius, and he has certainly signalized himself by an invention which, the longer it is tested, will place him among the marked men of this extraordinary era of scientific progress in all that tends to the comfort and civilization of man."

## From Oscar P. Taylor.

WEBB CITY, ARK.,

January 10, 1880.

*Gentlemen:*—Audiphone is hand and may God bless you for your invention; can hear as well as any one.

Yours,

OSCAR P. TAYLOR.

## From Eliza J. Barret.

(279 Columbus Avenue, Boston, Mass., Jan. 13, 1880.)

MR. RICHARD S. RHODES,

*Dear Sir:*—Please accept my thanks for "Audiphone." I have delayed acknowledging its receipt until I could try it, and speak of its merits more intelligently. It is, indeed, a simple yet beautiful and valuable invention, and a great boon to those who, like myself, are afflicted with the loss and impairment of the sense of hearing.

Respectfully,

ELIZA J. BARRET.

## From Abbie R. Stevens.

"SALEM, MASS.,

Oct. 9, 1879.

*"Gents:*—*I hear ordinary conversation with ease, and it is a wonder to me every time I use it. Sounds that I have not heard for years and had quite forgotten came back distinctly, and the more I use it the better I like it."*

LATER.—(Dec. 13, 1879). "I attend church, hear perfectly six pews from the desk, *and cannot hear the minister's voice without the Audiphone.* I go to lectures and concerts, and, in short, am alive again and a part of the world. Sometimes I think my Audiphone is bewitched, it works so well."

The Audiphone operates with remarkable power in enabling the deaf to successfully hear the varying sounds and harmonies of music, whether produced by the voice or instruments. To such who have heretofore been denied the pleasure of hearing the "divine art," this invention will be of great advantage. So, also, is it invaluable as an aid to hear sermons, lectures, public speaking, etc.

The Audiphone is Patented throughout the civilized world.

Price:

(According to Decoration.)

The Audiphone will be sent to any address throughout the world, on receipt of price, by

Rhodes & McClure,

Agents for the World,

Audiphone Parlors, Adjacent to the Office.

No. 107 S. Clark Street.

# New and Popular Books Published by Rhodes & McClure,

R. S. Rhodes.

J. B. McClure

Methodist Church Block, Chicago.

Edison and His Inventions. 8vo., 178 pages, Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE.

This book contains the many interesting incidents, and all the essential facts, connected with the life of the great inventor, together with a full explanation of his principal inventions, including the phonograph, telephone, and electric light, which are explained by the aid of diagrams.—*Preface*.

A very readable book.—*The Standard*.

Full of valuable instruction.—*The Inter-Ocean*.

Authentic information that relates to the man and his work.—*Chicago Evening Journal*.

*Price, in Cloth, fine, 75 cents. Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Lincoln's Stories. 8vo., 192 pages. Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE.

J. B. McClure, who has become the most successful compiler of idle hour books in this country, has made another hit with a large collection of "Lincoln's Stories." Mr. McClure sells his books by the ten thousand. His compilations have decided merit. They are always of a pure, moral, and religious tone, and they hit the popular fancy.—*The Interior*.

*Price, in Cloth fine, 75 cents. Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Mistakes of Ingersoll (No. 1), as shown by Prof. Swing, W. H. Ryder, D.D., Brooke Herford, D.D., J. Monro Gibson, D.D., Rabbi Wise, and Others; including also Mr. Ingersoll's Lecture, entitled, "The Mistakes of Moses." 8vo., 128 pages. Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE.

*Bound in Paper Covers, Price 36 cents.*

Mistakes of Ingersoll (No. 2, as shown by Rev. W. F. Crafts, Chaplain C. C. McCabe, D.D., Arthur Swazey, D.D., Robert Collyer, D.D., Fred. Perry Powers, and Others; including also Mr. Ingersoll's Lecture, entitled "Skulls," and his REPLIES to Prof. Swing, Dr. Ryder, Dr. Herford, Dr. Thomas, Dr. Collyer, and other Critics; Ingersoll's Funeral Oration at his brother's grave, together with Henry Ward Beecher's and Hon. Isaac N. Arnold's comments on the same. 8vo., 150 pages. Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE.

*Bound in Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Mistakes of Ingersoll and Ingersoll's Answers. 8vo., 278 pages. Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE. (This volume includes the full contents of Nos. 1 and 2—two volumes in one.)

The collection is timely and creditable, and its fairness in presenting both the text and comments is commendable.—*Chicago Evening Journal*.

An interesting book; it is not often that a public character like this famous lecturer is subjected to criticism, which is at once so fair and so acute, so civil in manner, and yet so just, as in these instances.—*Advanee*.

*Price, in Cloth, fine, \$1.00.*

Entertaining Anecdotes. 8vo. f 256 pages. Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE. This volume includes Anecdotes of Noted Persons, Amusing Stories, Animal Stories, Love Stories, Falling Leaves, etc., from every available source.

*Price, in Cloth, fine, 75 cents. Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Moody's Child Stories; or. Stories of Children. 8vo., 150 pages. Handsomely Illustrated. Edited by J. B. MCCLURE

*Price, in Cloth, fine, 75 cents, Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Moody's Anecdotes and Illustrations. 8vo., 200 pages. Illustrated. Comprising all of Mr. Moody's Anecdotes and Illustrations used by him in his revival work in Europe and America, including his recent work in Boston; also. Engravings of Messrs. Moody, Sankey, Whittle, and Bliss, Moody's Church, Chicago Tabernacle, Farwell Hall, etc.

A handsome and handy volume which many will prize.—*New York Evangelist*,

It is a good insight into the workings and teachings of the great Evangelist.—*New, Orleans Daily Democrat*.

A book of Anecdotes which have thrilled hundreds of thousands.—*Presbyterian Banner*.

Excellent reading.—*Standard*.

An attractive volume.—*Chicago Evening Journal*.

Contains the pith of Moody's theology, methods, and eloquence.—*Interior*.

The book has been compiled by Rev. J. B. McClure, whose scholarship and journalistic experience perfectly fit him to do the work discriminatingly and well.—*N. W. Christian Advocate (Methodist)*.

*Price, in Cloth, fine, 75 cents. Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Stories and Sketches of Gen. Grant.

At Home and Abroad, in Peace and in War, including his trip around the world, and all the interesting anecdotes, incidents and events of his life. 8vo., 216 pages. Handsomely illustrated. Edited by J. B. McClure.

*Price, in Cloth, fine, 75 cents. Paper Covers, 35 cents.*

Any of the Above Books Will. Be Sent by Mail, Post paid, on Receipt of Price.

Rhodes & McClure, Publishers,  
Methodist Church Block, Chicago, Ill.

**A YOUNG LADY FROM WASHINGTON HEIGHTS DEAF  
AND DUMB INSTITUTE, NEW YORK CITY, HEARING  
HER OWN VOICE FOR THE FIRST TIME. (See  
"Audiphone Exhibition in New York," page 18.)**